ACADEMIC RESEARCH IN SOCIAL, HUMAN AND ADMINISTRATIVE SCIENCES-II



EDITORS

Asoc. Prof. Bülent Cercis TANRITANIR, Ph.D.

Asoc. Prof. Sevilay ÖZER, Ph.D

gece kitaplığı

ACADEMIC RESEARCH IN SOCIAL, HUMAN AND ADMINISTRATIVE SCIENCES-II

gece kitaplığı

Yayın Koordinatörü • Yaşar HIZ
Genel Yayın Yönetmeni • Aydın ŞİMŞEK
Baş Editörler • Prof. Dr. Hasan BABACAN
Prof. Dr. Tanja SOLDATOVIĆ
Doç. Dr. Nihada DELOBEGOVIĆ DZANIĆ
Editör • Asoc. Prof. Bülent Cercis TANRITANIR, Ph.D.
Asoc. Prof. Sevilay ÖZER, Ph.D
Kapak Tasarım • Begüm Pelin TEMANA
İç Tasarım • Begüm Pelin TEMANA
Sosyal Medya • Betül AKYAR

Birinci Basım • © NİSAN 2018 / ANKARA
ISBN • 978-605-288-403-4

© copyright
Bu kitabın yayın hakkı Gece Kitaplığı'na aittir.
Kaynak gösterilmeden alıntı yapılamaz, izin
almadan hiçbir yolla çoğaltılamaz.

Gece Kitaplığı

Adres: Kızılay Mah. Fevzi Çakmak 1. Sokak

Ümit Apt No: 22/A Çankaya/ANKARA
Tel: 0312 384 80 40
web: www.gecekitapligi.com

e-posta: gecekitapligi@gmail.com

Baskı & Cilt
Bizim Büro Matbaa
Sanayi 1. Cadde Sedef Sk. No: 6/1
İskitler - Ankara

Sertifika No: 26649
Tel: 0312 229 99 28

ACADEMIC RESEARCH IN SOCIAL, HUMAN AND ADMINISTRATIVE SCIENCES-II

gece kitaplığı

İÇİNDEKİLER

Communication Studies 7

TRACES OF DISABILITY IN CHILD'S SKELETON AND SOCIOCULTURAL EFFECTS IN PISIDIA ANTIOCHEIA (YALVAÇ-ISPARTA/TURKEY) IN THE MIDDLE BYZANTINE PERIOD 9

INTERNET USE BY COLLEGE STUDENTS: A COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS BY GENDERS IN ISTANBUL AND NEW YORK EXAMPLE 25

EU and International Relations Studies 45

TURKEY AND GREECE'S FOREİGN POLİCİES İN THE CONTEXT OF BALKANS CONFLİCT İN 1990s 47

THE PROCESS OF BREAKING UP FORMER YUGOSLAVIA AND UNITED STATES 59

IRAQI KURDS AND THEIR RELATIONS WITH EUROPE 73

Fine Arts Studies 89

INSTRUMENT TEACHERS BELIEFS RELATED TO SELF-REGULATED LEARNING 91

A FİLM TOZ BEZİ CRİTİCİZED BY WİTHİN THE SCOPE OF IDENTİFİCATİON AND REPRESENTATİON FACTS ASSOCİATED WİTH MASQUERADE AND SPACE 105

A COMPARATİVE STUDY ON THE TURKİSH TRADİTİONAL THEATRE "ORTAOYUNU" AND THE ITALİAN POPULAR THEATRE "COMMEDİA DELL'ARTE" 119

Management and Strategy Studies 137

KNOWLEDGE MANAGEMENT IN MULTINATIONAL CORPORATIONS 139

THE IMPORTANCE OF CORPORATE GOVERNANCE RATING SCORES: SECTORAL ANALYSIS OF COMPANIES REGISTERED IN ISTANBUL STOCK EXCHANGE CORPORATE GOVERNANCE INDEX 161

CITY LOGISTICS AND LOGISTICS PERFORMANCE: 183

A COMPARISON OF SUCCESSFUL COUNTRIES IN LOGISTIC PERFORMANCE INDEX 183

EMPLOYEE'S HIDDEN FORCE: A CONCEPTUAL LOOK AT POSITIVE PSYCHOLOGICAL CAPITAL APPROACH 199

THE ROLE OF ORGANIZATIONAL CLIMATE AND CONTEXTUAL PERFORMANCE ABOUT THE EFFECTS OF PERSONALITY TRAITS ON THE INTENTION OF ORGANIZATIONAL REVENGE 221

THE ROLE OF EXTERNAL GOVERNANCE MECHANISMS IN CORPORATE GOVERNANCE: AN ANALYSIS IN THE CONTEXT OF CULTURAL AND LEGAL DIMENSIONS..... 251

Sociology Studies 275

A LOOK AT MUSIC EDUCATION FROM THE STANDPOINT OF SOCIOLOGICAL THEORIES 277

THE SECURITY INSTITUTION FROM SOCIOLOGICAL PERSPECTIVE..... 285

Philology Studies..... 303

LES COMPÉTENCES DU TRADUCTEUR DANS LA PEDAGOGIE DE LA TRADUCTİON TRANSLATOR SKİLLS İN TRANSLATİON TRAINING..... 305

THE EFFECT OF ARTAUD ON NEILSON'S CRUELTY..... 317

BURMA(MYANMAR) AND GEORGE ORWELL 335

Public Relations Studies 347

LEADERSHIP AND PROCESS MANAGEMENT IN CRISIS COMMUNICATION..... 349

INTIMIDATION EFFORTS IN ORGANIZATIONS: MOBBING.... 355

Thematic..... 363

INVESTİGATİON OF ABİLİTY OF FOCUSİNG ATTENTİON OF SOCCER PLAYERS..... 365

ALIENATION AND SPORTS..... 373

REINTERPRETATION OF IBN KHALDUN'S THEORY OF NOMADIC LIFE (BEDEVİLİK) AND SETTLED LIFE (HADARİLİK) IN THE FRAMEWORK OF TONNIES' COMMUNITY AND SOCIETY PHENOMENON 389

GESTALTTHERAPIE MIT KINDERN..... 407

SUSTAİNABLE GASTRONOMY TOURİSM AND TOURİST SATİSFACTİON..... 419

THE THEME OF EDUCATİON AND THE CONCEPT OF SCHOOL İN PHİLOSOPHY 439

Communication Studies

TRACES OF DISABILITY IN CHILD'S SKELETON AND SOCIOCULTURAL EFFECTS IN PISIDIA ANTIOCHEIA (YALVAÇ-ISPARTA/TURKEY) IN THE MIDDLE BYZANTINE PERIOD

Nalan Damla YILMAZ USTA[1], Hilal YAKUT İPEKOĞLU[2], Yavuz YAKUT[3] , Mehmet ÖZHANLI[4]

ABSTRACT

The parts of a child's skeleton were found in the Aedicilus Church during the 2015 Pisidia Antiocheia excavation dating back to 6-10th century B.C. This research study aimed to evaluate the possible causes of anomalies in the child's skeleton and its possible effects on the child's life according to the anthropological analyses and discuss the status of the child in the society in the sociocultural context of the Middle Byzantine Period. The anthropological analyses showed that the child was about 6 years old and the anomalies in his skeleton revealed that he might have suffered from a disability in his life. Several anthropological and archeological findings revealed that many disabled individuals were born in the ancient period as it is today. The conditions of the disabled after they were born and their status in the society change over time. Disabled babies which were thought to be a warning by a supernatural force or a signal of possible disasters used to be killed or left to die for various reasons from the Ancient Greek and Roman Period to the Byzantine Period. With the recognition of the Christianity in the Byzantine Period, the fate of the disabled started to change and they could gain the right to live and exist in the society.

Keywords: Disabilitty, Cerebral Palsy, Sociocultural life, Pisidia Antiocheia, Byzantine Period.

INTRODUCTION

Ancient city of Pisidia Antiokheia is located approximately 1 kilometer north of Yalvaç district of Isparta province, in a fertile land lying on the southern outskirts of Sultan Mountains (Figure 1). It was founded on a

1 Asst. Prof., Süleyman Demirel University, Faculty of Arts and Science, Department of Anthropology, nalanyilmazusta@sdu.edu.tr
2 Asst. Prof., Süleyman Demirel University, Faculty of Arts and Science, Department of Anthropology, hilalyakut@sdu.edu.tr
3 Prof., Hasan Kalyoncu University, Faculty of Health Science, Department of Physical Therapy and Rehabilitation, yavuzyakut@yahoo.com
4 Prof., Süleyman Demirel University, Faculty of Arts and Science, Department of Archaeology, mehmetozhanli@sdu.edu.tr

hill overlooking Anthios Valley lying in northern-southern direction, 1236 m high from the sea level, on a branch of Sultan Mountains, in the Lakes Region located in the intersection of Mediterrenean, Aegean and Central Anatolian regions (Taşlıalan, 1991).



Figure 1: Pisidia Antiocheia (Isparta/Turkey).

Antioch is a colony of Seleukos, but the date of establishment is not known. It is estimated to have been founded by Seleukos I. or his son Antiokhos I. (Mitchell-Walkens, 1998: 5-7). After Antiokhos I. was killed in 25 B.C., the city was included in the state of Galatia and became a Roman colony (Colonia Caesarea) (Levick, 1967: 29-31). Antiocheia became a metropolis of the extended states of Pisidia in the late 3rd century A.D. The city maintained its importance during the Byzantine Period, too (Johnson, 1958: 1-17).

Antiokheia has a strategic location since it is located in the intersection of the main roads in Pisidia. The city also stands out with its political aspect reflecting Roman propaganda. Owing to its features, St. Paul, an important figure in the spread of Christianity, visited Antiokheia during his three journeys to Anatolia and preached his first sermon here. Antiokheia, which is an important city for Christianity, was represented at the level of archbishop at the councils. The city, which was ravaged by the Arab invasion in 713 A.D., was abandoned over time and moved to the flat area where Yalvaç district is located today (Özhanlı, 2013: 156-157).

According to the World Health Organization, "disabilities is an umbrella term, covering impairments, activity limitations, and participation restrictions […] Disability is thus not just a health problem. It is a complex phenomenon, reflecting the interaction between features of a person's

body and features of the society in which he or she lives[5]". As can be seen, disability is a more social and communal phenomenon compared to an illness or sickness. The disabled have to struggle lifelong with their condition and cope with the society they live in and the restrictions shaped by the value judgments of the society. How did this disabled individual-society interaction occur in the past?

Disability was considered something different from other diseases in the ancient period. However, neither ancient Greeks nor Romans made efforts to define disability (Laes, 2008). Instead, Greeks used the term 'teras', which means freak whereas Romans used 'mostrum', which means monster (Bringnell, 2008). As the osteologic analyses of the skeletons dating back to ancient times suggest, club-foot was a common disability, vertebra deformities such as spina bifida were common and similar physical disabilities existed among people (Laes, 2008). When families living in that period had babies with a disability, they believed they were cursed and punished by supernatural forces. As a result of this situation which was deemed as a disaster, newborn disabled babies were left to die or killed due to the idea that they would not be able to live on their own, they would have a meaningless life even if they could grow up, and they would place an extra burden for their families (Bringnell, 2008; Laes, 2008). Moreover, disabled babies had to be killed according to laws. There were strict rules about disabled children especially in Sparta. Children belonged to the society, not to the families and only healthy and strong babies were allowed to live (Bringnell, 2008). Newborn murders were banned for any reason in 374 A.D. and this law was abided by during Justinian's period. However, 7th century church laws were not very interested in newborn murders and turned a blind eye to baby murders in some circumstances. Especially after the recognition of Christianity, a radical decrease was seen in baby murders. Midwives had a right to decide whether disabled children would live or not, a saint could look after disabled born children or the children were left to die on their own (Moffatt, 1986). Well-organized hospitals which were built during the Byzantine period and where the patient care work was carried out by nuns and monks became units where the disabled individuals were also looked after (Kourkouta et al., 2012). Saint Basil became a pioneer name in building these first hospitals where the sick and disabled individuals could be looked after (Cilliers & Retief, 2002).

Today individuals suffering from such disability are ensured to increase their life quality and exist in social fields thanks to rehabilitation implemented from very young ages. How was such disability seen in the past? How was a disabled individual perceived by their families and the society he lived in? What kind of life was projected for disabled individuals?

5 World Heath Organization (WHO), http://www.who.int/topics/disabilities/en/ [Accessed March 2017]

This study, which was conducted on a child's skeleton unearthed in the graves of the Pisidia Antiokheia Aedilicus Church during the Middle Byzantine Period, aimed to investigate morphologically the traces of disability, discuss the degree of disability and its possible reasons in line with the literature and light the way for the lives of the disabled children in the Byzantine Period taking into account the sociocultural structure in Antiocheia.

MATERIAL and METHODS

A series of systematic excavations has been performed periodically in the ancient city of Pisidia Antiocheia since the beginning of the 20th century (Eroğlu, 2012: 127). The latest series of excavations that started in 2008 has been conducted as per a cabinet decree under the chairmanship of Prof. Mehmet Özhanlı, Member of Faculty in the department of Archeology at Süleyman Demirel University (Özhanlı, 2009: 70). 5 graves were unearthed around the main nave of the Aedilicus Church located on the Aedilicus Hill in the Pisidia Antiocheia excavation in 2015 (Figure 1). It is noted that the skeletons were lying in mostly west-east direction and the burials were generally laid in a recumbent position with the arms crossed on the abdomen in the boat-shaped graves surrounded by stones and dating back to 6-10th century A.D. The graves numbered 1 and 2 were buried on top of each other dissimilarly from others. The grave numbered 1 belonged to a child whereas the underlying grave numbered 2 belonged to an adult male (Figure 2).



Figure 2: a. The Aedilicus Church; b. The Grave Area.

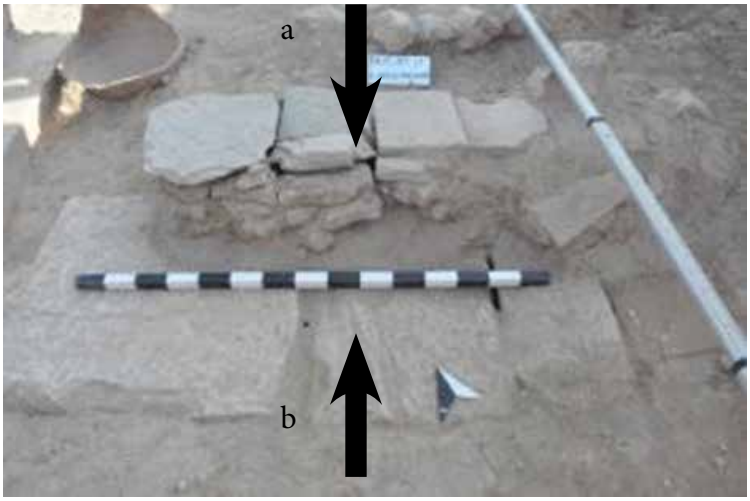


Figure 3: a. The grave number 1; b. The grave number 2.

An anthropological examination was conducted in the Süleyman Demirel University Anthropology Laboratory on the human skeletons unearthed in the mentioned graves. During the anthropological examination, a distinctive angle called femoral anteversion, which was formed between the left femur neck, one of upper thigh bones, and the torso of the child's skeleton removed from the grave numbered 1 (Figure 3) was discovered. For the purpose of numerical illustration of morphological difference between the right and left femurs, the femoral anteversion angle of the both femurs was measured via Kingsley-Olmsted method (Kingsley & Olmsted, 1948) The sample femur was placed on the edge of a flat table in a way that the proximal end came into contact with the ground in the anterior position and the inferior condyle contacted the ground in the posterior position. The horizontal lever of the goniometer was positioned on the edge of the experiment table. The vertical lever was placed parallel to the line connecting the femur neck and the proximal femur (caputfemoris).

Tooth chronology, which is based on the development degree of the crown and the root of the tooth, was utilised in the estimation of the child's biological age (Ubelaker, 1978). The child's sex could not be determined since reliable results cannot be obtained until the maturity age of baby and children skeletons (Acsadi & Nemeskeri, 1970). Other diseases and morphological deformations which left traces on the skeletons were examined with macroscopic methods (Aufderheide & Rodriguez-Martin, 1998; Brickley & Ives, 2008; Ortner & Putschar, 1985; Pinhasi & Mays, 2008).



Figure 4: The grave number 1 (a. before the grave opens; b. after the grave opens).

RESULTS

It was determined that the skeleton digged out of the grave numbered 1 in the main nave of the Aedilicus Church dating back to 6-10th century A.D. in the ancient city of Pisidia Antiocheia in Isparta Yalvaç, belonged to a 6-year-old child. When the leg bones of the child were examined, it was observed that the rotations of the neck and caput of the right and left femurs displayed differences (Figure 4). The left femur neck was more in the anterior position compared to the right femur. The femoral anteversion angles which were measured via Kingsley-Olmsted method were 41 degrees in the left femur and 21 degrees in the right femur. Although the right femur was observed in normal measurements, the left femur anteversion angle showed that the child walked with his right leg pointing inwards. Another difference in the child's lower extremity bones was observed in the calcenaus. A new facet, which was not supposed to exist, was formed in the lateral left calcenaus (Figure 5). This facet indicates that the child tended to walk on the foot's lateral side, in other words on the left side. Besides, an anomaly was detected in the child's left talus. It was observed that the left talus formed a more distinctive edge on the joint surface that borders the sulcus tali (Figure 6). When the upper extremities were examined, a morphological difference was detected at the proximal ends of the ulnas on the surfaces where the ulnas were articulated with the radiuses (incissura radialis ulnae). When the radial notches in both ulnas are compared, it is clear that this region displays a deeper morphology in the left ulna (Figure 7). The findings indicate the child had a physical disability.



Figure 5: Right and left femur: a. anterior view, b. posterior view. The extensional (abnormal) left femoral anteversion.



Figure 6: Right and left cacaneus: superiolateral view. The extra facet in right calcaneus.

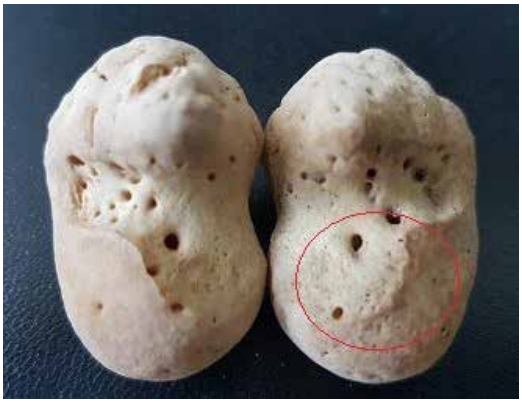


Figure 7: Right and left talus: plantar view. The deformation on facies articularis of left talus.



Figure 8: Right and left ulna: lateral side. The deformation in incissura radialis ulnae.

When the other patologies in the skeleton were examined, a porous spongy tissue formation was observed on the distal ends of both femurs. Besides, another porous formation was observed around the temporal bones of the skull, bones surrounding the ear holes. A total of 8 deciduous teeth (left incisors, left canine, right first molar, and left second molar on the upper chin; left first molar, right first incisor, and right canine on the lower chin) were obtained as healthy. When these teeth were examined, it was noted that there was a dental erosion at a level of 3, and hypoplasia, which is a defect in enamel, in all teeth. In addition, some permanent dental crowns also had hypoplasia.

DISCUSSION

The anthropological examinations indicate that the child, whose skeleton was exhumed from the grave numbered 1 found in the Aedilicus Church in Pisidia Antiocheia, might have had a physical disability. Considering the definitions of physical disability in the related literature, it is thought that a case of Cerebral Palsy may be a matter of discussion. The earliest known disability in history is Cerebral Palsy which was detected in the mummy of Pharaoh Siptah dating back to 1196-1190 B.C. CP is a common congenital or acquired disorder which occurs in approximately 2 out of 1000 children. CP was defined by Hippocrates (460-390 B.C.) as a disorder caused by a cerebral damage associated with prematurity, congenital infection and prenatal stress (Panteliadis et al., 2015). CP includes a group of neurological disorders developed in relation to the damage of an underdeveloped brain tissue. It is the most common neuromotor disorder in pediatric age group (0-15 years). CP causes a permanent coordination disorder in body movements and posture affecting the communication between the brain and muscles. Therefore, children with CP have lifelong disabilities (Berk et al., 2010; Eriman et al., 2009; Koman et al., 2004; Morris, 2007; Nelson & Grether, 1999; Panteliadis et al., 2015; Zarrinkalam et al., 2010). CP involves all non-progressive brain lesions developed from the prenatal (during pregnancy) period through the postnatal (after delivery) period (early brain development occurs in the first 18 months) to 6 years old. The most common factors in etiology include consanguineous marriage in the prenatal period, low birth weight and premature birth in the perinatal period, obstructed labor (dystocia) in the natal (delivery) period, convulsion, trauma, neonatal infections such as sepsis and menengitis in the postnatal period (Eastman & DeLeon, 1955; Güven et al., 1999; Nelson & Grether, 1999; Sankar & Mundkur, 2005; Stanley, 1994; Shields & Schifrin, 1988; Reddihough & Collins, 2003; Miller, 2005). Biomechanical forces play an important role in the development and shaping of bones in children with CP (Stevenson et al., 1995). Abnormal muscle functions impair skeleton development by causing loss of healthy mechanic stress (Flett, 2003; McDaid et al., 2002).

Cases of CP are classified according to the location, structure and degree of the lesion. It has various clinical manifestations: monoplegia, paraplegia, hemiplegia, triplegia, quadriplegia, diplegia in terms of the body parts affected (topography); spastic, loose, hypotonic in terms of the structure of the motor function; athetotic, ataxic, dystonic, mixed in terms of motor control; mild, moderate or severe in terms of severity level (Crothers & Paine, 1959; Menkes, 1995; Minear, 1956; Rosenbaum & Rosenbloom, 2012). When the related literature is reviewed, it is seen that children with CP display some symptoms alongside movement and posture defects. Most

cases are accompanied by sensory-perceptual disorders such as speech, visual and auditory defects, mental retardation, epilepsy, dental defects, and orthopedic problems (Berk et al., 2010; Bobroff et al. 1999; Eriman et al., 2009; Koman et al., 2004; Morris, 2007; Nelson & Grether, 1999; Zarrinkalam et al., 2010). Increase in the femoral anteversion angle is a lesion that can be observed among children with CP (Bobroff et al. 1999; Srimathi et al., 1981). In case of CP, this angle can range between 25 and 45 degrees; however, it is reported to be as high as 60-80 degrees (Arnold & Delp, 2001; Bobroff et al. 1999).

Children with CP walk with their toes pointing inwards (Rethlefsen, 2006). The femoral anteversion angle which is wider during delivery due to the baby's position in mother's belly regresses rapidly when the baby starts to walk (Debnath et al. 2016; Shefelbine & Carter, 2004; Standring, 2008; Zalawadia et al., 2010). However, sometimes the femoral anteversion slightly increases and can be high during children's growth period due to muscular tonus and muscle imbalances that occur in this period (Bobroff et al. 1999; Shefelbine & Carter, 2004; Srimathi et al., 1981). As can be seen, CP is a disability that occurs in the prenatal or natal period, requires living with various physical and/or mental disabilities during lifetime, affects certain parts of the body and brings various movement restrictions in the affected parts.

The anteversion angle in the left femur of the child's skeleton, which was unearthed in the Pisidia Antiocheia Aedilicus Church graves, was considerably higher than the one observed in the right femur. The 41 degrees angle in the left femur, which is abnormal, was between the range of the anteversion angle mentioned in the related literature and observed in children with CP. Accordingly, the 6-year-old child of Pisidia Antiocheia probably walked with his left foot pointing inwards and had difficulty walking due to this deformity (Dormans et al., 2000; Vargha-Khadem et al., 1992). On the other hand, the formation of a new facet in the left calcaneous lateral reveals that he walked on the lateral side of his left heel. Another finding that supports this finding is the deformation on the surface articulated with the calcaneus in the left talus. The fact that the notch on the surface where the left ulna in the arm bones was articulated with the radius at the proximal ends was deeper indicates that the child's left arm muscles were probably continuously and redundantly tight, which points out spasticity.

CONCLUSION

As a result of the antropological studies, it was determined that the skeleton which was unearthed in the grave numbered 1 dating back to 6-10th century A.D. in Aedilicus Church in the ancient city of Pisidia Antiocheia belonged to a 6-year-old child suffering possibly from spastic cerebral palsy. It was a common practice in the period before the recognition of Christianity that individuals deemed disabled used to be killed or left to die after they were born. These deaths which were associated with eugeny were explained with the idea that the babies, particularly ones who were born in Sparta, Ancient Greece, and Rome belonged to the society and the society should be made up of healthy, beautiful and strong individuals at all times (Laes, 2008). After the recognition of Christianity, the church banned newborn murders; but sometimes turned a blind eye to killing disabled babies or leaving them to die. In the ancient times, the reason for killing especially disabled babies was that the disabled children would eventually die by themselves or the expenses that would be made to raise the disabled baby was the healthy one's right (Moseley, 1986).

It is possible that the number of disabled children in the society increased during the Byzantine Period as a result of the prohibition of baby murders. The families who could not take care of their disabled children possibly left their children to the churches which were the care centers of that period. Since the churches functioned as social care centers where the homeless took shelter, the poor were fed, and the patients were treated during the Byzantine period (Prioreschi, 2004), it is predictable that the disabled children took shelter and care in churches. Besides, it might be a matter of fact that volunteer families took care of these disabled children.

During the Byzantine Period, the people with societal status were buried in churches (Ivison, 1993) and family members were buried in the same grave (Moore, 2013; Duyar et al., 2017). Therefore, the individual in the grave numbered 2, where the child was buried on top, probably had a status. This person could be either a volunteer who took the child under his protection and took care of him or a parent or a family member of the child.

REFERENCES

ACSADI, G. Y. & NEMESKI, J., (1970), History of Human Life Span and Mortality, Budapeşte: Academia Kiado.

ARNOLD, A. S. & DELP, S. L., (2001), "Rotational moment arms of the medial hamstrings and adductors vary with femoral geometry and limb position: implications for the treatment of internally rotated gait", J Biomech, 34, 437-447.

AUFDERHEIDE, A.C. & RODRIGUEZ-MARTIN, C., (1998), The Cambridge Encyclopedia of Human Paleopathology, Cambridge University.

BERK, A.T., ÖZTÜRK, A.T. & YAMAN, A., (2010), "Serebral Palsili Çocuklarda Göz Problemleri", Turk J Ophthalmol, 40: 209-216.

BOBROFF, E. D., CHAMBERS, H. G., SARTORIS, D. J., WYATT, M. P. & SUTHERLAND, D. H., (1999), "Femoral anteversion and neck-shaft angle in children with cerebral palsy", Clin Orthop Relat Res Jul, (364):194-204.

BRICKLEY, M. & IVES, R., (2008), The Bioarchaeology of Metabolic Bone Disease, Amsterdam: Elsevier/ Academic Press.

BRINGNELL, W., (2008), "Ancient World", Politics. http://www.newstatesman.com/blogs/crips-column/2008/04/disabled-slaves-child-roman [Accessed: January, 2017].

CILLIERS, L. & RETIEF, F. P., (2002), "The evolution of the hospital from antiquity to the end of the middle ages", Curationis, Nov; 25 (4): 60-66.

CROTHERS, B. & PAINE, R.S., (1959), "The natural history of cerebral palsy", Cambridge: Harvard UniversityPress.

DEBNATH, M., KONAR, S., KUNDU, P. & DEBNATH, M., (2016), "Study of Femoral Neck Anteversion and its Correlations in Bengali Population", International Journal of Anatomy, Radiology and Surgery, 2016 Jan, Vol 5(1) 1-5.

DEMİR, S. O, OKTAY, F., UYSAL, H. & SELÇUK, B., (2006), "Upper extremity shortness in children with hemiplegic cerebral palsy", J Pediatr Orthop, 26: 764-8.

DORMANS, J., SUSMAN, M., ÖZARAS, N. &YALÇIN, S., (2000), Serebral palsi: Tedavi ve Rehabilitasyon (Cerebral Palsy: Treatment and Rehabilitation), 1. Baskı, İstanbul: Mas Matbaacılık, http://www.drsedatyildiz.com/FileUpload/ks109487/File/serebral_palsi_(cp)_kitabi.pdf.

DUYAR, İ., ATAMTÜRK, D., ABUFAUR, B. & ÖZENER, E. B., (2017), "Sinop Balatlar Kilisesi Kazısından Çıkartılan İskelet ve Mezarlar (MS 12-13'üncü Yüzyıllar)", 32. Arkeometri Sonuçları Toplantısı, 23-27 Mayıs 2016, T.C. Kültür ve Turizm Bakanlığı Ana Yayın No: 3492.

EASTMAN, N. J. & DELEON, M., (1955), "The etiology of cerebral palsy", American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology, Volume 69, Issue 5, May, Pages 950-961.

ERİMAN, E. O., ICAGASİOGLU, A., DEMİRHAN, E., KOLUKISA, S., ARAS, H. & HALİLOGLU, S., (2009), "Demographic data and clinical characteristics of 202 cerebral palsy cases / Serebral palsili 202 olgunun demografik verileri ve klinik ozellikler", Turkish Journal of Physical Medicine and Rehabilitation, 2009, p. 94+.Academic OneFile, http://go.galegroup.com/ps/anonymous?id=GALE%7CA209407710&sid=googleScholar&v=2.1&it=r&linkaccess=fulltext&issn=13020234&p=AONE&sw=w&authCount=1&isAnonymousEntry=true Accessed 14 Mar. 2017.

EROĞLU, S., (2012), "Arşiv Belgeleri Bağlamında, W.M. Ramsay'in Pisidia Antiokheia Çalışmalarının Yeniden Değerlendirilmesi", SDÜ Fen Edebiyat Fakültesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, 25: 125-138.

FLETT, P. J., (2003), "Rehabilitation of spasticity and related problems in childhood cerebral palsy", J Pediatr Child Health, 39: 6-14.

GÜVEN, A., DEDA, G., KARAGÖL, U. & UYSAL, S., (1999), "Serebral Palsi: 61 Olgunun Değerlendirilmesi (Cerebral Palsy)", Ankara Üniversitesi Tıp Fakültesi Mecmuası, 52 (1): 13-17.

IVISON, E. A., (1993). Mortuary Practices in Byzantium, PhD Thesis: University of Birmingham.

JOHNSON, E. S., (1958), "Early Christianity in Asia Minor", *Journal of Biblical Literature*, 77(1): 1-17.

KINGSLEY, P. & OLMSTED, K., (1948), "A study to determinet heangle of anteversion of the neck of the femur", Journal of Bone and Joint Surgery, 30(3), 745-751. Retrieved from http://jbjs.org/pdfaccess.ashx?ResourceID=15763&PDFSource=17

KOMAN, L. A, SMITH, B. P. & SHILT, J. S., (2004), "Cerebral palsy", Lancet, 363:1619-31.

KOURKOUTA, L., PLATI, P. & OUZOUNAKIS, P., (2012), "The Meaning of the nursing in Byzantium", Prog Health Sci, Vol. 2, No. 1, pp. 175-178.

LAES, C., (2008), "Learning from Silence: Disabled Children in Roman Antiquity", Arctos 42: 85-122.

LEVICK, B. M., (1967), Roman Colonies in Southern Asia Minor, Oxford.

MCDAID, P. J, KOZIN, S. H., THODER, J. J. & PORTER, S. T., (2002), "Upper extremity limb-length discrepancy in brachial plexus palsy", J Pediatr Orthop, 22: 364-6.

MENKES, J. H., (1995), Textbook of Child Neurol, Fifty Edit, Williams and Vilkins.

MILLER, F., (2005), Cerebral Palsy, Springer Science Business Media, Inc.

MINEAR W. L., (1956), "A classification of cerebral palsy", Pediatrics, 18:841-52.

MITCHELL, S. & WALKENS, M., (1998), Pisidian Antioch, The Site and Its Monuments, London.MOFFATT, A., (1986), "The Byzantine Child", Social Research, Vol. 53, No. 4, pp. 705-723.

MOORE, S. V., (2013), A Relational Approach to Mortuary Practices within Medieval Byzantine Anatolia, PhD Thesis Newcastle University, https://theses.ncl.ac.uk/dspace/bitstream/10443/2307/1/Moore%2C%20S.V.%2013.pdf.

MORRIS, C., (2007), "Definition and classification of cerebral palsy: a historical perspective", Dev Med Child Neurol Suppl, 109: 3-7.

MOSELEY, K. L., (1986), "The History of Infanticide in Western Society", Issues in Law and Medicine, Vol. 1, Number 5, 345-361.

NELSON, K.B. & GRETHER, J. K., (1999), "Causes of cerebral palsy", Curr. Op. in Pediatr, 11:487-91.

ORTNER, D. J. & PUTSCHAR, G. J., (1985), Identification of Pathological Conditions in Human Skeletal Remains, Washington DC: Simithsonian Institution Press.

ÖZHANLI, M., (2009), "Pisidia Antiokheia'sı Kazıları 2008", ANMED Anadolu Akdenizi Arkeoloji Haberleri, 7: 70-74.

ÖZHANLI, M., (2013), "Pisidia Antiokheia Özelinde Roma Dönemi Kent Planlaması", Pisidia Araştırmaları I, Sempozyum Bildiri Kitabı: 155-176.

PANTELIADIS, C. P., Hagel, C., Karch, D. & Heinemann, K., (2015), "Cerebral Palsy: A Lifelong Challenge Asks for Early Intervention", The Open NeurologyJournal, 9: 45-52.

PINHASI, R. & MAYS, S., (2008), Advances in Human Palaeopathology, Wiley, Chichester.

PRIORESCHI, P., (2004), "A History of Medicine: Byzantine and Islamic Medicine", Vol. IV, Reprinted, Omaha: Horatius Press.

REDDIHOUGH, D. S. & COLLINS, K. J., (2003), "The epidemiology and couses of cerebral palsy", AustralianJ ournal of Physiotherapy, 49: 7-152.

RETHLEFSEN, S. A., HEALY, B. S., WREN, T. A. L., SKAGGS, D. L. & KAY, R. M., (2006), "Causes of intoeing gait in children with cerebral palsy". J Bone Joint Surg Am, 88: 2175–2180.

ROSENBAUM, P. L. & ROSENBLOOM, L., (2012), Cerebral Palsy: From Diagnosis to Adult Life, Mac Keith Press.

SANKAR, C. & MUNDKUR, N., (2005), "Cerebralpalsy-definition, classification, etiology and early diagnosis", Indian J Pediatr, 72 (10): 865-868. doi:10.1007/BF02731117.

SHEFELBINE S. J. & CARTER D. R., (2004), "Mechanobiological predictions of femoral anteversion in cerebral palsy", Ann. Biomed. Eng, Feb;32(2):297-305.

SHIELDS, J. R. & SCHIFRIN, B. S., (1988), "Perinatal Antecedents of Cerebral Palsy", Obstetrics & Gynecology, 71 (6): 899-905.

SRIMATHI, T., MUTHUKUMAR, T., ANANDARANI, V. S., SEMBIAN., U. & SUBRAMANIAN, R., (1981), "A Study on Femoral Neck Anteversion and Its Clinical Correlation", Journal of Clinical and Diagnostic Research. 2012 April, Vol-6(2): 155-158 155.

STANDRING, S., (2008), Gray's anatomy: the anatomical basis of clinical practice, 40th Ed. Edinburgh, Churchill Livingstone/Elsevier, 1360.

STANLEY, F. J., (1994), "The aetiology of cerebral palsy", Early Hum Dev, 36:81-8.

STEVENSON, R. D., ROBERTS, C. D. & VOGTLE, L., (1995), "The effects of non-nutritional factors on growth in cerebral palsy", Dev Med Child Neurol, 37: 124–130.

TAŞLIALAN, M., (1991), Pisidia Antioch: The Journeys Of St. Paul to Antioch, Theophilus Archeological Foundation, İstanbul.

UBELAKER, D. H., (1978), Human Skeletal Remains: Excavation, Analysis, Interpretation, Aldine Publishing Company.

VARGHA-KHADEM, F., ISAACS, E., van der WERF, S., ROBB, S. & WILSON, J., (1992), "Development of intelligence and memory in children with hemiplegic cerebral palsy. The deleterious consequences of early seizure,. Brain 1992; 115: 315-29.

ZALAWADIA, A., RUPARELIA, S., SHAH, S., PAREKH, D., PATEL, S., RATHOD, S. P. & PATEL, S.V., (2010), "Study Of Femoral Neck Anteversion Of Adult Dry Femora In Gujarat Region", NJIRM, 1(3): 7-11.

ZARRINKALAM, R., RUSSO, R. N., GIBSON, C. S., van ESSEN, P., PEEK, A. K. & HAAN, E. A., (2010), "CP or not CP? A review of diagnoses in a cerebral palsy register", Pediatr. Neurol, 42: 177-80.

INTERNET USE BY COLLEGE STUDENTS: A COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS BY GENDERS IN ISTANBUL AND NEW YORK EXAMPLE

Kürşad GÖLGELİ [1], Mustafa AKDAĞ [2]

ABSTRACT

Internet and mobile technologies reorganized based on computer are considered as new communication technologies and instruments. Common characteristic of all these technologies called as new is they enable information to be collected, kept, processed, reported, operationalized and transferred again. Thanks to the opportunities of the internet, individuals can exchange information with people who have common interests and objectives with them even though they live in different places and it is thus observed that efficiency of mass communication on the individuals have increased with the internet in our day. This study mentions attitudes and behaviors of internet users. Scope of the study, which it is important regarding having a comparative approach and information it involves in, is composed of college students who study in Istanbul city, Turkey and New York City, the USA and access the internet daily. In the study in which 1010 students who study in Istanbul and 1091 students who study in New York attended, a comparative analysis has been carried out by the cities and genders. According to results of the study, it is seen that the place where participants use the internet most frequently is home. Subsequent to telephone, laptop is mainly used to access the internet. While men in Istanbul mostly use the internet to watch videos, men in New York mostly use it to receive/send data. As for women in two cities, they mostly use the internet to get information.

Keywords: Internet, College students, Gender, Istanbul, New York.

INTRODUCTION

Communication is a basic need for people. For this reason, people always seek and find the ways to meet their needs for communication. Internet is one of the most preferred mediums in these days. Internet and the relative technologies increase so rapidly and become popular so rapidly that there has never been such a big change so far. Through the human history, it hasn't been written, spoken and shopped so much (Aksu et al., 2011: 143-144).

Building block of the society called as information society nowadays is to reach information in the shortest time and in the easiest way, use this information in an efficient and useful way and combine this information with several other knowledge and filter them and then produce, spread and

1 Erciyes University, Asst. Prof., kgolgeli@erciyes.edu.tr
2 Erciyes University, Prof., makdag@erciyes.edu.tr

keep new information. Individuals or institutions shape their decisions to make and apply in company with this information to be reached (Köker, 2006: 226). Increase in the personal computers and excitement created by information technology create an interest of young people, especially who are educated and know the fields such like consultancy and finance, in the opportunities offered by the internet (Doyle, 2004: 562). Internet mostly comes to the forefront as the medium of new social relations thanks to its property (Timisi, 2003: 24) which differs from other communication technologies, goes beyond the time and place limits and ensures individual/individual and individual/group communication. For this reason, many types of relationship experienced in daily life are moved to a different format thanks to the internet, and new concepts such like virtual places, virtual reality, virtual communities and identities enters into the life of individual.

This study is about attitudes and behaviors of the internet users. Scope of the study, which it is important regarding having a comparative approach and information it involves in, is composed of college students who study in Istanbul city, Turkey and New York City, the USA and access the internet daily.

1. **Internet and User**

Internet that provides an interactive environment (Ries and Ries, 2001: 43) is programmed as a general and flexible infrastructure on which all kinds of new applications would be performed (Sözer, 2002: 10). It is seen that it is possible to spread digital information in a shorter time and efficient way via web or another new media across the world (Haşıloğlu, 2007: 20).

Another property of the internet is that it knows no limits. It creates its own geography and there is no limit on this geography. Internet creates its own time and extension and so it demonstrates its own rules within this geography. It hasn't got only one owner for the operation means such like television, newspaper, magazine, etc.. Every internet user with computer is one of the owners of structuring (Şener, 2003: 140). When comparing with traditional media, internet is considered mainly as an objective oriented and informed tool. In terms of existence and infinity, types, representation, organization, flexibility, accessibility, storability and interactivity of information, it has unique characteristics compared to other media tools (Faber et al., 2004: 455-456).

For example, there are many platforms which provide free web space on the internet and allow users to open a web page (Sağıroğlu, 2001: 102). While web technology provides value-added in transmitting communication strategy of institution, brand or all kinds of data provider to the audience with realistic, transparent and conversational communication through its potential to establish relationship and create a connection, it differs from its

rivals through its relational role (Mazıcı, 2016: 76). Mediums have become common and different in which UGC (User Generated Content) that states online shares which are created, initiated, circulated, used and which enable users to train each other on different subjects such like goods, services by means of the advanced participant web technology and platforms (Blackshaw and Nazzaro, 2006: 2). It is possible to express content types created by the users as text, image, photo, music, audio, movie, program and other relevant spaces.

Therefore, users not only receive and consume information, also they create information. Web 2.0, which it is a period in which users make contribution to information by expressing their own opinions instead of getting the information from source once the access to information has become easier (Eldeniz, 2010: 20-31), allows all users to create and share information and image and encourages them in this regard (Murugesan, 2010: 3). Period in which content creators are managers has ended with this technology, and in this way users have contributed collaboratively to the content and interacted with each other (Tosun and Levi, 2010: 96). Web 2.0 causes a social revolution and leads to an important and radical change turned into a traditional action style from a broadcast medium to a participant medium (Murugesan, 2010: 3).

Web 3.0, next step of this radical change, is composed of two main platforms as semantic technologies and social information-processing medium. Semantic technologies represent open standards applicable over web and social information-processing medium allows human-machine cooperation to be realized and many social web communities to be formed (Aghaei et al., 2012: 3). Main difference between Web 2.0 and Web 3.0 is that Web 2.0 is based on creativity of users and producers in terms of creating contents and Web 3.0 aims at related data sets. One of the main concepts of Web 3.0 is cooperation of the users, and contribution and cooperation of the users are required to interpret the information involved in the internet. In this regard, when we consider the USA and Turkey states creating the target population of our study;

According to data of Internet World Stats, 3,731,973,423 people have used internet across the world since 31st March of 2017. Population of the USA is326, 474,013 and number of the internet users is 286,942,362. In other words, 87.9% of the USA uses the internet (www.internetworldstats.com, 2017). Moreover, it has been determined for internet users in the USA by genders that 84% of the women population and 85% of the men population have been internet users since May, 2015. It shows ratio of the internet users in the USA since January, 2014. It has been determined that 97% of age range between 18 and 29 in the USA is internet users. As education level increases in population of the USA, an increase is determined in use of the internet

(www.statista.com, 2016). According to American Society Research Reports of 2013, internet usage rate has a higher percentage in metropolises than other places. It is reported in the study done, that 74.4% of all residences uses the internet. According to internet usage for the residences, while 43.8% of those who are not high-school graduate, this number is 62.9% (including accreditation) for the high-school graduates, 79.2% for who are at some college or associate degree and 90.1% for who are at undergraduate education or at a higher level. According to individual use, men have 79.4% and women have 78.5% rate (www.census.gov, 2016). According to City University of New York (CUNY) system of 2014 year, there are 600.000 students in 120 higher education institutions in New York, and in this regard New York city has the highest amount of higher education students in the USA (www.collegeinnyc.org, 2016). 16-24 is the highest age range of internet usage rates in Turkey. According to data of 2016 year, rate of internet users reached 61,2%. Computer and internet usage rate is respectively 54.9% and 61.2% for the individuals between 16 - 74 age range, and these rates are seen as 64.1% and 70.5% for men and 45.9% and 51.9% for women (www.tuik.gov.tr, 2017). According to TÜİK data of 2014, 39.5% of the individuals between 16 and 74 age range whose internet usage rate was 48.9% used the internet regularly (almost every day or at least one time in a week) in the first three months of 2013. Internet usage is higher at all age groups of the men. While internet usage rate is 63.5% for men in the age group of 16-74, it is 44, 1% for women. Users whose education level is at college, faculty or higher level have higher level of usage than all other education levels in men and women gender groups internet use is 58% in urban areas and 28,6% in rural areas. According to Nomenclature of Units for Territorial Statistics (IBBS) Level-1, region with the highest rate of internet use is TR1-Istanbul region by 61,4% (www.tuik.gov.tr, 2017). According to Higher Education Information Management System (YBYS) data of 2014 year, 511.360 students study at 48 universities of Istanbul. When putting them into an order excluding the students at Open Education Faculties, the highest amount of university students studies in Istanbul (www.yok.gov.tr, www.istatistik.yok.gov.tr, 2016).

2. **Research Objective and Method**

Main objective of this study that is on attitudes and behaviors of internet users is to get information on characteristics and objectives of internet use of the internet users. Innovations and advantages brought along the internet cause an increase in amount of users day by day. As the time spent by the consumers on the internet increases, rates of traditional media use decrease. In this scope, this study is important in terms of being comparative and information it involves. When it is classified based on the study objectives, it is observed that descriptive research method is more proper for this research that is cross sectional as this method has a detector

and descriptive approach. For this reason, survey method is chosen for this study. All units involved in the population are reached by the face to face survey as well as e-mail. Survey is prepared in Turkish and English. Answers of participants of the survey have been transferred to the database.

3. **Problem**

Study mainly seeks for answers to two problems;

- What are the similarities and differences are between attitudes and behaviors of the internet users in Istanbul and attitudes and behaviors of the internet users in New York?
- What are the similarities and differences are between attitudes and behaviors of the internet users in Istanbul and attitudes and behaviors of the internet users in New York in terms of sex?

4. **Scope and Limits of the Study**

Scope of the study is composed of university students who study in Istanbul city, Turkey and New York City, the USA and access the internet daily.

There are certain similarities why Istanbul and New York create the scope of study. Both of them are the most crowded, the most immigrant-receiving cities with the highest type of human across their countries, and they are similar in terms of their populations. Both of them became capital of their countries for a while and today they are economic, culture, arts, media and advertising centers of their countries. In addition, a high level of internet usage in the metropolises is an important reason why they are involved in the scope. As the level of internet usage increases, educational level will increase, this study includes the college students. Another reason why Istanbul and New York cities are involved in the study is they have the most number of college students in the counties they are in.

Research was conducted in Istanbul and New York in August of 2014. One of the limitations is that all users in Istanbul and New York cities could not been reached as well as all cities in Turkey and the USA could not been reached. Besides, it is another limitation that time to practice the survey is limited and the study is restricted to university students who studied in the cities where the study was conducted and used internet daily.

According to data of 2014, while number of student who study in Istanbul are 511.360, number of student who study in New York are nearly 600.000. Therefore, 46% of the sample (n=1010) chosen by stratified random sample method from the population of 1.111.360 individuals is composed of university students study in Istanbul, 54% (n=1091) is composed of students study in New York.

5. **Analyses used in the Study**

Several statistical methods were used in order to determine the hypotheses offered within the scope of study by the required findings. **Histogram** and **q-q graphics** and also **Shapiro-Wilk test** were used in evaluation of convenience of data with normal distribution. Variance homogeneity was evaluated by **Levene test**. Comparisons between the cities for categorical variables were made by **Pearson chi-square** analysis, and comparisons for quantitative variables were made by independent two sample ***t* test**. Relationship between the variables was evaluated by **Spearman correlation analysis**. Data was expressed as frequency and percentage or mean and standard deviation.

Data analysis was evaluated by R 3.1.1 program by (www.r-project.org) software and $p<0.05$ level was accepted as significant.

6. **Datas and Evaluation**

Table 1. Comparison of internet use and demographic characteristics by descriptive statistics and cities

Variable	**Istanbul (*n*=1010)**	**New York (*n*=1091)**	***p***	**General (*n*=2101)**
Sex				
Male	485(48.0)	498(45.6)	0.276	983(46.8)
Female	525(52.0)	593(54.4)		1118(53.2)
Age	24.54±3.84	26.42±3.00	<0.001	25.52±3.56
Education level				
Associate degree	179(17.7)	333(30.5)	<0.001	512(24.4)
Undergraduate education	714(70.7)	385(35.3)		1099(52.3)
Postgraduate	100(9.9)	235(21.5)		335(15.9)
Doctorate	17(1.7)	138(12.6)		155(7.4)
Scientific field				
Social sciences	524(51.9)	303(27.8)	<0.001	827(39.4)
Physical sciences	352(34.9)	387(35.5)		739(35.2)
Health sciences	89(8.8)	204(18.7)		293(13.9)
Other	45(4.5)	197(18.1)		242(11.5)
Daily internet use				
≤30 mn	46(4.6)	13(1.2)	<0.001	59(2.8)
31-59 mn	72(7.1)	18(1.6)		90(4.3)
1-2 hour	250(24.8)	206(18.9)		456(21.7)
3-4 hour	390(38.6)	441(40.4)		831(39.6)

>5 hour	252(25.0)	413(37.9)		665(31.7)
Place where the internet used mostly				
Home	554(54.9)	564(51.7)	<0.001	1118(53.2)
School	62(6.1)	144(13.2)		206(9.8)
Library	5(0.5)	6(0.5)		11(0.5)
Dorm	15(1.5)	5(0.5)		20(1.0)
Mobile	192(19.0)	197(18.1)		389(18.5)
Other	182(18.0)	175(16.0)		357(17.0)
Access to the internet*				
Desktop	252(25.0)	95(8.7)	<0.001	347(16.5)
Laptop	752(74.4)	1039(95.2)	<0.001	1791(85.2)
Tablet	304(30.1)	136(12.5)	<0.001	440(20.9)
Telephone	856(84.8)	1045(95.8)	<0.001	1901(90.5)
TV	12(1.2)	0(0.0)	<0.001	12(0.1)
Device by which it is accessed to the internet mostly				
Desktop	57(5.6)	0(0.0)	<0.001	57(2.7)
Laptop	425(42.1)	751(68.8)		1176(56.0)
Tablet	83(8.2)	96(8.8)		179(8.5)
Telephone	445(44.1)	244(22.4)		689(32.8)

Data has been expressed as mean ± standard deviation or frequency (percentage).
*Marks are seen as more than one.

Statistics regarding internet use and demographic characteristics are given in Table 1. 1010 individuals participated in the survey from Istanbul and 1091 individuals from New York. 983 (%46.8%) individuals of the participants are male and 1118 (53.2%) are female. Participation by sex is similar between the cities, and 485 (48%) of the participants from Istanbul and 498 (45.6%) of the participants from New York are male ($p>0.05$). Age range of the participants in the survey is 25.52±3.56, and this average has been determined as 24.54±3.84 in participants from Istanbul while it is 26.42±3.00 in participants from New York ($p<0.05$). In terms of education level, it has been observed that 30.5%, 35.3%, 21.5% and 12.6% of participants of New York study at associate degree, undergraduate education, postgraduate and doctorate levels, respectively while 17.7%, 70.7%, 9.9% and 1.7% of participants of Istanbul study at associate degree, undergraduate education, postgraduate and doctorate levels, respectively ($p<0.05$). 51.9%, 34.9%, 8.8% and 4.5% of the participants in Istanbul

study in social sciences, physical sciences, health sciences and other fields, respectively, and 27.8%, 35.5%, 18.7% and 18.1% of the participants in New York study in social sciences, physical sciences, health sciences and other fields, respectively ($p<0.05$).

Rate of daily internet usage is higher in participants of New York ($p<0.05$). While 63.6% of the participants of Istanbul use the internet at least 3 hours in a day, this rate is observed as 78.3% in participants of New York. In terms of place to use the internet, while participants of Istanbul use more internet at home (54.9%), at dorm (1.5%) and via mobile (19.0%) compared to participants of New York, participants of New York use more internet at school (13.2%) compared to the participants of Istanbul ($p<0.05$). In terms of device to access the internet, while participants of Istanbul prefer desktop pc, tablet and TV more, participants of New York prefer mostly laptop and telephone ($p<0.05$).

Table 2. Statistics regarding the intended use of internet and demographic characteristics and comparison by the cities

Intended use of the internet	**Istanbul (*n*=1010)**	**New York (*n*=1091)**	***p***	**General (*n*=2101)**
Getting information	4.45±0.88	4.83±0.38	<0.001	4.65±0.69
Reading books	2.66±1.79	4.27±1.08	<0.001	3.50±1.67
Finding and downloading software programs	3.70±1.48	3.76±0.99	0.327	3.73±1.25
Playing games interactively	3.49±1.67	3.23±1.86	0.001	3.35±1.77
Accessing social networking sites (Facebook, twitter etc.)	4.36±1.11	4.03±1.42	<0.001	4.19±1.29
Making new friends	3.51±1.63	4.12±1.04	<0.001	3.83±1.39
Audio/video chatting on the internet	3.66±1.61	3.76±1.49	0.162	3.71±1.55
E-mail check	4.45±0.96	4.74±0.54	<0.001	4.60±0.79
Sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc.	4.48±0.76	4.56±0.76	0.019	4.52±0.76
Business	3.92±1.41	4.33±0.91	<0.001	4.13±1.19
Ordering products	3.79±1.38	4.17±0.86	<0.001	3.99±1.16
Performing banking transactions	3.54±1.63	4.04±1.06	<0.001	3.80±1.39
Listening to music selected on the internet	4.51±0.79	4.19±0.89	<0.001	4.34±0.86

Listening to radio on the internet	3.66±1.62	2.97±1.82	<0.001	3.30±1.76
Watching videos on the internet	4.61±0.81	4.62±0.60	0.763	4.62±0.71
Watching movies on the internet	4.28±1.16	4.59±0.67	<0.001	4.44±0.95
Watching TV program selected on the internet	3.87±1.44	3.58±1.43	<0.001	3.72±1.44
Watching Live TV on the internet	3.66±1.64	3.75±1.48	0.185	3.70±1.56
Accessing the news	4.44±0.83	4.03±1.26	<0.001	4.23±1.10
Other	3.83±1.46	3.66±1.25	0.007	3.74±1.36

Data has been expressed as mean ± standard deviation. Average values close to 1 represent the "No usage", and close to 5 represent "the most usage".

Descriptive statistics and comparisons by the cities regarding the intended use of internet are given in Table 2. Participants of Istanbul use the internet most frequently for "**watching videos, listening to the selected music, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., getting information and checking the e-mail**" respectively and **least frequently** "**reading books**", participants of New York use it most frequently for "**getting information, checking e-mail, watching videos and sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc." and the least frequently** for **"listening to radio**". Participants of Istanbul use the internet more than those who participate from New York in terms of playing interactive games, accessing the social networking sites (Facebook, twitter, etc.), listening to to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet, watching TV program selected on the internet and accessing the news ($p<0.05$). Participants of New York use the internet more than those who participate from Istanbul in terms of getting information, reading books, making new friends, checking e-mails, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, business, ordering products, performing banking transactions and watching movies ($p<0.05$).

Internet use is determined as similar by the cities in terms of finding and downloading software programs, audio/video chatting on the internet, watching video on the internet and watching live TV on the internet ($p<0.05$).

ISTANBUL **NEW YORK**

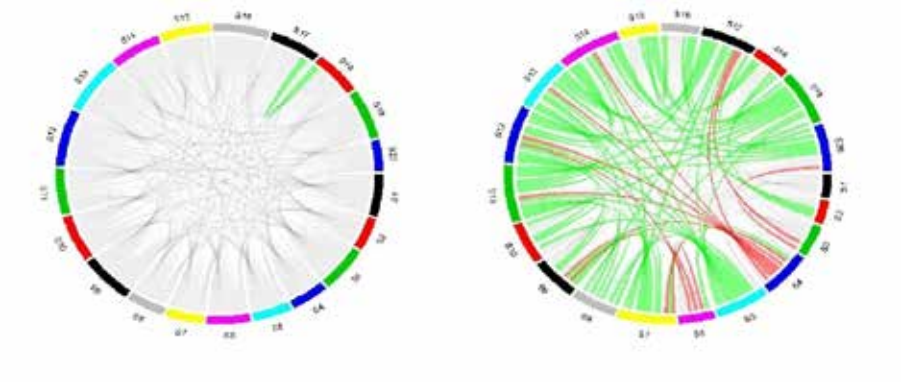


Figure 1. Relations between the Intended Uses of the Internet

Figure 1. Circular "chord diagram" chart illustrating the relations between the intended uses of internet for Istanbul and New York separately and collectively. While green lines indicate the relations that are positive and with a Spearman correlation coefficient higher than 0.5, red lines indicate the relations that are negative and with a Spearman correlation coefficient lower than 0.5.

Items of intended use of the internet are; S1: Getting information, S2: Reading books, S3: Finding and downloading software programs, S4: Paying interactive games, S5: Accessing the social networking site (facebook, twitter, etc.), S6: Making new friends, S7: Audio/video chatting on the internet, S8: Checking e-mails, S9: Sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., S10: Business, S11:Ordering products, S12: Performing banking transactions, S13: Listening to music selected on the internet, S14: Listening to radio on the internet, S15: Watching videos on the internet, S16: Watching movies on the internet, S17: Watching TV program selected on the internet, S18: Watching live TV on the internet, S19:Accessing the news, S20: Other.

By the circular "chord diagram" charts illustrating the relation between the intended uses of internet for two cities, relations between the intended uses of the internet are shown separately and collectively by circular "chord diagram" charts. Positive correlations are indicated by green lines and negative correlations are shown by red lines.

Findings obtained by this chart have demonstrated **for the participants of Istanbul** that those who watch TV program on the internet watch live TV as well.

As for the participants of New York;

- Those who use the internet to read books use it also to watch videos, watch movies and watch live TV,
- Those who use the internet to find and download software programs do not use it also to watch TV program selected on the internet,
- Those who use the internet to play interactive games use it also to make new friends and do not use it for audio/video chatting on the internet, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., ordering products, performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet and watching TV program selected on the internet,
- Those who use the internet to access the social networking sites use it also for audio/video chatting on the internet, checking e-mails, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., business, ordering products, performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet and watching TV program selected on the internet,
- Those who use the internet to make new friends do not use it also for audio/video chatting on the internet, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc. and performing banking transactions,
- Those who use the internet for audio/video chatting on the internet use it also for checking e-mails, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., ordering products, performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet, watching TV program selected on the internet and accessing the news,
- Those who use the internet to check e-mails use it also for sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., ordering products, performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet and watching TV program selected on the internet,
- Those who use the internet for sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc. use it also for ordering products and performing banking transactions,
- Those who use the internet for business use it also for performing banking transactions and accessing the news,
- Those who use the internet to order products use it also for performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet, watching TV program

selected on the internet and accessing the news,

- Those who use the internet to perform banking transactions use it also for listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet, watching TV program selected on the internet and accessing the news,
- Those who use the internet to listen music selected on the internet use it also for listening to radio on the internet, watching TV program selected on the internet and accessing the news,
- Those who use the internet to listen radio on the internet use it also for watching TV program selected on the internet and accessing the news,
- Those who use the internet to watch video on the internet use it also for watching movies on the internet, watching live TV on the internet and accessing the news,
- Those who use the internet to watch movie on the internet use it also for watching live TV on the internet and accessing the news,
- Those who use the internet to watch live TV on the internet use it also for accessing the news.

Table 3. Statistics regarding the intended use of internet and demographic characteristics and comparison by the cities

Variable	Istanbul			New York			General		
	Male (*n*=485)	Female (*n*=525)	*p*	Male (*n*=498)	Female (*n*=593)	*p*	Male (*n*=983)	Female (*n*=1118)	*p*
Age	24.78±4.60	24.92±2.96	0.063	24.46±3.10	28.07±1.60	<0.001	24.62±3.91	26.31±2.99	<0.001
Education level									
Associate degree	160(33.0)	19(3.6)	<0.001	185(37.1)	148(25.0)	<0.001	345(35.1)	167(14.9)	<0.001
Undergraduate education	282(58.1)	432(82.3)		147(29.5)	238(40.1)		429(43.6)	670(59.9)	
Postgraduate	33(6.8)	67(12.8)		136(27.3)	99(16.7)		169(17.2)	166(14.8)	
Doctorate	10(2.1)	7(1.3)		30(6.0)	108(18.2)		40(4.1)	115(10.3)	
Scientific field									
Social sciences	231(47.6)	293(55.8)	0.061	98(19.7)	205(34.6)	<0.001	329(33.5)	498(44.5)	<0.001
Physical sciences	186(38.4)	166(31.6)		277(55.6)	110(18.5)		463(47.1)	276(24.7)	
Health sciences	47(9.7)	42(8.0)		41(8.2)	163(27.5)		88(9.0)	205(18.3)	
Other	21(4.3)	24(4.6)		82(16.5)	115(19.4)		103(10.5)	139(12.4)	
Daily internet use									
≤30 mn	19(3.9)	27(5.1)	<0.001	9(1.8)	4(0.7)	<0.001	28(2.8)	31(2.8)	<0.001
31-59 mn	23(4.7)	49(9.3)		12(2.4)	6(1.0)		35(3.6)	55(4.9)	
1-2 hours	78(16.1)	172(32.8)		146(29.3)	60(10.1)		224(22.8)	232(20.8)	
3-4 hours	228(47.0)	182(30.9)		206(41.4)	235(39.6)		434(44.2)	397(35.5)	
≥5 hours	137(28.2)	115(21.9)		125(25.1)	288(48.6)		262(26.7)	403(36.0)	
Place where the internet used mostly									
Home	257(53.0)	297(56.6)	0.153	268(53.8)	296(49.9)	<0.001	525(53.4)	593(53.0)	<0.001
School	37(7.6)	25(4.8)		18(3.6)	126(21.2)		55(5.6)	151(13.5)	
Library	3(0.6)	2(0.4)		0(0.0)	6(1.0)		3(0.3)	8(0.7)	
Dorm	4(0.8)	11(2.1)		0(0.0)	5(0.8)		4(0.4)	16(1.4)	
Mobile	90(18.6)	102(19.4)		129(25.9)	68(11.5)		219(22.3)	170(15.2)	
Other	94(19.4)	88(16.8)		83(16.7)	92(15.5)		177(18.0)	180(16.1)	
Access to the internet*									
Desktop	180(37.1)	72(13.7)	<0.001	66(13.3)	29(4.9)	<0.001	246(25.0)	101(9.0)	<0.001
Laptop	359(74.0)	393(74.9)	0.761	452(90.8)	587(99.0)	<0.001	811(82.5)	980(87.7)	0.049
Tablet	177(36.5)	127(24.2)	<0.001	75(15.1)	61(10.3)	0.017	252(25.6)	188(16.8)	<0.001
Telephone	425(87.6)	431(82.1)	0.015	476(95.6)	569(96.0)	0.762	851(86.6)	1000(89.4)	0.042
TV	5(0.1)	7(0.1)	0.658	0(0.0)	0(0.0)	-	5(0.1)	7(0.1)	0.721
Device by which it is accessed to the internet mostly									
Desktop	48(9.9)	9(1.7)	<0.001	0(0.0)	0(0.0)	<0.001	48(4.9)	9(0.8)	<0.001
Laptop	195(40.2)	230(43.8)		253(50.8)	498(84.0)		448(45.6)	728(65.1)	
Tablet	29(6.0)	54(10.3)		42(8.4)	54(9.1)		71(7.2)	108(9.7)	
Telephone	213(43.9)	232(44.2)		203(40.8)	41(6.9)		416(42.3)	273(24.4)	

Data has been expressed as mean ± standard deviation or frequency (percentage).
*Marks are seen as more than one.

General descriptive statistics regarding internet use and demographic characteristics for both cities and its comparative analysis by sex are given in Table 3. While any difference was not seen in terms of age between the genders of participants from Istanbul ($p>0.05$), age of women was higher than the age of men in terms of the participants from New York ($p<0.05$). A difference was observed by sex of participants from both Istanbul and New York in terms of education level. While rate of individuals who study at undergraduate education and postgraduate levels were higher in women for the participants from Istanbul, rate of individuals who study at undergraduate education and doctorate was higher in women for the participants from New York ($p<0.05$). While any difference of scientific field was not seen between the genders of participants from Istanbul ($p>0.05$), it was observed for the participants from New York that rate of men was higher only in physical sciences and rate of women was higher in other fields ($p<0.05$). A difference was observed between the genders of participants from two cities in terms of daily use of internet. In participants from Istanbul, women constitute majority of the participants who use the internet 2 hours and less and men constitute the majority of participants who use the internet more than 3 hours ($p>0.05$). As for participants from New York, men constitute majority of the participants who use the internet 4 hours and less and women constitute the majority of participants who use the internet more than 5 hours ($p<0.05$). While any difference was not seen by genders of participants from Istanbul in terms of the place to access the internet ($p>0.05$), women participants from New York use the internet mostly at school, library and dorm ($p<0.05$). When considering the devices to access the internet, any significant difference was not observed by the genders in terms of laptop and TV for participants of Istanbul and in terms of telephone for participants of New York ($p>0.05$). It was observed that men participated from Istanbul access the internet more frequently via desktop pc, laptop and tablet and from New York via desktop and tablet ($p<0.05$). A significant difference was observed by genders between the participants from both cities in terms of device used mostly to access the internet, and women participated from Istanbul do not prefer to access the internet via desktop pc, and it was determined that while rate of access the internet via laptop was higher in women than men, rate of access the internet via telephone was higher in men than women in terms of the participants from New York ($p<0.05$).

Table 4. Statistics regarding the intended uses of internet and comparison by the cities

Intended use of internet	Istanbul			New York			General		
	Male (*n*=485)	Female (*n*=525)	*p P*	Male (*n*=498)	Female (*n*=593)	*p p*	Male (*n*=983)	Female (*n*=1118)	*p p*
Getting information	4.32±0.98	4.57±0.76	<0.001	4.66±0.48	4.98±0.15	<0.001	4.49±0.79	4.78±0.57	<0.001
Reading books	3.14±1.73	2.22±1.73	<0.001	4.24±1.09	4.30±1.07	0.349	3.70±1.54	3.32±1.76	<0.001
Finding and downloading software programs	4.02±1.25	3.41±1.61	<0.001	3.96±1.01	3.59±0.93	<0.001	3.99±1.13	3.51±1.30	<0.001
Playing games interactively	3.37±1.61	3.59±1.71	0.036	2.75±1.84	3.63±1.78	<0.001	3.06±1.76	3.61±1.75	<0.001
Accessing social networking sites (Facebook, twitter etc.)	4.44±1.03	4.30±1.17	0.043	4.38±1.01	3.74±1.62	<0.001	4.41±1.02	4.00±1.46	<0.001
Making new friends	3.17±1.66	3.83±1.53	<0.001	3.71±1.26	4.46±0.63	<0.001	3.44±1.50	4.16±1.19	<0.001
Audio/video chatting on the internet	3.88±1.44	3.47±1.73	<0.001	3.99±1.01	3.57±1.77	<0.001	3.93±1.24	3.52±1.75	<0.001
E-mail check	4.33±1.13	4.57±0.76	<0.001	4.81±0.57	4.67±0.50	<0.001	4.57±0.93	4.62±0.64	0.150
Sending/ receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc.	4.49±0.81	4.48±0.71	0.793	4.82±0.58	4.35±0.82	<0.001	4.66±0.72	4.41±0.77	<0.001
Business	3.76±1.46	4.06±1.34	<0.001	4.18±1.09	4.44±0.70	<0.001	3.98±1.30	4.26±1.07	<0.001
Ordering products	3.69±1.32	3.89±1.44	0.023	4.24±0.63	4.11±1.00	0.010	3.97±1.06	4.01±1.23	0.461
Performing banking transactions	3.73±1.53	3.36±1.70	<0.001	4.20±0.92	3.92±1.15	<0.001	3.97±1.28	3.65±1.46	<0.001
Listening to music selected on the internet	4.71±0.63	4.32±0.88	<0.001	4.27±0.67	4.12±1.04	0.007	4.49±0.69	4.22±0.97	<0.001
Listening to radio on the internet	4.08±1.51	3.28±1.63	<0.001	2.66±1.89	3.23±1.71	<0.001	3.36±1.85	3.25±1.67	0.145
Watching videos on the internet	4.74±0.53	4.50±0.98	<0.001	4.36±0.72	4.84±0.37	<0.001	4.55±0.66	4.68±0.74	<0.001
Watching movies on the internet	4.43±1.04	4.14±1.25	<0.001	4.35±0.72	4.79±0.55	<0.001	4.39±0.89	4.48±1.00	0.022
Watching TV program selected on the internet	3.55±1.40	4.16±1.41	<0.001	3.93±0.93	3.28±1.69	<0.001	3.74±1.20	3.69±1.62	0.442
Watching Live TV on the internet	3.39±1.58	3.90±1.65	<0.001	3.02±1.64	4.36±0.97	<0.001	3.20±1.62	4.15±1.35	<0.001

Accessing the news	4.45±0.92	4.43±0.75	0.713	3.50±1.63	4.47±0.53	<0.001	3.97±1.41	4.45±0.64	<0.001
Other	3.47±1.55	4.15±1.29	<0.001	3.76±1.08	3.58±1.37	0.015	3.62±1.34	3.85±1.36	<0.001

Data has been expressed as mean ± standard deviation. Average values close to 1 represent the "No usage", and close to 5 represent "the most usage".

Respective and general descriptive statistics and comparisons by sex regarding the intended use of internet for both cities are shown in Table 4. Any difference was not observed by sex for participants from Istanbul in terms of internet use to send/receive photos, images, files, etc. and access the internet and for participants from New York in terms of internet use to read books ($p>0.05$). For the participants of Istanbul, while internet usage rate is higher in men in terms of reading books, finding and downloading software programs, accessing the social networking sites (facebook, twitter, etc.), audio/video chatting on the internet, performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet, watching videos on the internet, watching movies on the internet, internet usage rate is higher in women in terms of getting information, playing interactive games, making new friends, checking e-mails, business, ordering products, watching TV program selected on the internet, watching live TV on the internet ($p<0.05$). For the participants of New York, while internet usage rate is higher in men in terms of finding and downloading software programs, accessing the social networking sites (facebook, twitter, etc.), audio/video chatting on the internet, checking e-mails, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., ordering products, performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet, watching TV program selected on the internet, internet usage rate is higher in women in terms of getting information, playing interactive games, making new friends, business, listening to radio on the internet, watching videos on the internet, watching movies on the internet, watching live TV on the internet and accessing the news ($p<0.05$). Besides, men participants of Istanbul use the internet most frequently for watching videos, listening to the selected music, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., getting information and checking the e-mail respectively and they use it least frequently for reading books. Women participants of Istanbul use the internet most frequently for getting information, checking e-mail and watching videos and the least frequently for reading books. While men participants of New York use the internet most frequently for sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., checking the e-mails and getting information respectively, they use it least frequently for listening to radio on the internet. While women participants of New York use the internet most frequently for getting information, watching videos and movies, they use it least frequently for listening to radio on the internet.

RESULTS AND RECOMMENDATIONS

Istanbul and New York are one of the most multicultural and the most crowded settlements of the countries they are in. Therefore, rates of internet usage are high due to the population they have. In this study done, university students that is an education section with a high rate of internet usage have been considered as target group. In this study participated by 1010 students study in Istanbul and 1091 students study in New York, it has been observed that rates are close to each other between women and men.

While rate of those who study undergraduate education and postgraduate education is higher in women participants of Istanbul, rate of undergraduate education and doctorate education is higher in women participants of New York. When considering the scientific fields chosen, it is observed that while students who prefer social sciences are higher in Istanbul (51.9%) and there is a tendency to physical sciences in New York (35.5%). For the scientific field, while any difference is not observed between the genders of participants from Istanbul, rate of men is higher only in physical sciences and rate of women is higher in other fields for the participants from New York.

In daily use of internet, students both in Istanbul and New York spend 3-4 hours intensively in a day; however, it is observed that those who use it more than five hours constitute a significant figure.

According to the findings, it is seen that participants use the internet most frequently at home. In addition to this, it is determined that they access the internet by using mobile communication devices. While there is no difference by sex in the participants of Istanbul in terms of the place to access the internet most frequently, women participants in New York use the internet more at school, library and dorm. In terms of internet connection, telephone and then laptop are used most frequently. This rate is almost the same in both cities. In this case, it can be concluded that internet is accessed mostly by mobile ways.

Among the participants use the internet for different reasons, while students live in Istanbul use the internet frequently to watch videos, listen the selected music, send/receive data such like photos, images, files, etc., get information and check the mails, they use it least frequently to read books. As for students live in New York, they use the internet frequently to get information and check the mails, watch videos and send/receive data such like photos, images, files, etc., get information and check the mails, they use it least frequently to listen radio. There is no difference observed between the genders in terms of sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc. and access the news for participants in Istanbul and in terms of reading books for the participants in New York.

Students in Istanbul use the internet more than those in New York in terms of playing interactive games, accessing the social networking sites, listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet, watching TV program selected on the internet and accessing the news. Students in New York use the internet more than those in Istanbul in terms of getting information, reading books, making new friends, checking e-mails, sending/receiving photos, images, business, ordering products, performing banking transactions and watching movies. Internet usage rates are similar between Istanbul and New York in terms of finding and downloading software programs, audio/video chatting on the internet, watching video on the internet and watching live TV on the internet. For the participants both in Istanbul and New York, while rate of internet use is higher in men in terms of reading books, finding and downloading software programs, accessing the social networking sites, audio/video chatting on the internet, performing banking transactions, listening to music selected on the internet, listening to radio on the internet, watching videos on the internet, watching movies on the internet, rate of internet use is higher in women in terms of getting information, playing interactive games, making new friends, checking e-mails, business, ordering products, watching TV program selected on the internet, watching live TV on the internet.

According to the results obtained from the study, it is seen that users in Istanbul watch the TV program selected on the internet as also live. As for New York, students who use the internet to read books also watch video/movies and TV as live. Moreover, it is determined that students who intend to find and download software programs on the internet do not TV program on the internet. On the other hand, it is seen that students who intend to play interactive games do not use the internet to make new friends, audio/video chat, exchange images, photos and several data, order products, perform several banking transactions, listen the selected music and watch TV. They use the internet generally to access the social networking sites. It is observed that when students in New York want to make new friends, they do not make video call, exchange data such like images, files, etc. and several operations. It has been determined that those who check e-mails on the internet and perform audio call and video call intend to use other services. It is observed that students who use the internet for business and ordering products use the internet also for banking transactions, ordering products and watching the news, and those who use the internet for several purposes generally watch TV as live and access the news. Furthermore, while men participants in Istanbul use the internet most frequently for watching videos, listening to the selected music, sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc. respectively; they use it least frequently for reading books. While women participants of Istanbul use the internet most frequently for getting information, checking e-mail and watching videos,

they use it least frequently for reading books. While men participants in New York use the internet most frequently for sending/receiving data such like photos, images, files, etc., checking the e-mail and getting information respectively, they use it least frequently for listening to radio on the internet. While women participants in New York use the internet most frequently for getting information, watching videos and movies respectively, they use it least frequently for listening to radio on the internet.

In conclusion, rate of internet use is high in the group who are young and with a high level of education in Turkey and the USA. These determinations have been taken into consideration while constituting target group of the study, and university students have been chosen as target group of the study. Problems mentioned in the study have been answered. While internet is accessed most frequently at home, importance of mobile devices is demonstrated as telephone and then laptop are used commonly to access the internet. While students live in Istanbul use the internet least frequently to read books, students in New York use it least frequently to listen to radio.

REFERENCES:

AGHAEI, S., M.A. NEMATBAKHSH and H.K. FARSANI (2012), "Evolution of the World Wide Web: from Web 1.0 to Web 4.0" *International Journal of Web & Semantic Technology*, 3 (1), pp.1-10.

AKSU, H., U. CANDAN ve M. N. ÇANKAYA. (2011), *Everything is transparent* (1st edition). Istanbul, Kapital Media Services.

BLACKSHAW, P. and NAZZARO, M. (2006), *Consumer Generated Media (CGM) 101: Word of Mouth in the Age of the Web-Fortified Consumer*, New York, Nielsen Buzz Metrics.

DOYLE, P. (2004), Value-based Marketing: Marketing Strategies to expand your Company and Create Shareholder Value (translated by G. Barış), Istanbul, Kapital Media Services.

ELDENIZ, L. (2010), Internet at the Second Media Age (edited by Filiz Aydoğan and Ayşen Akyüz), Role of Interaction at Second Media Age and into *Web 2.0,* 1st edition, Istanbul, Alfa Media Publication Distribution, pp.18-36.

FABER, R.J., M. LEE and X. NAN (2004), "Advertising and the Consumer Information Environment Online" *American Behavioral Scientist*. 48 (4), pp.447-466.

HAŞILOĞLU, S.B. (2007), Marketing by Electronic Mail, 1st edition, Istanbul: Beta Printing and Publishing.

KÖKER, N.E. (2006). Digital Platform and Comunication (edited by Zekiye Beril Akıncı Vural), Into Information Society, Internet and Ethics, 1st edition, İzmir: Ege University, Publications Distribution, pp.221-239.

MAZICI, T.E (2016), "Relation Management in Brand Positioning: An evaluation over web pages in banking sector", The Journal of Academic Social Science Studies, 44, Spring II, pp.73-90

MURUGESAN, S. (2010), "Web X.0: A Road Map" *Handbook of Research on Web 2.0, 3.0 and X.0: Technologies, Business and Social Applications,* Ed. S. Murugesan, Chapter 1, pp.1-11.

RIES, A. ve L. RIES (2001), 11 Stable Rules to create a Brand on the Internet, Ankara, Kapital Media Services.

SAĞIROĞLU, Ş. (2001), *Efficient Informatics for Everyone*, 1st edition, Kayseri, Ufuk Bookstore.

SÖZER, B. (2002), *Electronic Agreements,* Istanbul, Beta Publishing.

ŞENER, B. (2003), "A Hybrid Communication Channel: Web", Ed. A. One, Marketing Communication in All Regards. Istanbul, Kapital Media Services.

TIMISI, N. (2003), New Communication Technologies and Democracy, Ankara, Dost Publications.

TOSUN, N.B. and LEVI, E. (2010), Internet at the Second Media Age Eds. F. Aydoğan and A. Akyüz, Into Social Media in Brand Society Approach, Istanbul: Alfa Media Publication Distribution, pp.93-121.

URL_1.http://collegeinnyc.org (08.10.2016).

URL_2.http://www.census.gov/content/dam/Census/library publications/2014/acs/acs-28.pdf (07.10.2016).

URL_3.http://www.internetworldstats.com/top20.htm (10.07.2017).

URL_4.http://www.statista.com/statistics/228586/internet-users-in-the-usa/ (03.10.2016).

URL_5.http://www.statista.com/statistics/266587/percentage-of-internet-users-by-age-groups-in-the-us (16.10.2016).

URL_6.http://www.statista.com/statistics/327130/internet-penetration-usa-gender (16.10.2016).

URL_7.http://www.statista.com/statistics/368630/us-online-access-householder-education (10.10.2016).

URL_8.http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreHaberBultenleri.do?id=13569 (15.07.2017).

URL_9.http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreHaberBultenleri.do?id=13569 (15.07.2017).

URL_10.http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreHaberBultenleri.do?id=16198 (15.07.2017).

URL_11.http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreHaberBultenleri.do?id=21779 (13.07.2017).

URL_12.http://yok.gov.tr/web/guest/universitelerimiz (07.10.2016).

URL_13.https://istatistik.yok.gov.tr (07.10.2016).

EU and International Relations Studies

TURKEY AND GREECE'S FOREIGN POLICIES IN THE CONTEXT OF BALKANS CONFLICT IN 1990s

Volkan TATAR[1]

ABSTRACT

About half a century of cold war has been reflected in the internal and external policies of the states, causing changes in these policies. First of all, the Cold War is a different way of perceiving the division of the world between the two poles, which forces the rest of the world. Powerful states and decision-making mechanisms have been out of the question for the first time in centuries to be European-centric. Also for the first time in history, the impact of the previous period was very limited, the two capitals became so influential in the international political system. such as Turkey and Greece, based on the relationship of many years and also have met many times in the clash plane relations of the two states, primarily the problems occurring in the border lays irredentism and regional issues. If the two states are the beginning of these problems, the solution will be the will of the two states. The Cold War system, though in different forms, has been both influential in both the deepening of the crises and the effects of the solution and the actors. It should be noted that both Turkey and Greece, and throughout the Cold War has the same polarity as their geographical location, the impact is felt in the pole directly against them.

The last periods of the Cold War are a period of great and change, as well as a period of crisis that contains crises. Turkey and Greece during this transitional period, affecting and affected, has had an impact at different points. These political outbreaks, at the same time, contain conflicts, antagonisms and collaborations. In this study, it was tried to discuss how the two governments approached the crises that took place in the Balkans in the last period of the Cold War. At the same time, the two states have shown how the perspectives in the crises in the Balkans and how their affairs are affected. Finally, the other aim is to what extent the problems between them are affected by regional and global developments.

Keywords: Turkish Foreign Policy, Greece, Balkans.

1 Assist. Prof. TC. İstanbul Arel University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, International Relations. volkantatar@arel.edu.tr.

INTRODUCTION

During the Ottoman Empire, one of the most grievous of the independence movements is the independence period of Greece. During the Greek revolt, the Ottoman State was faced with the active assaults of leading European states (Kocaoğlu,1997:62). The subsequent Egyptian insurrection began with the most difficult period of the empire, resulting in the defeat of Anatolia, which the Ottoman Empire regarded as the most trouble-free and sheltered region (Kocaoğlu,1997:62). The most negative reflections of these developments are the developments in the weakened Empire, especially in the Balkans, located in the north-west. In the Balkans, Greece and the Ottoman Empire will constantly face after 1800s in history. II. If the situation in the Balkan War is left on the edge, even the alliances they are involved are different. This is the case in the I. Balkan War and World War I. Turkey's War of Independence, was realized in the form of direct confrontation with Greece. The declaration of independence in 1920, has a desire to grow up in Greece and Anatolia direction continuously Mora also has come to Edirne starting from the peninsula. The struggle to advance to Izmir and Anatolia was ending in 'Great Anatolian Bozgun' and ending in Izmir, where the dream started. In the interwar period, heal the wounds of the two nations, finalizing the problems in Lausanne and enhanced cooperation in many areas such as cooperation against common threats and entered a relatively calm period. Especially revisionist Italy and Bulgaria's emissaries in the Balkans politically approximated these two states. also to be close to a solution-oriented personality and co-leader of Ataturk and Venizelos of the period, both states has resulted in a friendly solution of the issues of concern. During the Second World War, due to Turkey's non-combat period is a different situation. Greece first fought with Italy and worked for the resistance, then German occupation. II. The conclusion of the World War against the Axis resulted in the end of the occupation of Greece. After a short period after World War II, subsequent developments brought about the end of Turkish-Greek friendship. Especially during the Cold War, the two states were under Soviet threat, but they had come to the brink of war many times with each other. The 'zero sum' structure of boundary problems on land and sea has resulted in their suspicion of each other's movements. Accurate analysis of the developments in the Balkans after 1990 is directly related to the policy of the two states in the Cold War era in the region. The historical process will be guided in the Balkans in terms of the post-1990 Turkish-Greek relations, as reflected in the different events.

2. Turkish and Greek Relations in the Cold War Era

After the Second World War, many areas need the friendship of Turkey and Greece to cooperate, he reasons in the near term, it is a matter of importance the two states. The German and Italian threats are now over the region, but a very strong Soviet threat has begun. In this respect, the Turkish-Greek rapprochement in the 1930s and 1950s is similar in terms of its development, especially under the threat of a strong external state (Oran,2009: 586). Revisionist Italy in the 1930s, and the USSR in the 1950s are the subjects of this threat. The Soviet Union is a particularly serious threat to the beginning of World War II. They became permanent in the states they entered under the pretext of liberation from the German armies, and they continued their activities in spreading their systems in this way. Particularly in the Balkans, Romania, Bulgaria, Albania and Bulgaria are clearly under the influence of the Soviet Union. All these developments are monitored with concern by Greece and Turkey in the Balkans. Greece in upstate be active and powerful of the communists, when considered together with economic and political difficulties, which explain the nature of the need for friendship Turkey. The Soviet Union needed Turkey, Kars and around the Straits of requests, as well as the challenges of the economic situation due to high defense spending, it is decisive in terms of relationships.

2.1. Post-1945 International Political System and Its Impact on Turkish-Greek Relations

In the last years of the Second World War, divisions began within the front against the Axis. In particular, as the Soviet Army achieved successes against the German armies, it accelerated its progress toward the West, and began to establish activities on states beyond its borders. When the Second World War comes to an end, there is undoubted Soviet sovereignty in central and Eastern Europe. In the West, the eastern part of Germany and almost half of it were under Soviet control. While part of Berlin was in the hands of the communists, the other part remained in an 'enclave' surrounded by communists. The fact that the Soviet Union's politically self-governing governments were at work and that the rest of the states were deprived of their former military and economic power due to the devastating effects of the Second World War made the Soviet Union superior in Europe. The Soviet Union and its bloc states are far superior in terms of conventional arms and troops in Europe. The rest of the countries are in both economic and political instability. In many states, such as France and Greece, the left movement is very strong and there is support from outside. At that time, the influence and the pressure of the Soviets in Europe was clearly superior.

Despite the Soviet advance in such a political stalemate, the US support came with Marshall aid, the Soviet Union opposed, the remaining states began to be supported (Marshall Foundation 1945,1947). The decade between 1945 and 1955 is the year in which the Cold War's most anxious and almost hot war is about to return. The establishment of NATO, the signing of the Warsaw Pact, and the support of the European defense by the United States have all been seen in these years. In the following period, despite the fact that the Cold War had always continued in the form of indirect conflicts in different regions and countries due to the horrific balance of the two great nuclear powers, there was no direct war. Vietnam, Afghanistan, and Korean Wars can always be considered in the context of these indirect conflicts. Apart from the war, two block conflicts continued in the field of public diplomacy and the actions of agents, actions, terrorist organizations and the attrition of central governments continued during the entire cold war period. The emergence of the European Economic Community (EEC) and its subsequent transformation into the European Union must also be considered in this context. In economically challenging Europe, it has been successful and progressed on a plane that began with creating a common market and expanded in scope and depth. In the next period, when the states of Yugoslavia, India and Egypt, which are separated from each other by the opening of the Soviet Union and want to stay, are gathered around the disconnection movement, it is a reaction against the east and west blocks. (Sönmezoğlu, 2012, 403-407). Particularly, the preference of the states that have gained their independence and have more limited capacity and power is generally in this direction. This fragmented structure of the international political system during the Cold War, Turkey and Greece were also affected. The common feature of Turkey and Greece, against the Soviet threat, are arranged in the same block. The two neighboring states, the main strength of the Eastern Bloc, are the Soviet Union, perhaps the most loyal state, the land border with Bulgaria. Eastern Bloc states in the Balkans, nonalignment (Yugoslavia) and isolationism (Albania) division is totally affect neighboring Turkey and Greece. According to Turkey's geopolitical position of Greece it includes both more positive than negative features. Outside the Balkans, the borders of the Middle East, which are constantly boiling over the Caucasus and oil, require that we have to be more cautious in foreign policy when we add that we have straits.

2.2. Factors Affecting Turkish-Greek Relations on a Global and Regional Basis

Mutual goodwill visits, which took place after the Second World War, show the desire and effort of the two governments to get closer. But it is very important, especially by the United States, to include both countries

of Marshall assistance (Marshall Foundation 1945,1947). Following NATO membership in 1952, NATO has further improved its relations with NATO, as it is within the same alliance system (NATO, (Nato,1952). NATO support on the US front has strengthened the hand of Greece in particular and has brought domestic stability relatively, resulting in Greek communists withdrawing to Albania. (Oran, 2009: 582). In Tito's Yugoslavia in the Balkans, slowly move away from the Soviet Union, Turkey, Greece and Yugoslavia, it has made a similar point. This closeness, which will result in the Balkan Pact, is also important in terms of encompassing the Soviet Union if it is important for Ankara, Athens and Belgrade The presence of two NATO States in Pak helped to provide peace of mind in the Balkans, while providing superior protection to Yugoslavia on the one hand. (Balkan Entente,1934).

After 1955, cold Cyprus winds started to flow between Ankara and Athens. This problem has continued its effect until day. Turkish and Greek Cypriots live together in Cyprus, which has been in control since 1878. The Greek Cypriots in the region increasingly express their 'enosis' demands and set their targets as united with Greece. Self-determination in this case as they defended the right of Turkey and due to the presence on the island is located across the UK. Greece and the Greek enosis they wish, the division of the island disagreements between Turkey and Greece support Turkey's result in 1960 resulted in the US support in the independent Cyprus (Oran, 2009: 598-606). The most important motive for the US to act for a solution is that the southern wing of NATO could weaken without such a debate. Nevertheless, the Cypriot republic and peacefulness have been on the horizon for a very short period of time. Which stood in the middle of the constitutional order, civilian deaths have increased day by day and at a time when the Turks removed from state affairs, which is one of the guarantor countries Turkey, Cyprus held its peace operations. This operation has ended the conflicts as much as the day before. In the following period, despite the fact that the states do not recognize, the presence of Turkish dominion in the north continued on the declaration of the TRNC. There are many reasons for the Turkish-Greek tension here. An important part is the different approach to the solution of the Cyprus issue. Secondly, the western Thrace Turks and the Greek minority in Istanbul are irredentism. Finally yet 'de jure' not a clear solution and 'de facto' as a solution to the Cyprus issue remains on the table because Turkey and Greece have continued tension.

1980 between Greece and Turkey can be summarized in two concepts: tension and crisis (Armaoğlu, 1998: 955). The two states are not the only problem in Cyprus, there are many problems they can not agree on. A land border, which is determined by considering the Meriç River, is relatively

problematic. But for the Aegean Sea, which has a much longer class, it is not possible to say that. In the Aegean Sea, especially after the 1975 agenda preoccupied and Turkey's 'spy waist', leading up to the declaration, territorial issue, the continental shelf issue, airspace and FIR line (Flight Information Region) is experienced as many problems (RATE, 2009: 750-760). Apart from these, the arming of the islands in the Aegean and the mutual harassment of the armies have brought the two states against each other many times. In 1984, the disarmament of the island of Limni, in which the NATO was involved, was disarmed in the Treaty of Lausanne. This crisis reached the brink of conflict, as a result of Turkey's harsh reaction was terminated more laid back step and a crisis (Armaoğlu, 2009: 958-959). Also many times and Turks in Western Thrace, the problems with Turkey have been treated under the reflection of Turkish citizens in the region has been under pressure (Armaoğlu, 2009: 963).

3.Cold Postwar Period Turkey-Greece Relations

3.1. Developments After the Cold War

3.1.1. Global Developments

The process of disintegration of the Eastern Bloc, which started at the end of the 1980s, is quite painful. The problems that have been postponed under the control of the Eastern Bloc and the Soviet Union have begun to emerge. The economic and social crisis fueled the internal and external conflicts of the states. In particular, nationalism over socialism has resulted in many conflicts, such as the Balkans and the Caucasus, where micro-nationalism is favorable.

The separation in the Soviet Union as a result of the independence movement that started with the Baltic states of Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania has also jumped to other countries. Achieving independence has also been regarded as moral for states with economic and political problems and has come after independence declarations. The reason for this is the end of the Eastern Bloc.

3.1.1. Regional Developments: 'Balkans'

Developments in the international political system have been felt more in the Balkans, both because of the geopolitical position of the region, and because of ethnic fragmentation. Although the central and eastern European states have undergone a major transformation, the most painful balance sheet has been achieved in the Balkans. 1989 As a consequence of the fall of the Berlin wall, opposing voices in the East Block have begun

to be heard at the highest pitch. Those who raise these dissenting voices are nationalist governments, and micro-nationalism is now included in the calculations of power. The ideological oppression that dominated the second half of the 20th century had closed or temporarily disappeared areas that separated nations such as language, religion and culture (Simpson, 2362). This pressure is now rising and even disappearing. Yugoslavia, Bulgaria, Albania and Romania in the Balkans are affected by the process. Bulgaria has managed to nisper manage the transition process in a positive sense, the reforms of the 1990s, positive developments in relations with Turkey have brought about. problems with Turkey, with little economic and political concerns began to fix (Sönmezoğlu, 2006: 603-608). The most treasured picture in the region has emerged in the former Yugoslavia. developments in the former Yugoslavia, but also the two NATO member states, Turkey than in Greece, has brought an important distinction. In 1989, some resolutions of the federal parliaments of the states that formed Yugoslavia saw demands for independence; but especially in March 1990, when the central Yugoslav government and the federal states were sprawling. In 1990, the elections of the Yugoslav parliament, in Slovenia in April, and in Croatia in May, the communist parties were defeated (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1991: 38502). In Serbia in November and in Montenegro in December, communists won, while Bosnia-Herzegovina and Macedonia are out of nationalist governments (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1991: 38502).

Slovenia and Croatia officially declared their independence on June 25, 1991, and in July they gained their independence, with the support of the German and European Communities, despite the intervention of the Yugoslav People's Army (YHO), on the basis of previous referenda. The rest of the six former Yugoslav states, Bosnia-Herzegovina and Macedonia, have gained their independence after the crisis. The rhetoric of Slobodan Milosevic, the President of Serbia (then President of Yugoslavia), was also influential as the crisis grew into a clash. In particular, the idea of building 'Great Serbia', free from elements outside the Serbs, increased suspicion, worry and anxiety over other nations. This was the beginning of a period in which the systematic massacres, human rights violations, and the loss of the lives of thousands of civilian soldiers, which lasted until the Dayton Treaty in 1995, when they were active in the active states and states in the region. Many United Nations Decisions, despite the bombardment done by the UN to stop peacekeeping efforts and massacres, deaths and massacres have occurred, especially in the majority of Bosniaks. With Kosovo gaining its independence in 2008, seven states emerged from the former Yugoslavia, Bosnia and Herzegovina, Slovenia, Croatia, Serbia, Montenegro, Macedonia and Kosovo. Today, the number of states in the Balkans is more than twice that of the cold war years.

3.2. The Impact of Developments in the Balkans After the Cold War on Greek-Turkish Foreign Policy

The transformation that started in the Balkans in the last days of the Cold War left Greece in the decision-making process. Turkish and Greek politics in Romania, Bulgaria and Albania, which have been relatively smoothly transformed, have not had very significant consequences, even with some differences. The former Yugoslavia crisis is a crisis in which both the Turkish-Greek foreign policy has been broken down and Greece has followed a different policy from the Western states. Macedonia, Kosovo and Bosnia-Herzegovina are more preferable in the management of Orthodox Serbs for Athens. Supported the Belgrade-based state, and even in times of crisis and even massacres, no support from the Belgrade government has been withdrawn. This policy, which has been reacted from time to time by the European Community and NATO, has made the Belgrade-Moscow and Athens lines clear. This line is quite different from the approach to Turkey and even in Western Europe due to the structure of the Orthodox-Christian. Because of the Catholic structure of Slovenia and Croatia, the independence process was supported by Germany and even before the decision of the EC to recognize it (Washington Post,1991). The most important element that needs to be explained and noted is the perception of threat to itself by the Turkish and Muslim population in the region, which is the most important point that Greece has been capturing since its foundation. Have the land and sea borders with Turkey, a dense population of Turks and Muslims living in Western Thrace in its inside, is effective in the development of this feeling surrounded. Moreover, the Turks and interested in Turkey in western Thrace, to be defended by Kosovo and Sandzak Türkeri'nin rights still Turkey, with Turkish rapprochement of Turkey in Macedonia, Islamic Conference at Organization (OIC) member of an Albanian and active in the Bosnia crisis in Turkey, Athens (Sönmezoğlu, 2012:290).

But just giving need the full support of Serbia to specify a policy against Turks and Muslims, Greece, especially in the eyes of the need to block inland and other states since the 1980s, it is analogous to the aggressive policy against Turkey exerted and is a continuation (Armaoğlu, 1998: 958) .

Turkey's attitude in this crisis, all said to be more rational. First of all, Turkey, many European state and perspectives of the Balkans is similar to the United States. Turkey and the US government has also argued, even if initially a loose federation with the territorial integrity of the former Yugoslavia. After the departure of Slovenia and Croatia, the rise of the Bosnia-Herzegovina conflict day and day has also resulted in the two states facing the Serbian tyranny (Prunk,2001). Bosnia and Herzegovina territorial integrity and independence of Macedonia, Turkey, the US and

the EC took a similar approach to other states, Greece is different from the support of Belgrade. In Macedonia, the name problem has been raised many times, and in a politically difficult situation Macedonia is known as 'the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia', thinking that from historical Macedonia it could demand land in the future (Keesing's Record of World Events,1992:38703-38704)

Turkey, in many states as well as Germany and the United States, "Macedonia was recognized as. In international organizations, the attitude of Greece was influential, and 'Eki Yugoslavia was accepted as Macedonian Republic'. (UN Documents,1993).

The Kosovo crisis, which reached settlement in the former Yugoslavia, is also a crisis of Turkish and Greek foreign policy in the Balkans. While Kosovo's independence process began in the 1990s, Milosevic's ruling adopted a law that ended the functioning of the Kosovo Assembly and the Executive Council, while the Kosovo Assembly was shaken by Albanian members' declaration of independence. Albanian members of the Kosovo Assembly have held a referendum on Kosovo's independence in September 1990, although the former Yugoslav government has not accepted it as 'illegal' (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1991 :38513) Despite the dense population of Albanians and the opposition of the Serbs, the declaration of independence declared was recognized only by Albania. Then the process is the continuation of conflicts and civilian deaths. (Keesing's Record of World events, 1991: 38513) The independence efforts of Kosovo Albanians and the actions of the Kosovo Liberation Army have become a threat to life and equality in Kosovo. On top of this, the United Nations received a Security Council Resolution 1244, which established a temporary self-government in Kosovo (UN Documents, 1999).

The process following this decision is to strengthen the Albanian government in Kosovo (UN documents,2007). As the UN Special Representative has repeatedly declared, Kosovo's independence is the most plausible solution that could not have been possible under Kosovo's rule and co-existence. (Turkish Foreign policy,2008) February 17, 2017 in Kosovo, Turkey's first Costa Rican-by on 18 February, the US, France and the UK and is recognized by the six found in the state. (White House archives,2008).

Germany on 20 February and Japan on March 18. (Japon Foreign Policy,2010) Greece, on the other hand, does not know Kosovo and is in the process of independence and supports Serbia as well as internationally (Political Developments in Kosova, Nation archives,2008) The independence of an autonomous unit, the independence of Kosovo, is an example to the north Cyprus. Another factor is that a Muslim Kosovo affiliated to Belgrade

is perceived as being an independent unit and making its own decision more negative than it is autonomous

In 1990, with emerging developments, Turkey and Greece until disputes, there are also regional cooperation. In 1992, the Black Sea Economic Cooperation Organization (BSEC) was the clearest example of this (BSEC Organization,1992). It is important to be a regional organization and to be able to recover conflicting states at the same time, at a time when conflicts are at stake. Although there are many disputes Turkey and Greece has gerçeğg described the emergence of the war. While the Azerbaijani and Armenian conflicts were going on at the BSEC, both states could sit in the oath within the organization. Only this shows the strength and power of regional organizations.

CONCLUSION

The years after the end of the Cold War have fueled conflicts and conflicts in many regions. The Balkans are also one of these regions. the entire territory of Greece, is a part of the territory of Turkey in this region. In addition, the Balkans, sometimes seen as areas of cooperation for themselves, have become centers of power struggles and war. The resulting conflicts were not only confined to the states of the region, but also the great powers of the period and the international organizations took their place in the struggle. The two neighboring states, which have many problems and perceived each other as threats, continued to be tense, especially in the years after the end of the Cold War, especially under the influence of unresolved problems. The biggest difference here is the effect of the changing international political system. In Yugoslavia, to which they have not been able to influence much before, the Cold War has abandoned the field of socialism and has entered a political struggle in the direction of differences of opinion. In the former Yugoslavia of Greece, Serbian politics was supported at the moment when the European Community and NATO were condemned, with the Muslim and Turkish antagonism in the foreground. Even after the Soviet Union, the period was the one with the greatest political support to Serbia. This is the reason behind the policy, curbing the desire of Turkey's potential is also aware of the strengthening of the hand.

Regional crises affect states and states' foreign policies. According to the closeness to the crises, especially the states, they can directly feel this effect on them. Although the Yugoslav crisis emerged as a result of a breakdown in the international political system, it later became an effective crime in the entire Balkan peninsula, even in Eastern Europe. This crisis has not contributed positively to the problems of Turkish-Greek relations, but the process has increased negativity and tension. Cyprus issue, the

territorial waters in the Aegean Sea, many disputes like the FIR Line and the continental shelf, arming the problems of the Aegean islands, adverse print and bring on the Western Thrace Turks, and also support the PKK terrorist organization of the biggest threats of the period for Turkey, has continued. developments in the international political system, these problems between Turkey and Greece, have taken possession of the Cold War era and the transition period. It can be said that almost all of it, with very small differences, even without the old tension, can only be resolved with the will of the two neighboring states if it is thought to continue.

REFERENCES

Armaoğlu, F. (1998). Yirminci Yüzyıl Siyasî Tarihi 1914-1995, İstanbul: Alkım Yayınevi

Europe Integration Foreign Affairs Federal Ministry Republic of Austria. (2008, February 28). Plassnik: "Letter on Kosovo's recognition signed". Retrieved December 21, 2011, from https://www.bmeia.gv.at/en/the-ministry/press/announcements/2008/plassnik-letter-on-kosovos-recognition-signed/

Janko, Prunk. (2001). Path to Slovene State, Public Relations and Media Office, Government of the Republic of the Slovenia. Retrieved April 17, 2011, from http://www.slovenija2001.gov.si/10years/path.

Keesing's Record of World Events: Volume 37 (1991), Ed. by. Roger East, 60 Year of Cambridge, Longman.

Keesing's Record of World Events: Volume 38 (1992), Ed. by. Roger East, 60 Year of Publication, Cambridge, Longman.

Kocaoglu, Mehmet (1997). "Kavalalı Mehmet Ali Pasa İsyanı (1831–1841) ve Sonuçları", Bilig, S.4, İstanbul, p. 62.

Ministère Des Affaires Étrangères Et Européennes. (2008, February 17). La France et le Kosovo: Proclamation d'indépendance du Kosovo. Retrieved from http://www.diplomatie.gouv.fr/fr/pays-zones-geo_833/balkans_1056/kosovo_650/francekosovo_4601/proclamation-independance-du-kosovo-18.02.08_59650.html

Ministry of Foreign Affairs of Japan. (2008, March 18). Statement by Foreign Minister Masahiko Koumura on the Recognition of the Republic of Kosovo. Retrieved November 11, 2017, from http://www.mofa.go.jp/announce/announce/2008/3/0318.html

Nations Archives. (2011, December 21). Political Developments in Kosovo. Retrieved from http://tna.europarchive.org/ 20080523130646/http://www.britischebotschaft.de/en/news/items/080218a.htm

North Atlantic Treaty Organization. (n.d.). Retrieved November 21, 2017, from https://www.nato.int

Oran, Baskın (2009). Türk Dış Politikası 1919-1980, İstanbul: İletişim Yayınevi.

Oxford Reference. (n.d.). Balkan Pact. Retrieved December 10, 2011, from http://www.oxfordreference.com/view/10.1093/oi/authority.20110803095443878

Republic of Turkey Ministry of Foreign Affairs. (2008, February 18). Sayın Bakanımızın Türkiye´nin Kosova´yı Tanıdığına Dair Açıklaması, 18 Şubat 2008. Retrieved December 21, 2011, from Republic of Turkey Ministry of Foreign Affairs Website: http://www.mfa.gov.tr/sayin-bakanimizin-turkiye_nin-kosova_yi-tanidigina-dair-aciklamasi_-18-subat-2008.tr.mfa

Sönmezoğlu, Faruk, (2006),II. Dünya Savaşı'ndan Günümüze Türk Dış Politikası, Der Yayınları, İstanbul.

Sönmezoğlu Faruk (2012), Uluslararası Politika ve Dış Politika Analizi, 5.Baskı, Der Yayınları, İstanbul.

Simpson, John H."Religion, Politics and War, Encyclopedia of Sociology, " Ed. Edgar F. Borgatta, Rhonda J.V. Montgomery, Volume 3, Second Edition, Gale Group, Seattle, s.2356-2364.

The Black Sea Economic Cooperation. (2011, October 10). Retrieved from http://www.bsec-organization.org/Pages/homepage.aspx

The George C. Marshall Foundation. (n.d.). History of The Marshall Plan. Retrieved November 21, 2017, from http://marshallfoundation.org/marshall/the-marshall-plan/history-marshall-plan/

United Nations Security Council. (1993, April 7). Resolution 817 (1993): Adopted by the Security Council at its 3196th meeting, on 7 April 1993. Retrieved December 24, 2011, from Security Council Report Website: http://www.securitycouncilreport.org/atf/cf/%7B65BFCF9B-6D27-4E9C-8CD3-CF6E4FF96FF9%7D/UNMembers%20SRES817.pdf

United Nations Security Council. (1999, June 10). Retrieved November 1, 2011, from Security Council Report Website: http://www.securitycouncilreport.org/atf/cf/%7B65BFCF9B-6D27-4E9C-8CD3-CF6E4FF96FF9%7D/kos%20SRES%201244.pdf

United Nations Security Council. (2007, March 26). Letter dated 26 March 2007 from the Secretary-General addressed to the President of the Security Council. Retrieved November 11, 2011, from http://www.securitycouncilreport.org/atf/cf/%7B65BFCF9B-6D27-4E9C-8CD3-CF6E4FF96FF9%7D/Kosovo%20S2007%20168.pdf

Washington Post,1991.

THE PROCESS OF BREAKING UP FORMER YUGOSLAVIA AND UNITED STATES [1]

Volkan TATAR[2]

ABSTRACT

The former Yugoslavia crisis is a crisis that has had quite serious consequences that began on the eve of the end of the Cold War. The Ottoman and Austro-Hungarian Empires, which were defeated at the end of World War I, have caused a power vacuum in the region. This power vacuum was filled by the Serbian-Croatian-Slovenian kingdom, which soon acquired the name Yugoslavia. During the latter period of the Ottoman Empire's declining power in the Balkans and during the period when the Austro-Hungarian Empire was active, the North West of Europe, a region experiencing ethnic and cultural conflicts, has not lost this feature in the newly established state. The following II. World War II has revealed the Yugoslav Leader Tito, who will probably survive the most stable periods of the former Yugoslavia. The successes demonstrated in the war against the Germans, the good care of the different balances in the Yugoslav administration and the success in the administration will bring the former Yugoslavia into an active role in world politics. The state has not only caught up in stability, but has also become one of the locomotives of the disintegration movement. But the days when the former Yugoslavia was peaceful were gradually deteriorated by the death of Tito in 1980, then the chronic economic crises and finally the influence of the disintegration of the East Block. The Balkan State, which has 6 federal units and 2 autonomous regions, is seen to have increased nationalism at the beginning of 1990s and that the communist parties have lost power. This means that the former Yugoslavia is now beginning to split. The federal units, which have the right to constitutionally self-determination, have declared their consecutive independence and have faced Serbia's unwilling attitude to this division. After this stage, the proletariat of independence and the desire for independence, and the oligarchy of administration, occupied the agenda of the conflict of those who want to continue the Yugoslavia, using the advantage of number superiority and Belgrade being the capital city. Moreover, due to the delicate and multicultural nature of the region, the great powers intervened in the events and crises, leading to the prolongation of the clash and the high level of civilian casualties. In this study, one of the most influential states in the international political system will be tried to explain the attitude of the United States in the former Yugoslavia crisis, the politics on the level of international organizations and the course of this policy.

Keywords: Former Yugoslavia, USA, United Nations, Conflict

1 This study was derived from an unpublished doctoral dissertation entitled "New States in the Former Yugoslavia: United Nations and the Great Powers" which was completed in the International Relations Doctorate Program of the Institute of Social Sciences, Istanbul University.

2 Assist. Prof. TC. İstanbul Arel University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, International Relations. volkantatar@arel.edu.tr.

INTRODUCTION

At the end of the 1980s, the Cold War, which spanned half a century, was the result of developments in the international political system. The end of the Cold War is the end of the perception that is valid for most of the 20th century. Firstly, the Eastern Bloc and the powerful force of the symbol of the Cold War, the Soviet Union of Socialist Republics (USSR), have been resolved. The estimates that the solution will not be limited within the USSR and that it will soon jump into other states, especially the former Yugoslavia, soon became real. While the mobility experienced as a result of the resolution has complicated the 1990s especially in terms of states, there has been much more disturbance in the states that have included ethnic complexity. After the Cold War, 15 of the USSR declared independence through the separation of six states from Yugoslavia. Apart from these states, Czechoslovakia has also experienced a distinction, the Czech Republic and Slovakia have emerged. In addition to declaring independence of federal structures by separation, some divisions have also emerged. Kosovo is now recognized by nearly 100 states as a division of Serbia's declaration of independence. Although acknowledged, Transdinyester declared independence from Moldova, Montenegro from Azerbaijan, Abkhazia and Ossetia from Georgia

1. Breaking Up The Former Yugoslavia

The Balkans are a region that has been called by struggles, occupations and struggles for independence throughout history. The Balkan peoples have a boiler that boils from the end of the 1800s as the intersection of 'East and West', 'Latin and Cyril', 'Christianity and Islam', 'Orthodox and Catholic', 'Ottoman and Austrian' became like that. The southern Slavs, relatively captivated for a short time in history, have provided both ideological unity and fate as a result of a unification under the leadership of Tito. By the end of the 1960s the effort to create the Yugo-Slav nation had left its place to the union of republics and 'nations' in the 1970s. Although this transformation is a necessity with internal and external causes during that period, the point that must be avoided is that fear always exists in the former Yugoslav State. The former Yugoslavia is a state established in the territories of the 'Great Albania', 'Great Croatia' and 'Great Serbia'. In addition, the plans for growth in neighboring states, which claim that one or a few nations of the former Yugoslavia have come from the same race / culture / origin, are always on this state. For example, in terms of ethnic closeness for Albania, the west of Kosovo and Macedonia has always been the center of the dream of 'Great Albania'. While trying to prove that the Macedonians are Bulgarians, Bulgaria has found many political movements in favor of breaking the

Macedonian lands as well as Macedonians from the former Yugoslavia and joining Bulgaria. Greece has similar wishes for Macedonia. The former Yugoslavia has a challenging geopolitical and geostrategic position

After Tito, although the federation of the federation of the state, the ideological feeding, and the emphasis on the dictatorship have been successful for some time, the unsuccessful aspects have become clear. In the 1990s when the economic downturn was experienced at the system level, economic nationalism became a thrilling issue. In fact, the former Yugoslavian economy, under the struggle to balance the budget with the support of the IMF in the recent period, has entered a vicious circle in a period when nationalism has increased and tension has been felt at the highest level. While unemployment and growing poverty feed nationalism, strikes have made life unbearable. Then 'Tito's nightmare' appeared; Milosevic is a leader who will disintegrate Yugoslav co-operation with national sentiments. The economic vicious cycle has now begun to 'feed' with the political vicious circle, and the Yugoslav harmony has gradually deteriorated. After this stage, the declaration of independence and the crisis that transcended the state brought the end of the former Yugoslavia. At the same time, it has resulted in the return of blood in the middle of Europe.

2. US Foreign Policy in Crisis Process

2.1. The Beginning of the Crisis and the US Attitude

The history of the emergence of the former Yugoslavia crisis is a time of confusion throughout the world, and as a result, the US will take its place in the history of the cold war. It is a time when the invasion of Kuwait by Iraq, the dissolution of the USSR and the emergence of new states, the break-ups in Europe (such as Czechoslovakia) and the unification (Germany example) The US did not initially have direct intervention in the Yugoslavia crisis, at least not as active as the Kuwait issue, feeling particularly obliged to do more in the future of the Gulf Crisis and the future of oil. It is necessary to take into consideration that the President of the United States has changed at the beginning and the continuation of the crisis. The first two years of the beginning of the crisis, Republican George H.W. Bush, then Democrat Bill Clinton is the President of the United States (White House,2011). This is the case under the US defense of the state integrity of the former Yugoslavia, especially through a republican tradition throughout 1991. In addition, George Bush maintained the "European crisis is Europe's issue" for a long time and looked at military intervention. NATO as a great power, not only within NATO (such as Turkey-Greece) is to reconcile the state could be affected by crisis and conflict situations that may come. Non-military, economic and diplomatic aspects are often

'limited' (USA President Documents,2011). But we should not mention here that the recognition of Bosnia-Herzegovina and the support of the US by the territorial integrity of George H.W. The development of the Bush era. Bill Clinton, who began the referendum in January 1993, was a rival to G. H. W. Bush at a time when the former Yugoslavia crisis had reached disturbing dimensions all over the world, human rights abuses and ethnic cleansing, and this inhumane situation was also used in the election work (Kenar,2001: 488) He has a more active policy than George Bush, who is an auctioneer, and has not hesitated to use NATO's military strength when necessary. Especially since the Gulf War was over, George H.W. He could have been more active in military measures than Bush. It should be noted that the intense oppression of the Organization of the Islamic Conference (OIC) has been increasingly felt over the United States. Especially after the Srebrenica and Bihac massacres in Bosnia and Herzegovina, the OIC has put pressure on the US with the power (US Presidents Reports,1994).

The attitude of the United States to the former Yugoslavia at the beginning of the crisis is the continuation of the state. He saw developments in the direction of independence and in May 1991 Slovenia declared 'will hostile' the desire to abandon the federation and, if necessary, also threatened Slovenia to 'freeze its foreign accounts and hold Slovenia responsible for Yugoslavia's foreign External debt (Kenar,485). That their problems with Serbia and Milosevic would not mean that they would legitimize Slovenia's independence.

Foreign Minister James Baker visited the Yugoslavia on July 21, 1991, at the outset of the crisis, and met with several senior leaders, including the leaders of the six republics, which in particular formed Yugoslavia. Baker added that they would not recognize the United States, Slovenia and Croatia as independent countries, that they would benefit from their continued presence in Yugoslavia with a loose structuring, and even that they would take the tragic outcome of Yugoslavia to an inextricable stage (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1992, :38275) Among the lines of Baker's speech was the message that 'the US might take an attitude to prevent international recognition'. The United States Ministry of Foreign Affairs said in a statement on July 28 that 'Belgrade should unite in Yugoslavia and create a peaceful solution without ignoring national demands'. Keesing's Record of World Events, 1992, :38275)

In late July 1991 (July 30-31, 1991), US President George Bush and Soviet Leader Mikhail Gorbachev made a call in Moscow for the START Treaties, peace talks for Yugoslavia and constructive dialogue. (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1992:38321). It may be thought that the US has taken this attitude because it is withdrawn from the turmoil that might come after the declaration of independence. In addition, the United States

has not hid its discomfort from attempts to recognize that Germany is engaged in Slovenia and Croatia, and that it also causes the EC's worrying about this issue.

The recognition of Slovenia and Croatia, first by Germany and then by the EC at the end of 1991 brought some changes in the US policy for the former Yugoslavia. It is difficult for Bosnia and Herzegovina, which is struggling strategically between Croatia and Serbia, to have a self-protection, which is difficult to keep up with the ethnic structure it hosts. The rise of the former Yugoslavia has driven the US actively since the beginning of 1992 to defend the territorial integrity of Bosnia and Herzegovina. On 10 January 1992, the United States sent a note to Serbia, warning that "actions against Bosnia and Herzegovina's territorial integrity could not be accepted" (Burg - Shoup,1999: 99) Also, on January 27, 1992, during the visit of former Yugoslav President Borisav Jovic to Washington, US Assistant Secretary of State Lawrence Eagleburger stated that the division of Bosnia and Herzegovina was unquestionably and unacceptably for the United States (New York Times,1995; Washington Post,1995; Independent,1995; Guardian ,1995 cited as Burg – Shoup,1999:100).A few weeks later, Izetbegovic visited Washington and met with L. Eagleburger, who explained many times that Bosnia and Herzegovina supports the territorial integrity (New York Times,1995, Washington Post,1995; Independent,1995; Guardian,1995; cited as Burg – Shoup,100). The process of clarification of the former Yugoslavia has been in the process, and the US is already in the process of defending the Bosnia-Herzegovina unit. 1992 February for the US administration is now the date when the position on the Bosnia and Herzegovina issue should be clarified. Especially on the former Yugoslavia, the fact that it had to change its starting position and Bosnia and Herzegovina's move towards a crucible led to the Bush administration's handling of the situation in detail. It is the increasing tendency towards 'independence' in the Lisbon Conference, where the US administration is facing all sides of the Bosnia-Herzegovina issue. Yugoslav Ambassador W. Zimmermann has pointed out the obstacles of insisting on recognition and said that if the insistence of Bosnia-Herzegovina is solved by Milosevic and the "Serb-Croat" union on the axis, the hopes of the EC for peace will diminish (New York Times,1995, Washington Post,1995; Independent,1995; Guardian,1995; cited as Burg – Shoup,1999:100). On the day Bosnia and Herzegovina announced its independence, it also stated that domestic violence would begin. The United States has called for the referendum to be put into motion, which is mentioned in the Badinter Commission Report. At this point, as the Serbian extremists began to see the process provoking, the US is now making an effort to recognize Bosnia and Herzegovina. (New York Times,1995, Washington Post,1995; Independent,1995; Guardian,1995; cited as Burg – Shoup,1999:100). Upon

the appearance of the referendum as expected, US Secretary of State James Baker made a call for the recognition of Bosnia-Herzegovina in his letter dated 4 March 1992 sent to the EC (Washington Post,1995 cited as Burg – Shoup,1999:100). The underlying fear of this sudden collapse is that the delay of Bosnia's independence will encourage Serbian extremism, as it has been said many times in the media. Moreover, the politics of other states could not be predicted clearly, so they could cause the Bosniaks to increase their oppression over them. On March 10, Baker and the EC Foreign Ministers met in Brussels, and a compromise was reached in the joint statement.

The United States will recognize Slovenia and Croatia, while the decision on the new Yugoslavia (Serbia-Montenegro) will continue in the area of common policymaking. In addition, while emphasizing the state's territorial integrity and respect for minority rights, After Bosnia and Herzegovina has made the necessary constitutional arrangements, it has reached a consensus that it should not be delayed to recognize its present borders (Washington Post,1995 cited as Burg-Shoup,100). The news circulating in the media is that the recognition of Bosnia-Herzegovina will take place until April 6th, in case they resolve the issues that led to the disagreement between the parties. (Washington Post,1995 cited as Burg – Shoup,1999:100). The attitude of the United States is that Bosnia and Herzegovina, whose former Yugoslavia has ended its integration with Slovenia and Croatia, has the right to a constitutional separation, is an entirely independent state in the federation. Previously, the United States, which did not go so far as to make it clear**.** (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1991:38374.) that it would not allow the borders to change with guns, and supported only by embargoing independence, supported Slovenia, Croatia and Bosnia and Herzegovina in April 1992.

2.2. The Crisis Conversion to War in Bosnia and Herzegovina and Croatia

After recognizing the three states that separated from the former Yugoslavia, the United States is now dealing with the resolution of conflicts that began in Bosnia. But this effort is not in the form of mobilization of NATO as in Kuwait, but in the form of collective participation and the making of international organizations, including all parties, as the solution authority. The method that its usage is firstly the interview and then the embargo. It is also the politics of the time to deploy peacekeeping troops to certain places and to provide food aid and communication. The embargo is also a matter to be considered in this issue and in this context. Embargo for resolving conflicts, as in the first UN Security Council resolution 713, (UN Documents,1991) means covering all former Yugoslavia is a great advantage

for Serbia, and YHO is a great advantage for Serbia in its central position. For Bosnia-Herzegovina and Croatia, where military power and materials are limited, spare parts production and air force are not, it is dangerous. For Serbia, when it disintegrated, the gate of Europe's fourth largest army, (Mujezinovic,2007) the YHO, was opened to attack only those states with military power at the police force level. The process has confirmed this observation, and it is clear that those who see the most harm are Bosniaks, which are the subject of many ethnic cleansing decisions in the future.

With the change of the US President in 1993, the United States emerged as a change in Bosnia and Herzegovina politics. The new president, Bill Clinton, is more active than George Bush and has created policies to resolve the problem, clearly showing his support to the Bosniak side. We can say that Bosnia-Herzegovina is under siege in this period, the UN's aid does not reach, and the overreaction of the Islamic world has shaped the policies of Clinton. It can also be argued that moral causes have come to the fore as the United States has been disturbed by the ongoing debate on (İbrahimi,2010) civilian casualties and the UN's embargo decision. Clinton explained that UN assistance would be delivered from air to non-combat aircraft, in areas where land aids are inadequate and in disarray (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1993: 39327)

In addition to its aid, the United States has also supported the UN Security Council with resolutions on extending and extending the mandate of the UN Peace and Conservation Force. It should be noted that the period from the beginning of the crisis until 1994 is the period when the United States is politically active and in the military sense it is backward. He has also been actively involved in Peace Plans (Secure Regions, Vance-Owen). This interest is not just the chairman's level. The US State Department condemned what was done in the US, saying that Bosnian Serbs attacked Bosnians 'cruelty' and said 'since Nazi's time there has not been such persecution in Europe' (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1993: 39278). The US State Department also noted many times that Sarajevo should not pass the hands of the Serbs (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1993: 39278). At a NATO meeting in Brussels on August 2, 1993, Clinton threatened the new Yugoslavia, saying, "We do not believe that the Allies will allow Sarajevo to fall or die there on hunger ... We believe a common solution will be found.", Bosnian Serbs and supporters intimidate the new Yugoslavia. Keesing's Record of World Events, 1993:39604).Reactions from Russia came from Vitaly Churkin, Boris Yeltsin's special representative, who responded to Clinton's statements by saying, "Very bad timing before talks." The only country in which the Clinton administration has had its share of views is not Russia. Especially, the request to remove arms embargo from Bosnia-Herzegovina is not accepted by many European countries, especially

Britain and France Keesing's Record of World Events, 1993, :39696). In the same way, the authority to use air power against Serbian attacks has become another untenable thought. Keesing's Record of World Events, 1993: 39604)

In a television interview on 18 November 1993, President Clinton explained that the removal of the arms embargo for Bosnia and Herzegovina was not supported by many countries of the European Union, particularly Britain and France, and that the use of air power against Serbian targets was not supported., (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1993:.39713-39714.) The end of which the UN has declared to be prohibited from flying, with the UN mandate, NATO has organized air attacks on Serbian targets.

We see that the US is trying to solve the problem with the notion of federation, which is a concept that is quite familiar with its inner self. In February 1994, the US President, who invited Bosnian Muslim and Bosnian Croat leaders to Washington, has succeeded in signing the Bosniak-Croat Federation of both leaders. This situation, which is also praised by the UN, has now been perceived as the missing part of Serbia being put on the table. Two incidents occurred in 1995, which caused the US to observe its policy. The first is the dropping of US planes by the Serbs, and the second is the killing of three US troops. At the end of August 1995, with the UN mandate, NATO began bombing Bosnian Serb targets and the Dayton process spontaneously started (UN Documents,1993).

2.3 Dayton Treaty and The United States

While preparing the Dayton zone, the Geneva talks, which were signed on 8 September 1995 with the Contact Group and for the first time after a long period of time, were held under the auspices of US Vice President Holbrooke. (Keesing's Record of World Events, 1995: 40735.)At this meeting where many subjects had been solved before Dayton, the USA was also felt together with the Contact Group. While the US is the most active country in the Dayton-based Contact Group, the most active member is Holbrooke, US Vice President. Also in the US over the next 10 years from Dayton, NATO itself should be effective as well as Europe, Russia, the states such as Turkey and Japan has been supportive policies in Bosnia and Herzegovina's political issues (United State Enstitute of Peace, Unfinished Business in Bosnia and Herzegovina,2009).

The United States, Bosnia and Herzegovina, the World Bank and the organization of the reconstruction of the refugees to return to the country has found support. (United State Enstitute of Peace, Unfinished Business in Bosnia and Herzegovina,2009).The US has been more cautious in Macedonia. Macedonia, which declared its independence in 1991, remained in a difficult situation in many areas. The United States and the EU have been

waiting quite a bit for recognition of Greece, due to its Greek democracy. At the same time, Slovenia, Croatia and Bosnia and Herzegovina, which declared their independence in the same period, also had to wait a year more to become a member of the UN. (UN Documentation,1993).

The United States recognized Macedonia on 8 February 1994. (US Foreign Policy,2010) Slovenia, Croatia and Bosnia and Herzegovina were recognized by the definition of Bosnia-Herzegovina in April 1991, while Macedonia, which had relatively easy independence, was quite late. The date of diplomatic relations with Macedonia is September 13,1995 (US Foreign Policy,2010). After the US gained the independence of the four states in the former Yugoslavia, a policy follow-up to support Kosovo (just like the federal states) has been striking. Kosovo's independence manifesto when it first came to independence in the former Yugoslavia had not attracted any attention other than Albania. The US interest in Kosovo is as low as the Dayton Treaty. Even Dayton is not mentioned in Kosovo. After the Dayton Accord, Kosovan Albanians increased the number of clashes and made the crisis an international problem, attracting the interest of the US and the EU. Milosevic's assault on the Serbian targets was harsh, and in 1998 he attacked the Kosovo Liberation Army, causing heavy civilian casualties. After almost half of Kosovo Albanians have fallen into refugee status, the United States has provided NATO with a military sense of meaning. It is noteworthy that the United States has pioneered many resolutions in the UN Security Council (UN Documentation,1998).

At the beginning of the 2000s, the tragedy of humanity, especially in Kosovo, has come before the International Relations Committee of the House of Representatives many times. The dramatic and degraded socio-economic situation of Kosovo Albanian refugees is a major concern of the US Congress. US Representative Assembly, International Relations Committee Documents,2010) However, it should be noted that other issues underlined in the Representative Assembly are that Kosovo Serbs are in danger of life because of the UCK attacks and Kosovo's law regime has underlying topics and issues. (US Representative Assembly, International Relations Committee Documents,2010).

The United States has undergone a lot of criticism during Kosovo's independence process and has been directly involved in the UN inquiries. The United States does not compare Kosovo to other autonomous regions that declare their independence and does not constitute a precedent (US Foreign Policy,2010). The view that many other countries (Germany, France, UK) also participates in is similar in the United States: 'the Kosi issue is sui generis' and, unlike the worries, it will not be a precedent (Un documents,2010) According to the US State Department, the process has spontaneously developed and concluded. Moreover, as much as the role of

the United States, other members of the UN Security Council have a view to gaining Kosovo's independence. No. 1244, referred to herein. Indeed, in the UN General Assembly, Resolution No. 1244 was only abstained from the PRC (Un documents,2010) In addition, the US has taken an active role in Kosovo as a member of the 'Contact Group' (US foreign Policy,2010).

At the UN Security Council meeting held on February 18, 2008, the US delegation regarded Kosovo's independence as 'the height of the long, unequaled distribution of Yugoslavia, full of conflicts, not compromise'. In response to the ethnic cleansing of the Milosevic government in the 1990s, the movement of NATO was described and described as a 'humanitarian concept (UN Documents,2010). This is very important because it reflects the US's view of Kosovo. The reality they accept is that 'Kosovo (Albanians) is against Serbian sovereignty'. US officials believe that Kosovo Albanians do not see Serbia as the sovereign state, and in response, Serbs think they have punished themselves with ethnic cleansing (Un documents,2010). Furthermore, it has been stated that the provisional resolution, which was adopted by the UN Resolution 1244, was repeatedly underlined by UN representatives that it was not possible to achieve a permanent solution within a single state. In this process, Belgrade and Pristina are in constant negotiations, but they cannot reach the end. It is stated that the process includes the EU, USA and Russia, and that despite all the efforts of the Troika, it has not come to a conclusion. Martti Ahtisaari, who heads the peace talks on behalf of the UN Secretary-General, said that he "recommended independence at a time, under the auspices of the UN". (UN Documents,2010).Ahtisaari, the UN Security Council's Finnish representative, explained that 'the UN cannot develop further in its mission in Kosovo and that the UN is tired, the alienation of Kosovo from Serbia is irreversible, it can create an independent Kosovo institutions' (UN documents,2010). The United States regards Kosovo's declaration of independence as a 'legitimate, logical and legal response' and also perceives it as a solution consistent with UN Security Council Resolution 1244. (UN Documents,2010).

It also sees Kosovo's independence as almost universally accepted by all EU governments as a 'irresistible movement' for the United States. Milosevic's print and ethnic cleansing reflects the United States' Kosovo policy, which started the UN process, followed by Resolution 1244, all of which distinguishes Kosovo from the regions where other conflicts of the world are experiencing. (UN Documents,2010). As a result of UN Resolution 1244 of the UN General Assembly in Kosovo, in the process of UNMIK construction, Serbia has repeatedly opposed the process of determining Kosovo's final status. Recognizing that the past time has served Kosovo's progress towards independence, US officials rejected the proposal by

Serbian Prime Minister Zoran Djindjic to start negotiations in 2003, saying, "The autonomous region (Kosovo) has the necessary progress to fulfill the UN requirements, the process has spread over time (Kenar,2001:249) On February 17, 2008, Kosovo, which declared its independence on February 17, 2008, was one of the countries that gave great support and recognized the United States. (US Presidents Reports,2008).

CONCLUSION

The former Yugoslavia crisis has been a very serious test for the US, one of the most active states in the international political system. The period, as a result of the turmoil and division resulting from the transformation of the political system, and the great threat posed by regional and global conflicts, on the other hand, has made the United States quite politically challenging. The effective position in international organizations has revealed the consequence that US policies not only bind the state but also force the decision mechanisms of the organizations.

The US has defended the territorial integrity of the former Yugoslavia, albeit loosely at the beginning of the former Yugoslavia crisis, and has not hesitated to express it clearly. Especially in the beginning of Germany's crisis, great support for the independence of Slovenia and Croatia has made the United States very uncomfortable because of its power in the EU and NATO. The territorial integrity of Bosnia and Herzegovina has been defended against the Serbia on the independence of Slovenia and Croatia and the unraveling of the irreversible fragmentation of the former Yugoslavia. After this process, the US administration was blamed for the support of the United States in the Bosnia-Herzegovina conflict and the openness of the UN resolutions, and the increasing casualties of civilian casualties. This has resulted in re-circulation of some decisions and practices. At this point, Russia's support for the Serbian administration has confronted two tense superpowers in the Balkans. But criticizing the Serbian policy directly after this stage, and the US government are in talks with the necessary capital to take all the necessary measures, in Turkey and in the Balkans has also pursued policies close. Dayton supported Bosnia and Herzegovina in the process, and Macedonia was in favor of the name problem. Here, too, the idea of dissociation with NATO allies and Greece. (Hurriyet Newspaper,2009). The Kosovo issue is a very challenging test for the United States, as it is in many states. The desire for independence of an autonomous unit, the impossibility of coexistence of Serbs and Kosovan Albanians, and in spite clear opposition of many states; US government policy and international organizations like the UN have supported this process. It is even one of the first states to recognize Kosovo.

REFERENCES

Burg, Steven L. Shoup, Paul S. (1999). The War In Bosnia

Herzegovina: Ethnic Conflict and International Intervention, New

York, M.E. Sharpe Inc,

Guardian (14 August 1995),

Huriyet Newspaper Official Website (Online),http:/www.hurriyet.com, 2009

İbrahimi, Halil ABD'nin Balkan Politikası: Bosna-Hersek Örneği, translated by Gürkan Biçen (Online), http://www.yakindoguhaber.com/haber_detay.php?haber_id=2666, 21 June 2010.

Independent (11 August1995),

Kenar, Nesrin. (2001).Yugoslavya Sorununun Ulusal ve Uluslararası Boyutu, Ankara, Palme Publishing.

Keesing's Record of World Events, (1991) Volume 37.

Keesing's Record of World Events, (1992) Volume 38 .

Keesing's Record of World Events, (1993)Volume 39.

Keesing's Record of World Events, (1995) Volume 41 .

Mujezinoviç,Mirzet "Bir Zamanlar Yugoslavya Diye Bir Ülke Vardı", Star Newspaper, 31 December 2007.

New York Times, (9 August 1995, 10 August 1995),

New York Times (16 August 1995)

US Presidents Reports (Online), http://www.whitehouse.gov/about/presidents, 10 November 2011.

UN Documents, UN security Counsil S/RES/713 (1991) Embargo Decision 25.09.1991,(Online), http://www.un.org/Docs/scres/1991/scres91.htm). 10 June2010.

UN Documents, S/RES/836 (1993), (Online) http://www.un.org/Docs/scres/1993/scres93.htm, 10.06.2010,

United State Enstitute of Peace, Unfinished Business in Bosnia and Herzegovina: What is to be done, Peace Brief by Kurt Bassuener and James Lyon, May 2009 (Online), http://www.usip.org/node/3887/. ,18 November 2010.

UN Documentation, us Security Counsil S/RES/817 (1993)numbered decision , (online)http://www.un.org/Docs/scres/1993/scres93.htm, 24 December 2010.

US Foreign Policy , (online) http://www.state.gov/r/pa/ei/bgn/26759.htm. ,24 December 2010.

UN Documentation, UN Security Counsil BM 1998 Decisions, (Online) http://www.un.org/Docs/scres/1998/scres98.htm, 24 December 2010.

UN Documentation, Un Security Council S/PV.5839 Numbered Meeting, 18 February 2010 , (Online) http://www.securitycouncilreport.org/atf/cf/%7B65BFCF9 B-6D27-4E9C-8CD3-CF6E4FF96FF9%7D/Kos%20S%20PV%205839.pdf, s.19, 26 December 2010.

UN Documents, S/RES/1244 (1999), (Online) http://www.un.org/Docs/scres/1999/sc99.htm, 23 December 2010.

US Foreign Policy Official Website (Online) http://www.state.gov/r/pa/ei/bgn/100931.htm, 24 December 2010.

Us Presidents Reports (Online) http://www.gpo.gov/fdsys/pkg/WCPD-2008-02-25/pdf/WCPD-2008-02-25-Pg236-2.pdfABD, 20 January 2011,

US Representative Assembly, International Relations Committee Documents,2010) Improvements in Balkans 11 April- 19 July2000, Series: 106-169 (Online) http://www.gpo.gov/fdsys/pkg/CHRG-106hhrg68286/pdf/CHRG-106hhrg68286.pdf, 24 December 2010.

US Foreign Policy Website (Online) http://www.state.gov/r/pa/ei/bgn/100931.htm, 24 December 2010.

http://www.hurriyet.com.tr/dunya/abd-makedonyayi-tanidi-270400

Washington Post (9 August 1995),

Washington Post (16 August1995),

IRAQI KURDS AND THEIR RELATIONS WITH EUROPE

Seven ERDOĞAN[1]

ABSTRACT

Middle East has had an undeniable role in the international politics for a long time. Since the demise of the Ottoman power, the tension has never calmed down in the region. Both external and regional players have been paying effort in order to design the region in a way serving their interests more. Kurds have been living in the Middle East for a long time. They have been mostly living in the territories of Turkey, Syria, Iraq and Iran. Iraqi Kurds have an enormous autonomy in the northern part of the country. Kurdistan Regional Government in Iraq has been also frequently labelled as a de facto state or a state-like entity. This study elaborates on the relations between Europe and Iraqi Kurds. In this scope, in the first part of the study, the history of the Kurds in the Middle East is analysed with a special emphasis over their experiences in Iraq. At the second part of the study, the dynamics of the relations between Europe and Iraqi Kurds are provided. The study concludes that there has been a great discrepancy between two parties in terms of their expected future shape of Iraq.

Keywords: European Union, Iraq, Iraqi Kurds, Kurdistan Regional Government

INTRODUCTION

The division of the Middle East into separate states after the World War I was not reflecting the realities of the region. It was a geographical or arbitrary one ignoring the ethnic, linguistic, and religious differences among the people of the region. This played a vital role in the emergence of the current unrest in the region. Currently, the Middle East has been one of the turbulent regions in the world and it has been experiencing a great transformation process, also known as the Arab Spring. It is probable that the current developments in the region will have a great effect on the future shape of the region. Therefore, the international community has been following the developments in the region with a great concern. The process of change in the Middle East will also have an effect on the fate of the Kurdish groups in the region. Despite the emergence of new challenges such as the Islamic State of Iraq and the Levant (Da'esh) and flow of refugees or Syrian crisis; the Kurds' claims for independence has been keeping its salience as one of the long-lasting problems of the region.

1 Dr. Assistant Professor, Recep Tayyip Erdogan University, Department of International Relations.

Kurds are one of the largest ethnic groups, approximately 30 million, devoid of their own nation state in the world of nation states. The Kurds have been mostly living in the territories of Turkey, Syria, Iraq and Iran. That means the Kurds are currently divided in line with the countries where they are residing. This makes talking about the Kurds as a unified group sharing the same objectives and perspectives impossible. Kurds differs in terms of factors such as the sects of religion and dialect of language (Waisy, 2015: 248). These internal divisions made their exploitation by the external powers having an interest in shaping the Middle East possible. Due to the calculations basing on the changing power distribution in the region, the support of outside powers for the Kurds has been always inconsistent. Among the Kurdish groups living in different countries, Iraqi Kurds take frequent academic attention due to their political influence in Iraq and their experience of the self-rule in their autonomous region (Logan, 2009: 162).

This study aims to provide an account of the relations between Europe (mainly European Union and its member states) and Iraqi Kurds by taking into account the historical context. The study composes of two parts. The first part deals with the history of the Kurds in the Middle East with a clear emphasis over their experiences as part of Iraq. The second part examines the relations between the Europeans and Iraqi Kurds. The study concludes that there has been a great discrepancy between two parties in terms of their expected future shape of Iraq.

1. Iraqi Kurds and Kurdistan Regional Government

Kurds have been living in the Middle East for a long time. Kurds lived under the authority of Ottoman and Persian states for centuries by enjoying a relative degree of local autonomy. In the historical conflict between these two states, majority of the Kurds supported the former and they lived under the Turks' authority for centuries. In return for this support, the Kurds were given autonomy in the territories seen as the historical homeland by the Ottoman rulers.

Kurdish elites started to have nationalistic ideas in its modern sense around 1880s. The exclusion of these elites from the key positions in state administration after Tanzimat (Reform) era played a key role in the changing attitudes of the Kurdish elites towards the state and the main objective of the Kurdish elites became to ensure the unification of the Kurds living under Ottoman and Persian rules (Dalar, 2016: 19). In response to the changing attitudes of the Kurdish elites, the Ottoman rulers took steps for limiting to the Kurds' autonomy and Kurds started to organize revolts against the Ottoman state.

With the collapse of the Ottoman Empire at the end of World War I, the Kurds gained the first opportunity to establish an independent state.

The fourteen principles declared by the American President Woodrow Wilson, especially the one related to the right of all ethnic groups for self-determination, created high expectations among all the ethnic communities devoid of their own state after the World War I, including the Kurds dreaming for the statehood (Dalar, 2016: 33). In this setting, Kurds had many hopes related to the self-determination and having their own nation state. However, the victory of Turks in the War of Independence forced the Europeans to reconsider the conditions of the Sevres Treaty and to re-make their calculations related to the balance of power in the Middle East.

There were no references to a Kurdish state in the Lausanne Treaty which replaced the previous Serves Treaty in 1923 (Fonk, 2016: 2-3). As a result of this treaty, several nation states were formed on the territories previously ruled by the Ottomans and the territory populated by the Kurds was divided into four parts under the autonomy of four different states. These newly founded states tried to construct themselves as nation states by means of the policies of centralization, homogenization and control. This led a dramatic change in the conditions of the Kurds. In this new setting, the Kurds had demands for heterogeneity, multi-ethnicity and multi-religiosity. These demands brought them to a clash with the central governments approaching the Kurds as a threat for the national security, territorial integrity and state sovereignty (Salih, 2005: 83-84). These states applied different strategies in order to cope with problems stemming from the ethnically conscious Kurdish minorities, such as assimilation, denial and forced migration (Eliassi, 2016: 1404-1405).

The complex power calculations among the big powers prevented the fulfilment of the Kurds' dream for self-determination despite the promises given to the Kurds about the statehood during the World War I. The international support for the Kurd's self-determination diminished with the conclusion of the treaties after the World War I. With these treaties, a new Middle East was formed by the winning powers of the World War I and a British mandate was formed in Iraq (Logan, 2009: 164). This did not put an end to the Kurdish dreams for autonomy or independence. The Kurds living under the rule of different states in the Middle East have never been fond of the status-quo in the region.

The nationalism among Iraqi Kurds appeared firstly in 1930s. The existence of the Kurds was recognized in Iraq with the provisional constitution of 1958 and an autonomous Kurdish region was formally established in 1974 (Salih, 2005: 84). As a result of the tense relations between Iraqi Kurds and the central government in Baghdad, especially between 1960 and 1980, nationalism has strengthened among the Iraqi Kurds. During the Saddam rule, Iraqi Kurds were subjected to violent attacks under the name of Anfal Campaign in 1988 due to their support to

the Iranian side in the Iraq-Iran War. It is estimated that 50.000 to 100.000 Iraqi Kurds were killed by the Iraqi military forces in this Campaign. Besides, Saddam also used chemical weapons against the Kurds in Halabja (Fonk, 2016: 4-5). With this act, Saddam also aimed to take the revenge from the Iraqi Kurds (Demir, 2014: 117). International community stayed mostly silent against these massacres targeting the Iraqi Kurds (Rubin, 2008).

The invasion of Kuwait by Saddam in 1991 became a real turning point for the Kurds living in Iraq. Saddam was forced to withdraw by a US led international alliance. Despite the on-going tension between Iraqi Kurds and central government since the independence of Iraq, the Kurds in Iraq has managed to enhance their area of freedom in northern Iraq incrementally.

A no-fly zone was established in the northern Iraq by the American forces, the Kurds were given the control of the territory. The entrance of Saddam forces to the northern part of Iraq was denied. As a result, Iraqi Kurds escaped from a possible Baathist campaign aiming their forceful reintegration to the central government. In addition, the government withdrew its administrative units from the region and Kurds established their self-governance in the region (Kirmanj, 2013: 145). After this de facto autonomy, all the institutions linked to the central government closed down in the northern Iraq. The Kurdistan Regional Government (KRG) has started to have state-like institutions and perform state-like actions. The KRG adopted a national anthem, printed stamps, built of monuments, memorial sculptures, and museums. Besides, the KRG had its own court, parliament and security forces. Furthermore, the KRG became responsible for border controls with Turkey, Syria and Iran (Phillips, 2004: 10). Therefore, it is possible to talk about the existence of a de-facto independent Kurdish state in the northern Iraq since 1992. In a nutshell, an autonomous Kurdistan region in the northern Iraq would be impossible, if Saddam Hussein had not invaded Kuwait in 1991 and pressed to withdraw by an international alliance leaded by the US forces. (Voller, 2012: 138).

The KRG was established in 1992, but it gained legality only with the 2005 Iraqi Constitution. The Kurdish autonomous region composes of the provinces of Arbil (the capital city of the KRG), Dohuk and Sulaimaniya. The Kurdistan Democratic Party (KDP), led by Masoud Barzani, and the Patriotic Union of Kurdistan (PUK), led by Jalal Talabani, have been the two primary political actors in the region from the very beginning. After the first elections in 1992, these parties decided to share the rule in northern Iraq. Yet, a civil war erupted between these two Kurdish groups in the mid-1990s. The unrest between two Kurdish parties led to the internationalization of the Kurdish issue. Since, both parties looked outside for allies. The KDP

was supported by Turkey and Iraq, the PUK was aligned itself with Iran. France was the first power mediating between the parties. Then, the US took this role (Kirmanj, 2013: 151). Thanks to the US mediation efforts, the civil war between these two groups ended by 1998. After this civil war, there had been two administrations in the region which have seen itself as the only representative of the KRG till the achievement of the unification in 2006 basing on a power distribution between the these two actors with the conclusion of Kurdistan Regional Government Unification Agreement. The end of this family quarrel paved the way for the social, economic and cultural rebirth of the region (Demir, 2014: 132, 141, 148.). The Kurds constitutes roughly 20 percent of the population in Iraq. Kurds living under the KRG rule are more united in comparison to the Kurds living in the neighbouring countries (Rogg and Rimscha, 2007: 825).

Operation Desert Fox was conducted in 1998 against the Saddam rule under the leadership of the US backed by the United Kingdom in order to ensure the compliance of Iraq with weapon inspections foreseen by the United Nations. During the 2003 intervention and the operation known as "Iraqi Freedom Operation", Iraqi Kurds sided with the US forces and fought against the Saddam forces. With the fall of Saddam, the autonomy of the Kurds in the northern Iraq further strengthened. Since, the US opted to control the area by means of US-friendly partners in the region. This increased the legality of the KRG in the eyes of Western powers. In addition, with the end of Baath regime and Saddam Hussein, the Iraqi Kurds saved from the pressures coming from the regime forces and they hoped to achieve independence in return for their support to the US. Despite the on-going civil war and sectarian conflict in Iraq since the American invasion of 2003, the KRG has managed to keep itself relatively secure and stable. The year of 2003 has been frequently accepted as a real turning point for the Iraqi Kurds because the de facto autonomy gained in 1992 was transformed into a legal autonomy in that year and this was also recognized by the international community. Many Iraqi Kurds see this moment as a step that brings them near to statehood (Council on Foreign Relations).

The KRG has been quiet successful in conducting paradiplomacy[2]. It has a department of foreign relations acting as a foreign ministry. It also has diplomatic missions abroad which is conducting relations with the relevant countries and defending the rights of Kurdish minorities in the country of concern. These diplomatic missions range from consulates to economic or trade offices. (El-Dessouki, 2012: 12). In addition to these, Iraqi Kurds can also participate to the international conferences and other events, as well as they can sign international agreements and participate in international

2 The term paradiplomacy is used in order to refer to the international activities of the sub-state actors or regions.

projects. In a nutshell, Iraqi Kurds have been taking advantage of all the rights recognized themselves in the Iraqi Constitution, especially in the field of foreign policy. Since, Article 121/4 of the Iraqi Constitution states that "regions can establish offices in Iraqi embassies to promote cultural, social, and developmental affairs". In addition, KRG offices generally share the same building with the Iraq embassies and there is not a KRG diplomatic mission in a country devoid of an Iraqi embassy. Iraqi Kurds have been doing this not only for the sake of gaining their independence at the right timing of the history, but also for promoting Kurdish point of view and getting support for their positions at the international level. The increasing interest for the region at the international arena, peaceful dialogues with the neighbouring countries and increasing foreign investments to the region are all thought as the successes of the paradiplomacy conducted by the KRG. (Mohammed and Owtram, 2004: 71, 74, 76, 78).

Trade is the main economic activity of the KRG. There is not precise information about the trade figures of the region. By looking at the Iraq's trade with the European countries, we can come to the conclusion of the fact that nearly 99 % of the European Union's (EU) imports from the country are mineral fuels and its variants. It is more probable that the oil rich KRG region of Iraq has an important share in this trade (European Commission Directorate General for Trade Website).

The tension between Iraqi Kurds and central government in Iraq have not also calmed down in the post-US intervention Iraq. In addition to the control of oil sources, there have been other roots of the tension between these two sides, such as the disputed territories, the proper level of autonomy, budget allocations and power distribution (Paasche and Mansurbeg, 2014: 112). The tension between the central government and Iraqi Kurds increased after 2008, as the authoritarian tendencies of the central government manifested itself more assertively (Romano, 2014: 565) and with the enhanced autonomy guaranteed to the KRG, the Iraqi Kurds have the capacity to challenge the way through which federalism has been implemented in Iraq. The threat of Da'esh led to a new momentum in the relations between the KRG and central Iraqi government. The peshmerga forces and Iraqi army cooperated in the fight against the Da'esh, especially in the Mosul Operation (Dailysabah, 2016).

After decades of internal and regional tensions, Iraqi Kurds have been currently experiencing their golden years in terms of the power and influence they have in Iraq (Rogg and Rimscha, 2007: 824). On-going transformation process in the Middle East have provided an opportunity window for the Iraqi Kurds in achieving independence. In this setting, the self-determination rights of Iraqi Kurds have been stressed more vocally. Yet, the inability to get the recognition may give harm to the political

and economic relations of the KRG. Therefore, Iraqi Kurds have to look for recognition before deciding to secede from Iraq (Hadji, 2015: 536-537). An independence referendum held on September 2017 and the developments afterwards also approved the validity of this argument. Iraqi Kurds still devoid of the international recognition necessary for turning into an independent state. The greatest reaction against the KRG's referendum showed by the regional actors. Turkey and Iran sided with the central Iraqi government. On the one hand, they closed their airspace and stopped border crossings; on the other hand, they supported the central government in its effort of taking the control of the disputed territories formerly acquired by the Peshmerga (Smith, 2018: 206). The silence of the significant international players in the face of these reactions is an indicator of their disagreements about the actions taken by the KRG for the sake of independence.

2. Relations between Iraqi Kurds and Europe

A high number of Kurds migrated to the Western European countries as guest workers or political asylum seekers between 1960s and 1990s. The unrest between the Kurds and the governments of the countries where they are living played a vital role in that migration. It is estimated that there are two million Kurds in Europe. Majority of them lives in Germany (Hunger, 2008: 130). There are also significant Kurdish minorities in the United Kingdom, Netherlands, France and Sweden. The vast majority of these Kurdish people acquired refugee status from these countries by establishing a link between their existence in Europe and security threats in their country of origin (Basen and Toivanen, 2018: 7-8).

Kurdish groups in Europe politicized after 1980s especially with the migration of the educated Kurds to Europe. The political freedom setting in Europe gave the Kurds an opportunity for being more self-conscious. As a result, they formed strong Kurdish diasporas in many EU countries and they have the power to influence political decisions in these countries. That is, as a challenger group, Kurds are more effective in the European context. Iraqi Kurds in Europe also have the ability to use their power as a means for putting external pressure on their home governments.

The European system offered new political opportunities to the Kurdish diaspora through supranational power centres such as the European Parliament, the European Commission, and the European Court of Justice, the Council of Europe, and the European Court of Human Rights (Kelly, 2002: 92). They have been quiet talented in defending their cases on the basis of the norms in international politics, especially the ones related to human rights and democratic freedoms. Thanks to this, they achieved to take the support of many human rights defenders in Europe (Gunes, 2015: 67). The

European Parliament adopted several resolutions that can be interpreted as an evidence for this institution's high concern over the human right issues. In these resolutions, the Parliament made references to the unsatisfactory human rights conditions in Iraq and recommended to the Iraqi officials to guarantee administrative, political, cultural and educational rights of the various nationalities in the country (European Parliament Resolution). As it is seen from these resolutions, instead of focusing on the conditions of the Kurds in Iraq, European Parliament adopted a more comprehensive approach by stressing the poor human rights conditions in the country for all ethnical groups. On the other hand, the European Parliament organized a conference in 2012 in order to commemorate the attacks of Anfal and Halabja campaigns as an act of genocide. This can be thought as an attempt in order to ensure the internationalization of Kurdish genocide, at least for recognition at the EU level. In addition, the British parliament recognized the events as genocide in 2013. Norway and Sweden have been also paying effort for the internalization of this act of genocide (European Parliament Meeting Document). Despite the several European Parliament discussions on the issue in the preliminary sessions in the year of 2014, it has not yet adopted a resolution showing formal recognition of the events as genocide by this institution. Yet, the institution's call for an EU delegation in Arbil became real in 2015 (Ekurd Daily, 2014).

The existence of Iraqi Kurds in their countries motivated many European countries to establish relations with the Kurds in Iraq. After the emergence of the KRG as a distinct entity in 1990s, the relations between Iraqi Kurds and European countries intensified. The EU often establishes direct contact with the Iraqi Kurds by bypassing the central government in Baghdad. This can be considered as a direct evidence of the EU's acceptance of Iraq as a de facto confederation (Khan and Kirmanj, 2015: 375). EU and its member states have also diplomatic missions in the KRG territory and the number of these missions exceeds the number of the KRG missions in Europe. Thanks to the stability in the region, northern Iraq achieved important economic and political progress. As a result, the region has been frequently labelled as the "other Iraq" (Ali, 2015: 2). The region has been attracting many foreign investors (Rubin, 2008). Czech Republic, France, Germany, Greece, Hungary, the Netherlands and Britain have consulate generals; Bulgaria, Italy, Poland and Romania have consulates and Austria, Bulgaria, Sweden and the EU have representative offices in the KRG (KRG Department of Foreign Relations Website).

The vast majority of the KRG's diplomatic representations are located in Europe. The nine of the total fourteen KRG diplomatic missions in the world are in the EU member states. On the basis of this concentration in Europe, it can be concluded that there is a great parallelism between the

KRG diplomatic missions and Kurdish diaspora. There are KRG diplomatic missions in Austria, France, Germany, Italy, Poland, Spain, Sweden, Britain and the KRG has also a representation to the EU. The EU is the only international organization that the KRG has a diplomatic mission. This also shows the importance given by the KRG to develop its relations with the EU. The KRG leader Barzani has also had meetings with the EU leaders and representatives of the EU institutions. These meetings have been seen as an important vehicle for getting the support of the member states and EU institutions for the KRG policy choices.

EU member states show a great interest on the energy sources under the control of the Iraqi Kurds because they see them vital for the diversification of the Europe's energy supply. As it is well known, many EU member states are heavily dependent on Russia in terms of their energy supply and Russia showed its unreliability as an energy supplier several times in the recent past. Yet, the ambiguities related to the export of oil sources by the Iraqi Kurds to international markets, stemming from the dispute between the central government in Iraq and Iraqi Kurds, are a big challenge for all the outside actors having an interest into the region (Paasche and Mansurbeg, 2014: 112). The KRG's signature of the oil deals with the international companies without taking the consent of the central government was not welcomed by the central Iraqi government. In return for this act, central government stopped transfers from central Iraqi budget to the KRG and blocked oil exports through Ceyhan pipeline under its own control. The reactions of the central government pushed the KRG to construct its own pipeline as well as handling its oil exports directly (O'Driscoll, 2017: 323-326).

In addition to its rich oil resources, northern Iraq is also an important agriculture centre. The economy card has been making the hand of Kurds stronger against the Iraqi central government and has played a vital role in Iraqi Kurds' ability to establish privileged relations with the EU and its member states. Thanks to favourable business environment, including low corporate and personal taxes combined with the improved infrastructure, the region turned into a safe haven for many European investors. (Soderberg and Phillips, 2015: 8).

Especially after the emergence of the Da'esh and its effort to gain the control over Iraq and Syria, there has been a common tendency in Europe for supporting the Iraqi Kurds in their fight against this threat (Inat, 2015: 39). The failures of the central government in the fight against the Da'esh led to the emergence of this tendency. Thanks to their long experience in guerrilla warfare, peshmerga forces have become the most experienced forces in Iraq after the decline of federal army after 2009. Therefore, with the rise of Da'esh, these forces were seen as a significant ally by the Western powers who did not want to fight against the Da'esh by using their own

military staff. By the way, peshmerga has played a very vital role in the land-based campaign against the Da'esh. In return for this support, Western powers provided assistance, especially military materials and training support, to the KRG. However, while giving this support, the Western countries showed a special attention to keep the balance of power between the Iraqi Kurds and central government in Baghdad by knowing that the strengthening of the former in a way to harm the territorial integrity of Iraq (International Crisis Group, 2015: 1). Even in the recent documents adopted after the rise of Da'esh threat, the EU stated its commitment to the unity, sovereignty and territorial integrity of Iraq by reminding the importance of the Iraq's unity in terms of stability of the country and region (General Affairs Council of the EU, 2016). However, the successes of the peshmerga forces in the anti-ISIS coalition enhanced the KRG's ability to communicate with the international actors independently of the central Iraqi government (Smith, 2018: 215).

The rising tensions, stemming from the issues of the disputed territories, oil exports, transfers from budget, between the KRG and central Iraqi government played a significant role in the re-emergence of the independence calls in the northern Iraq. In addition, the failures of the central government in the fight against the Da'esh also had a share in the KRG's renewed desire for an independence referendum (O'Driscoll, 2017: 315). In the end, the KRG announced its decision for holding an independence referendum on 25 September 2017. After this announcement, both the EU and individual EU member states invited the KRG to reconsider or delay the referendum and advised the KRG to focus on the fight against the Da'esh. Furthermore, European parties stressed consistently their support for the Iraq's unity, sovereignty and territorial integrity in this referendum process. Referendum was framed as an action against the notion of Iraq in their mind. Since, from the Europeans' perspective, only a united Iraq can turn into a peaceful, prosperous and stable country.

The KRG has been suffering from several governance problems. There are serious claims about corruption in the governance mechanisms and high level of control over the media. As a result, the EU's primary concern about the Iraqi Kurdistan region is to ensure the establishment of a stable, secure and democratic system with a functioning free market economy. Since, this is very vital for the reach of rich hydrocarbon resources of the region to the international markets. As a result, the EU invited the relevant parties to form a peaceful and constructive dialogue in order to find a solution within the scope of the Iraqi constitution by avoiding from any unilateral action blocking this (European External Actions Services, 2017). The EU representatives also mentioned their readiness to support this dialogue process. The debated referendum was conducted and 92 percent of the voters supported Kurdish independence from Iraq. Despite the initial morale deriving from the result,

the later developments demoralized Iraqi Kurds (Bezci, 2018: 3). They gave up from their continuous insistence over independence and mentioned their readiness for a dialogue with the central government. This turn of the KRG was welcomed by the EU and its member states.

Turkey's EU accession process may produce positive implications for the future of Iraqi Kurds. Having good neighbourly relations with the neighbours is one of the accession conditions of the EU. The relative weight of this criterion has increased in the last decade with the EU's enlargement plan covering the Western Balkan countries, which fought against each other during the 1990s. In its foreign policy, Turkey has been acting by refraining from any action that can have a negative effect on the Turkey-EU relations. Briefly, Turkey's EU membership process has led to the Europeanization in Turkish foreign policy. Especially after its declaration as a candidate country by the EU in 1999, Turkey established more friendly relations with the Iraqi Kurds (Park, 2004: 502). Since, Turkey has turned into a political entity that has been widely utilising from soft power mechanisms and started to export stability and security to its neighbourhood (Celik and Aydın, 2016: 293). Yet, the problematic nature of the Turkish-EU relations in recent years has reduced the EU leverage in this country to a great extent. This may have adverse effects on the relations between Turkey and KRG.

Briefly, the KRG has been seen by the EU and its member states as a legitimate actor that can be interacted directly. Since 2015, the KRG representatives have right to attend high level meetings between the EU and Iraq aiming to discuss issues, such as trade, energy, human rights. This decision of the EU has been perceived as a political and diplomatic victory by the KRG. Since, the KRG has been pushing to reach this objective since 2009. Thanks to this decision, the KRG has the opportunity to defend its interests officially at the EU level (Rudaw Media Network Website). Yet, both the EU and its member states have always showed respect to the unity of Iraq in their contacts with the Iraqi Kurds. Therefore, the direct relations between the Iraqi Kurds and EU member states stayed so far limited to the economic field, especially to the contracts about the oil sources under the control of Iraqi Kurds. Briefly, The Europeans' relations with the KRG have been so far very much in line with the status of the KRG as a part of Iraq.

CONCLUSION

The existence of Iraqi Kurds in the European countries pushed many European countries to have contact with the Iraqi Kurds. The relations between the EU and its member states on the one hand and Iraqi Kurds have intensified with the emergence of the KRG in 1990s. Economic motivations of the Europeans, especially the interest for the energy sources

in the northern Iraq, played a vital role in the emergence and development of the relations between the parties. The European side always shows a great concern to handle its relations with the Iraqi Kurds by keeping a balance between the KRG and central Iraqi government, due to the tensions between these two actors.

The attitudes of the Europeans to the northern Iraq will continue to be decisive for the future of the Iraqi Kurds within Iraq. The salient support of the EU and its member states over the unity of Iraq for the sake of stability became one of the factors motivating Iraqi Kurds to take a reverse step from independence after the referendum. It is better for the Iraqi Kurds to take the support of the EU and its member states to transform Iraq into a more democratic country or Iraqi Kurds have to find a way to persuade Europeans by promoting their independence as a development serving to the regional stability, rather than hampering it.

REFERENCES

Ali, Othman, (2015), "The Crisis of Presidency in Kurdistan Region and Its Impact on Turkey", *ORSAM Review of Regional Affairs,* No. 34.

Basen, Bahar and Mari Toivanen, (2018), "Diasporic Homecomings to the Kurdistan Region of Iraq: Pre- and Post-Return Experiences Shaping Motivations to Re-return", *Ethnicities*, p. 1-24.

Bezci, Egemen B., (2018) "Guest Editor's Introduction: Trajectory for Kurds", *Middle East Critique*, Vol. 27, No. 1, p. 1-6.

Celik, Soner and Aydın Aydın, (2016), "Türk Dış Politikasının Avrupalılaşması Irak Örneği", *Turkish Studies*, Vol. 11, No. 2, p. 281-306.

Council on Foreign Relations, "The Time of the Kurds", (http://www.cfr.org/middle-east-and-north-africa/time-kurds/p36547#!/, Date of Access: 28.09.2016).

Dalar, Mehmet, (2016), *Tarihsel, Siyasal ve Hukuksal Perspektifiyle Irak Kürdistan Bölgesel Yönetimi*, Aktüel Yayınları: Bursa.

Demir, Eyyüp, (2014), *Irak'ın Sonu Bağımsız Kürdistan*, Orion Kitabevi: Ankara.

Ekurd Daily, 08.02.2014. (https://ekurd.net/mismas/articles/misc2014/2/state7734.htm, Date of access: 16.12.2016).

El-Dessouki, Ayman I. (2012), "Structural Contexts and Paradiplomacy of Iraqi Kurdistan", *Elnahda*, Vol. 13, Iss. 2, p. 1 - 36.

Eliassi, Barzoo, (2016), "Statelessness in a World of Nation-States: The Cases of

Kurdish Diasporas in Sweden and the UK", *Journal of Ethnic and Migration Studies*, Vol. 42, No. 9, p. 1403-1419.

European Commission Directorate General for Trade Website, (http://trade.ec.europa.eu/doclib/docs/2006/september/tradoc_113405.pdf, Date of access: 25.12.2017).

European External Actions Services, Statement by High Representative/Vice-President Federica Mogherini on the proposed Kurdish referendum in Iraq, 19.09.2017.

European Parliament Meeting Document, (2014).(http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meetdocs/2009_2014/documents/d-iq/dv/03_kurdishgenocidesofanfalandhalabja_/03_kurdishgenocidesofanfalandhalabja _en.pdf, Date of access: 16.12.2017).

European Parliament Resolution, (2014), No. 2716, (http://www. europarl.europa.eu/oeil/search/search.do?searchTab=y&searchType=0&text=kurdistan&snippet=true&noHeader=false&:procedureType_sid=3&:country_s=Iraq &lang=en&dismax=y, Date of access: 25.12.2017).

Fonk, Zachary R., (2016), "Iraqi Kurdistan Independence: Effects on Regional Stability", *Master's Capstone Theses,* Paper 78.

General Affairs Council of the EU, "Conclusions on the EU Regional Strategy for Syria and Iraq as Well as the Da'esh Threat", Brussels, 23.05.2016.

Gunes, Cengiz, (2015), "Serhildanlar ve Kitleselleşen Kürt Direnişi",*1990'larda Kürtler ve Kürdistan*, edited by Ayhan Işık et. al, İstanbul Bilgi Üniversitesi Yayınları: İstanbul, p. 63-77.

Hadji, Philip S., (2015), "The Case for Kurdish Statehood in Iraq", *Case Western Reserve Journal of International Law*, Vol. 41, Iss. 2, p. 513-541.

Hunger, Uwe, (2008), "Nation Building Online: A Case Study of Kurdish Migrants in Germany", *German Policy Studies*, Vol. 4, No. 4, p. 125-153.

Inat, Kemal, (2015), "Almanya'nın PKK ve Kürt Politikası", *Ortadoğu Analiz*, Cilt:7, Sayı: 69, p. 38-41.

International Crisis Group, "Arming Iraq's Kurds: Fighting IS, Inviting Conflict", Report No: 158, 12.05.2015. (https://www.crisisgroup.org/middle-east-north-africa/gulf-and-arabian-peninsula/iraq/arming-iraq-s-kurds-fighting-inviting-conflict, Date of access: 07.09.2017).

Kelly, Vera E., (2002), "Political Movements and Leverage Points: Kurdish Activism in the European Diaspora", *Journal of Muslim Minority Affairs*, Vol. 22, No. 1, p. 91-118.

Khan, Shamsul and Sherko Kirmanj, (2015), "Engineering Confederalism for Iraq", *National Identities*, Vol. 17, No. 4, p. 371-385.

Kirmanj, Sherko, (2013), "Kurdistan Region: A Country Profile", *Journal of International Studies*, Vol. 9, p. 145-157.

KRG Department of Foreign Relations Website,

(http://dfr.gov.krd/p/p.aspx?p=40&l=12&s=020100&r=364, Date of access: 15.12.2017).

Logan, Darren L., (2009), "Thoughts on Iraqi Kurdistan: Present Realities, Future Hope", *Iran and the Caucasus*, Vol. 13, No. 1, p. 161-186.

Mohammed, Herish K. and Francis Owtram, (2014), "Paradiplomacy of Regional Governments in International Relations: The Foreign Relations of the Kurdistan Regional Government (2003-2010)", *Iran and the Caucasus*, Vol. 18, p. 65-84.

O'Driscoll, Dylan, (2017), "Autonomy Impaired: Centralisation, Authortitarianism and the Failing Iraqi State", *Ethnolopolitics*, Vol. 16. No. 4, p. 315-332.

Paasche, Till F. and Howri Mansurbeg, (2014), "Kurdistan Regional Government-Turkish Energy Relations: A Complex Partnership", *Euroasian Geography and Economics*, Vol. 55, No. 2, p. 111-132.

Paksoy, Yunus, "Turkey joins Mosul operation on the ground, tanks hit Daesh in Bashiqa", *Dailysabah*, 24.10.2016. (https://www.dailysabah.com/war-on-terror/2016/10/25/turkey-joins-mosul-operation-on-the-ground-tanks-hit-daesh-in-bashiqa, Date of access: 11.02.2018)

Park, Bill, (2004), "Between Europe, the United States and the Middle East: Turkey and European Security in the Wake of the Iraqi Crisis", *Perspective on European Politics and Society*, Vol. 3, No. 3, p. 493-516.

Phillips, David L., (2005), "Power Sharing in Iraq", *Council on Foreign Relations*, No. 6.

Rogg, Inna and Hans Rimscha, (2007), "The Kurds as Parties to and Victims of Violence in Iraq", *International Review of the Red Cross*, Vol. 89, No. 68, p. 823-842

Romano, David, (2014), "Iraq's Descent into Civil War: A Constitutional Explanation", *Middle East Journal*, Vol. 68, No. 4, p. 547-566.

Rubin, Michael, (2018), "Is Iraqi Kurdistan a Good Ally?", *American Enterprise Institute, Middle Eastern Outlook,* No: 1.

Rudaw Media Network Website, 01.01.2015.

(http://rudaw.net/english/kurdistan/010520152, Date of access: 23.12.2017).

Salih, Khaled, (2005), "What Future for the Kurds?", *Middle East Review of International Affairs*, Vol. 9, No. 1, p. 83-95.

Smith, Crispin, (2018), "Independent Without Independence: The Iraqi-Kurdish Peshmerga in International Law", *Harvard International Law Journal*, Vol. 59, No. 1, p. 201-233.

Soderberg, Nancy E. and David L. Phillips, (2015), "Task Force Report State-building in Iraqi Kurdistan", *Columbia University Institute for the Study of Human Rights*. (http://dckurd.org/wp-content/uploads/2015/10/State-Building-in-Iraqi-Kurdistan.pdf, Date of access: 16.12.2017).

Voller, Yaniv, (2012), "From Rebellion to De Facto Statehood: Internatıonal and Transnational Sources of the Transformation of The Kurdish National Liberation Movement in Iraq into the Kurdistan Regional Government", PhD Thesis Submitted to London School of Economics.

Waisy, Karwan Salih, (2015), "The Iraqi Kurdistan from Rebellions to Civil War 1918-1998", *International Journal of Advanced Research in Management and Social Sciences*, Vol. 4, No. 5, p. 247-273.

Fine Arts Studies

INSTRUMENT TEACHERS BELIEFS RELATED TO SELF-REGULATED LEARNING[1]

Ersin TURHAL[2], Uğur ALPAGUT[3]

ABSTRACT

Rapid changes in our lifestyles in the age of information and technology have influenced many aspects of life as well as changing our understanding of today's education and as a result of this they leave the concept of learning to the "student" centered understanding of learning centered education. The self-regulated learning strategy, which is regarded as a continuation of social learning theory, can also be defined as the assumption of responsibility for the learners' own learning environment. Instrumental education, which is an indispensable dimension of music education, is still mostly centered on learners, where current approaches to education / teaching differ from traditional "master / apprentice" understanding. This study was carried out with the aim of revealing the beliefs of the instrument teachers about self-organized learning. Forty six (N: 46) teachers who attended instrumental training in five institutions were reached in the study, two of whom from the Department of Music Teaching at the Faculty of Education in the Western Black Sea, East Marmara and Central Anatolia regions, two of whom from the High School of Fine Arts and one of whom from the Conservatory. In this research, Ozan, C., Çelik, N., & Kıncal, RY (2014), a researcher named "Self-Regulated Learning Teacher Belief Scale" developed by Lombaerts, De Backer, Engels, van Braak and Athanasou Self-regulated learning teacher belief scale "was used. Mann Whitney-U test and Kruskal Wallis-H tests were used for the non-parametric tests and Pearson correlation was applied for correlation analysis because the data did not show normal distribution. It is revealed that the beliefs about self-organized learning are positive when there is no meaningful difference in the demographic characteristics of the teachers working in instrument education in the research results. As a result of the research, it is assumed that instrument teachers recommend self-regulated learning approach.

Keywords: Instrument education, Self-regulation learning, Teacher beliefs

1 This section was prepared by expanding the study which was presented as a paper in "1st National Music Research Student Congress" and published abstract.

2 Dr., Kırıkkale University, Faculty of Fine Arts, ersinturhal@gmail.com

3 Prof. Dr., Abant İzzet Baysal University, Faculty of Education, alpagutugur@yahoo.com

INTRODUCTION

As well as having effects on a lot of aspects of life, the rapid changes in our life styles during the information and technology age also shape the contemporary educational approaches and give way to the learning "student"centered teaching approach. The active participation of the individuals in learning activities effects their following learning positively to such an extent that it emerges as one of the reasons triggering this change(Turan & Demirel, 2010). As a matter of fact, when the individual, being aware of his responsibilities and after gaining self-discipline (Hauck, 2001) utilizes the self-learning method, becomes one of the practising partners of the educational process rather than being a passive user by devoloping his problem solving skills with the correct strategies (Çiltaş, 2011).

New conceptual studies have been formed parallel to these kinds of approaches. Albert Bandura, who tried to explain " learning" with the relation between "environmental variables", "behaviors" and "individual variables" and stated that all of these are maintained by acting in the scope of mutual interaction shaped his "Social Cognitive Concept" on this basis (Bandura, 1986). In other words, the individual completes his learning behaviors in interaction with his learning environment. The effective use of the skills that they have in this interaction also depends on their belief in their self-efficacy (Bandura, 1977). This belief provides motivation and well-being for the related area (Pajares, 2002). According to the other aspect of the concept, individuals have the capacity for self-regulation, that is to say that an individual has the potential to use his own capacity and skills during learning. (Bandura, 1986; Çiltaş, 2011; Pajares, 1996; Zimmerman & Risemberg, 1997). this approach, on the other hand, later became the basis for the self-regulated learning strategy which came into being in the annual meetings of The American Educational Research Association in the 1986's.(Zimmerman,2008).

Self-regulated learning was described by Pintrich in (2000) as " a constructive and active process in which students determine their own learning goals, try to regulate their cognition, motivation and behavior and are led and limited by the contextual properties and their goals."(p.452). this process is a self-regulated process in which students are made to change their mental skills into academical performance skills (Zimmerman, 2008). There are a lot of models trying to explain the academic process. One of which is the Zimmerman's " Social Cognitive Self-Regulated Learning Model"(2002). In that model the process is gathered in three phases; pre-thinking phase, performance phase and self-reflection phase. The pre-

thinking phase, which starts by determining goals, is actualized with self-teaching and control during performance phase. The result is evaluated by self-evaluation in the self-reflection phase. The resulst are then reflected to the following learning process and the ciycle repeats itself from the very beginning for the other processes. The belief of Self-efficacy is the core power of the individual among all these phases in view of the fact that it is of great significance both for providing motivation to the individual to fulfill a goal and to accept it and his cognition whether he can actualize a work or not (Zimmerman & Kitsantas, 2005).

Undoubtedly, this learning strategy can also be used pretty effectively in the musical education processes. One of the most significant aspects of the musical education is instrumental education which has been conducted mostly in learner oriented style thanks to today's teaching-learning approaches where the traditional mentor system of a master training his apprentice has been changed and differentiated. As, the students in instrumental education are able to plan, maintain, evaluate and their learning activities as a person being able to protect his productive motivational situation (Miksza, 2015: 220). It is inevitable for these types of students that organize their instrumental training processes so consciously to be successful (Özmenleş, 2008; Turhal, 2017). For this reason, it is a necessity for the students to define the hardships they may encounter during the instrumental training process, to determine the strategies to be used for a solution in order to overcome them, to confirm their accuracy and research solutions for probable problems (Hallam, 2001a).

The students' gaining of cognitive awareness during this process not only develops the self-regulated process but also is more successful at increasing the musical skills of the students owing to the fact that they maintain the training processes more consciously (Hallam, 2001b). The students are recommened to follow the strategy in which they are determined to increase their upper cognitive awareness by monitoring themselves and controlling the medium (Yokuş & Yokuş. 2010). The upper cognition is the information and cognition of a person about a phenomenon(Flavell, 1979: 906). It is also a process of mental activities such as realizing which strategy to use when and how to use it in his own learning.(Hartman, 2001). When these upper cognitive startegies are utilized efficiently, many stages such as, planning of the process, its maintanence, evaluation, its providing self-efficacy and motivation are conducted successfully (O'Neill, 1999).

In brief, the students are required to be a teacher for themselves by taking certain practice strategies, time management, available learning materials and the content of the music learned into consideration (Hallam et.al, 2012: 653). Therefore, it is of utmost importance for the students to make the most of conscious training medium.

Conscious training is a specific target-oriented practice which contains duties reconstructed in a way to provide interpretable feedbacks (Zimmerman et.al, 1996). It is a training in which every musician in the field of music utilizes upper cognitive skills at a great extent, observes his own performance by determining or discovering what is more effective for him (Ericsson, Krampe & Tesch-Romer, 1993). We can examine two of the instrumental training models that are made on this point. They are; Hallam and Jorgensen's instrumental training models.

The model of Hallam is based on cognitive concept. Briefly, it can be defined as, the variables before learning, personal characteristics of the learner, the requirements of the topic to be learned, the learning medium, the management of the training process and the interaction of all these factors (Hallam, 1997 as cited in Jorgensen, 2003: 197). As a consequense of this process, the learning outputs are revealed.

The Jorgensen model on the other hand (2003), is based on learning on one's own approach in which emphasizes the use of time in training. He also emphasized the importance of the age to start an instrument and indicated that the amount of practising an instrument effects the result and as a matter of fact, the total practice amount is determined and all these factors determine the level of the performance. This model comes into being in three stages which are as follows; area of conditions, area of decision and area of success.

In the conditions stage, the teacher is required to function as a guide for the students by taking different factors into consideraton such as the properties of the learner such as age, sex, the condition of his family, motivational level etc., the propeties of the instrument trained, the variable of the social conditions. In the decision stage, the factors such as the decision for the content, target, learning strategies of the training, the timing during training, and the materials to be used during the training are found. the third stage is the area of success. At this stage the musical piece gained is required to be performed successfully by reading notes and recitation.

Both models are seen to be placing the student into the center. Additionally, the significance of the consciously maintanence of the training process is stated. The self- efficacy belief and the level of motivation effect that are necessary for this are effective on the result outputs, as well. The instructor is the leader and the guide of all this process. In order for the student to improve his self-regulatory skills, the teacher has to adopt a role of this kind.

One method to research the thoughts of the instructors is to examine their beliefs. Beliefs are thought to be a part of a group of structures which determine an understanding for a person's mental structure and its content,

and provides an explanation for his actions (Bryan & Atwater, 2002). For the desired instrumental success it is thought to be impossible for the students to grow up as individuals knowing their responsibilities without the teachers believing in self-regulated training (Ozan et al. 2014). By the way, the belief structures tend to reveal a person's thoughts and the content of his actions (Lombaerts, De Backer, Engels, van Braak & Athanasou 2009). Because, all these are able to effect all the approaches that teachers have on practice such as, cognition and judgements, as well as teaching method and pedagogical information. As a matter of fact, teachers can produce their own personal practical teaching theories. when examined, the researches are seen to be supporting the assumption of basic coherence between classroom practices and the beliefs of the teachers (Lombaerts et.al 2009).

When the related literature was examined, several studies which were based on the instructors' beliefs on efficacy were found (Demirtaş, Cömert & Özer, 2011; Otacıoğlu, 2008 et.al.) however, the studies on instructors' beliefs on efficacy were seen to be limited and it was determined that there was no study done in musical education in particular. Yet, a lot of researches have stated that making use of self-regulated strategies during instrumental training was necessary to make the student take part in such a planning, responsibility and control and it was recommended by them. The belief of the instructor in the practicability of self-regulated learning in insturmental instruction effects its probability of actualization. This study aimed to make a contribution to the literature in this field by putting the beliefs of the instrument instructors forward about self-regulated learning.

METHOD

This study is a descriptive study aimed at examining the beliefs of teachers charged with instrumental instruction in five different establishments located in Turkey's Western Black Sea, Central Anatolian and Eastern Marmara Regions namely, two educational faculties' musical teaching departments, two fine arts high schools and one conservatory in self-regulated learning and whether they change according to various demographical properties or not. The data derived in this study has been tried to be explained and interpreted systematically and clearly (Yıldırım & Şimşek, 2005).

The study group of this study consists of teachers charged with instrumental instruction during the teaching-educational year of 2016-2017 in five different establishments located in Turkey's Western Black Sea, Central Anatolian and Eastern Marmara Regions namely, two educational faculties' musical teaching departments, two fine arts high schools and one

conservatory. The 47,8% of the constituents of the study group were male with the total number of 22 while the rest 52,2% were female with a total number of 24. Female participants are seen to be having a small majority.

Additionally 39,1% of all the participants of the study group are Educational Faculty Musical Teaching Department's instrument instructors with a total number of 18. Similarly 39,1% of all the participants of the study group are Fine Arts High School's instrument instructors with the same total number; 18. The lowest number of participants 10, is from the instructors working at conservatory which makes 21,8% of all the participants. When the balance among the participants is examined a balanced distribution can be named.

In this study a Turkish adaptated version of "Self-Regulated Learning Teacher Belief Scale" under the same name by Ozan, C., Çelik, N., & Kıncal, R. Y (2014) which was originally developed by Lombaerts, De Backer, Engels, van Braak and Athanasou (2009) was utilized as a data collecting scale. This scale has a structure with one factor consisting of ten matters. The scale is of Likert type rating scale with five statements rated as follows; "absolutely disagree" (0), "disagree (1)", "neither agree nor disagree (2)","agree (3)" and "absolutely agree (4)". Just before all the matters in the scale, there is a section in which "self-regulatory learning" concept is defined. This section was added to the adaptation process. The Cronbach alfa credibility coefficient of the original scale was calculated as 79.

Even though no use of "0" score is seen in today's studies, it was decided to accurately abide by the original scale and it was applied as it is. Special permissions were taken from the producers of it in its original language as well as from the ones who provided the Turkish adapted version for this scale to be used in this study.

The data derived from the practice were coded at first and then they were presented on SPSS 17.0 package program with their analysis. Due to the fact that the datum did not show normal distribution, of non-parametric tests The Mann Whitney-U and Kruskal Wallis-H tests were made use of. In addition, for relationship analysis, Pearson Correlation was applied.

FINDINGS

According to the analysis carried out, as seen on Table 1 below, the highest point for self-regulatory learning from the teachers involved in instrument instruction was 40, whereas the lowest one was 19. The aritmetic mean for the beliefs in self-regulatory learning of the teachers involved in instrument

instruction was ($\bar{X}$=29,11) and its standard deviation was 3,9, on the other hand. When we change this finding into percentage calculation, it totals to a very high 72,8 %. This proves that the instrument instructors have a positive belief in self-regulatory learning.

Table 1. The Beliefs of instrument instructors in Self-regulated Learning

	n	Min.	Max.	$\bar{X}$	ss
Their beliefs in self-regulated learning	46	19,00	40,00	29,11	3,9

The beliefs of instrument instructors in self-regulated learning with various demographic properties.

As the data did not show normal distribution, non-parametrical tests were preferred. Therefore Mann Whitney-U test was used for the variable of sex. According to the data derived from the statistical study no significant difference was detected in the beliefs of the teachers in self-regulated learning, involved in instrument instruction according to sex.(p>0,05).

Table 2. **Sexes of the instrument instructors and their beliefs in self-regulated learning.**

Sex	N	Seed average	Seed total	U	p
Female	24	22,71	545	245	0,674
Male	22	24,36	536		

The Kruskal Wallis-H test was carried out to determine whether the beliefs of the teachers involved in instrument instruction in self-regulated learning differentiate according to their marital status or not. According to the carried out test, it was determined not to have any difference.(p>0,05).

Table 3. The marital status of the instrument instructors and their beliefs in self-regulated learning.

Marital Status	N	Seed Average	Sd	X^2	P
Single	13	19,85	2	1,680	0,432
Married	31	25,27			
Other	2	19,75			

The Kruskal Wallis-H test was carried out to determine whether the beliefs of the teachers involved in instrument instruction in self-regulated learning differentiate according to establishment that they work for or not and it was determined that it showed no difference.(p>0,05).

Table 4. The Establishments where the instrument instructors work and their beliefs in self-regulated learning.

Type of Establishment	N	Seed Average	Sd	X^2	p
Music Taching Department of Educational Faculty	18	24,39	2	0,407	0,816
Conservatory	10	21,15			
Fine Arts High School	18	23,92			

Pearson Correlation test was carreid out to determine whether there is a correlation between the beliefs of the teachers involved in instrument instruction in self-regulated learning and their age variable. According to the results of the carried out test, no significant correlation was determined. (p>0,05).

Table 5. The Ages of the Instrument Instructors and Their beliefs in self-regulated- learning

	Belief in Self-regulated Learning	
Age	r_s	-,132
	P	,381
		46

The Kruskal Wallis-H test was carried out to determine whether the beliefs of the teachers involved in instrument instruction in self-regulated learning differentiate according to their having children or not. According to the results of the carried out test, no significant correlation was determined. (p>0,05)

Table 6. The parental status of the Instrument Instructors and their beliefs in self-regulated learning.

Having Children	n	Seed Average	sd	X^2	p
No	22	23,77	3	2,622	0,454
1 child	16	20,56			
2 children	7	30,07			
3 children	1	18,50			

The Kruskal Wallis-H test was carried out to determine whether the beliefs of the teachers involved in instrument instruction in self-regulated learning differentiate according to their proefessional experience or not. According to the results of the carried out test, no significant correlation was determined. (p>0,05)

Table 7. The Professional Experience of the Instrument Instructors and their beliefs in self-regulated learning

Proefessioal Experience	n	Seeding Average	sd	X^2	p
1-5	4	19,88	3	1,030	0,794
5-10	16	20,94			
10-15	17	25,82			
15+	9	23,50			

The Kruskal Wallis-H test was carried out to determine whether the beliefs of the teachers involved in instrument instruction in self-regulated learning differentiate according to their Educational Background or not. According to the results of the carried out test, no significant correlation was determined. (p>0,05)

Table 8. The Educational Background of The Instrument Instructors and their beliefs in Sel-Regulated Learning.

Educational Background	n	Seed Average	sd	X^2	p
Under Graduate	8	22,50	2	0,257	0,880
Graduate	19	24,68			
Post Graduate	19	22,74			

RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

The aritmetic mean for the beliefs of the teachers involved in instrument instruction in self-regulated learning was found to be (x=29,11) in this study which was aimed at describing the beliefs of the instrument instructors involved in instrument education in self-regulated learning. When we change this value found into percentage in proportion to the highest score to be obtained from the scale, a very high ratio of 72,8 is obtained. As a matter of fact, the instrument instructors can be said to have positive beliefs in self-regulated learning Lombaerts v.d (2009) states the assumption that there is a correlation between the instructors' beliefs and their classroom practices. In addition, Bryan and Atwater (2002) states that the beliefs of the instructors are good ways to examine their thoughts in view of the fact that it is thought that the beliefs explain a person's thinking and its content, give an idea about the classroom medium he prepared and provide a point of view for the actions of him which lead the learners. Taking this view into consideration, the instrument instructors who made up the study group of this study are thought to take action towards implementing self-regulated learning approach and adopt this strategy in their classroom setting which they prepared.

There has seen no meaningful differentiation between the socio-demographical properties and the establishment they work for and their beliefs in self-regulated learning. As a matter of fact, it is assumed that in the adoptation of the self-regulated learning strategy there is a balanced distribution acoording to the socio-demographical properties of the teachers and the establishments they work for. While this result is regarded very positively, it is possible to state that it does not effect the result directly, on the other hand.

Some of the teachers who are highly conventional were seen to be practising the instructive methods of the instructor model they encountered in their lives. Similarly, some teachers are at times were seen to be having several obstacles against change due to the fact that they continue instruction using old-fashioned teaching methods which contradicts the innovative structure of science. All these facts are regarded as circumstances that can easily be gotten rid of once the teachers are eager to rethink on their present views.(Prawat, 1992). The fact that instrument instructors show belief in self-regulated learning strategy proves that they have innovative and adoptable attitudes towards change. This fact prevails a positive situation for the instruments learners.

Dignath-van Ewijk and van der Werf (2012) states in his studies that the teachers, if they want to improve themselves, have to start the process as soon as they start their careers because of the fact that the teacher will probably

develop stereotyped patterns during the period of teaching which will may later evolve into a resistance against change. The instrumnt instructors' beliefs in self-regulated learning strategy showed no significant difference. Therefore this finding contradicts this study. Nevertheless Yaman and Yazar (2015) in the study they carried out proved that the fine arts teachers are more open to life long learning more than the teachers of other subjects. This finding complies with this study. It can be assumed that the instrument instructors charged in music which is a sub-branch of Fine Arts show life long learning and improvement with their innovative attitudes. Pajares, (1992) states that the teachers' beliefs may and have to function as a focus in educational researches however; it has to be clearly conceptualized and the basic assumptions must be carefully examined and noncontradictory attitudes and certain belief structures must be thoroughly evaluated.

McPerson and Zimmerman (2011) in a study they carried out tried to explain the self-regulated learning process in instrument instruction by 5w 1h method. In this study the answer for the question "Why" was explained by "Motive". This stage which is regarded as the beginning of the learning process is thought to be coming into being by self-confidence, determining a target, supporting the targets directly or indirectly with inner beliefs. The answer for the question "What" was explained by "Behavior" and the learning behaviors within the process were thought to be coming into being by monitoring and evaluation of the instrument performance. The answer for the question "How" was tried to be explained by " Method" ; while the students are maintaining their learning by making use of social guides such as duty strategies for instrument instruction, the techniques peculiar to the instrument, training models and watching videos, their learning was also thought to be developed by self-evaluation. The question " when" on the other hand, emphasizes planned study, planning and managing social life by being knowledgeable about time managemet. The question " Where" emphasizes the structure of the physical environment, its practicality, its providing concentration for study and its availability for focusing. The Question " Who " was thought to come into being by looking for external help, being open to receive that help and internalization of it when stating identity. (McPerson and Zimmerman, 2011: 134). It is of great significance for the instrument instructor to present that help in a setting where self-regulated learning cycle is made maintainable and available to receive it. After all, the belief of the instrument instructors in this direction proves that they are open to providing that kind of a setting.

Zhukov, (2009) stated that each instrument instructor has to prepare procedures for instrumental practice for every learner and the learner has to review their practice structures in view of the fact that this kind of a practice makes the improve their self-regulating and cognitive skills as well as letting them gain self-confidence and independence in the process of learning.

The fact that the realtion between the belifs of instrument instructors in self-regulated learning and classroom practices are of high rates, puts the significance of the deepening the researches on this subject forward. It is thought that by doing new studies on this subject and developing new methods, after training the instructors, new and significant results are thought to be obtained after the application of these approaches on the learners and the field.

The new initiatives peculiar to the subject and the field in which the experimental sides of the new researches are taken into consideration are recommended to be carried out in a way so as to add new values and substantiality to the beliefs and the practices of the instrument instructors in slf-regulated learning.

REFERENCES

Bandura, A. (1977). Self-efficacy: Toward a unifying theory of behavioral change, Psychological Review.84 (2), 191–215.

Bandura, A. (1986). Social foundations of thought and action: a social cognitive theory. Englewood Cliffs, Nj: Prentice Hall.

Bryan, L., & Atwater, M. (2002). Teacher beliefs and cultural models: A challenge for science teacher preparation programs. Science Education, 86, 821-839

Çiltaş, A. (2011). Eğitimde Öz-Düzenleme Öğretiminin Önemi Üzerine Bir Çalışma. Mehmet Akif Ersoy Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi, 3, 5

Demirtaş, H., Cömert, M. & Özer, N.(2011) öğretmen adaylarının öz yeterlilik inançları ve öğretmenlik mesleğine yönelik tutumları. Eğitim bilim dergisi, 36, 159

Dignath-van Ewijk, C., & van der Werf, G. (2012). What teachers think about self-regulated learning: Investigating teacher beliefs and teacher behavior of enhancing students' self-regulation. Education Research International, 2012, [741713]. DOI: 10.1155/2012/741713

Ericsson, K. A., Krampe, R. T., & Tesch-Romer, C. (1993). The role of deliberate practice in the acquisition of expert performance. Psychological Review, 100(3), 363–406

Flavell, J. H. (1979). Metacognition and cognitive monitoring: A new area of cognitivedevelopmental inquiry. American Psychologist. 34(10) 906-911. DOI: 10.1037/0003-066X.34.10.906

Hallam, S. (2001a). The development of expertise in young musicians: Strategy use, knowledge acquisition and individual diversity. Music Education Research, 3 (1), 7-23.

Hallam, S. (2001b). The development of metacognition in musicians: implications for education. British journal of music education. 18 (1), 27-39. 139

Hallam, S., Rinta, T., Varvarigou, M., Creech, A., Papageorgi, I & Lani, J. (2012). The development of practising strategies ın young people. Psychology Of Music. 40(5). 652 - 680.

Hartman, H. J. (2001). Developing students' metacognitive knowledge and skills. H. J. Hartman (Der.), Metacognition in learning adn instruction (s. 33-68). London. Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Hauck, P. (2001). Hedeflere ulaşmanın yolları. İstanbul: Rota Yayınları

Jorgensen, H. (2003). Instrumental practice and developing musicianship. Paper Presented at the 5. Triennial ESCOM. Hanover Music and Drama University, Germany.

Lombaerts, De Backer, Engels, van Braak & Athanasou (2009) Development of the self-regulated learning teacher belief scale. European Journal of Psychology of Education. Vol. XXIV, nº 1, 79-96

Miksza, P. (2015). The effect of self-regulation instruction on the performance achievement, musical self-efficacy, and practicing of advanced wind players. Psychology Of Music 43. 219–243.

McPherson G. E., Zimmerman B. J. (2002). Self-regulation of musical learning: A social cognitive perspective. In Colwell R., Richardson C. (Eds.), The new handbook ofvresearch on music teaching and learning. 327–347. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Otacıoğlu, S. G. (2008) Müzik öğretmenliği okul deneyimi I uygulamalarına katılan öğretmen adaylarının öz etkililik-yeterlilik düzeylerinin incelenmesi. Cumhuriyet Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi.

Ozan, C**.,** Çelik, N., & Kıncal, R. Y. (2014). *Öz düzenlemeli Öğrenme Öğretmen İnanç Ölçeği`nin dilsel eşdeğerlik, geçerlik ve güvenirlik çalışması*. 1. Avrasya Eğitim Araştırmaları Kongresi, İstanbul.

O'neill, S.A. (1999). The role of achievement-related perceptions in the practice and achievement of young musicians. Bulletin Of The Council For Research İn Music Education. 142 (89).

Özmenteş, S. (2008). Çalgı eğitiminde öz düzenlemeli öğrenme taktikleri. İnönü Üniversitesi Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi Cilt: 9, Say.:16 (Guz 2008), 157.175

Pajares, F. (1992). Teachers' beliefs and Education research: Cleaning up a messy constrct. Review of Educational Research 62(3), 307-32

Pajares, F. (1996). Self-efficacy beliefs in academic settings. Review of Educational Research, 66(4), 543-578.

Pajares, F. (2002). Overview of social cognitive theory and self-efficacy. Retrieved from: 29.05.2017 https://www.uky.udu/~eushe2/pajares/pff.ptml.

Pintrich, P. R. (2000). The role of goal orientation in self–regulated learning. In M. Boekaerts, P. Pintrich, & M. Zeidner (Eds.), Handbook of self– regulation (pp. 451–502). San Diego: Academic Press

Prawat, R. S. (1992).Teachers' beliefs about teaching and learning: A constructivist perspective. American Journal of Education 100, no. 3 (May,): 354-395.

Turan,S. & Demirel,Ö.(2010). Öz düzenleyici öğrenme becerilerinin akademik başarı ile ilişkisi: Hacettepe Üniversitesi Tıp Fakültesi örneği. Hacettepe Üniversitesi Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi, 38, 279-291

Turhal, E. (2017). Gitar eğitiminde video kaydı ile yapılan öz düzenlemeli öğrenmenin performansa etkisi. Unpublished Doctoral Thesis. Bolu. Abant İzzet Baysal Üniversitesi.

Yaman, F. & Yazar, T. (2015). Öğretmenlerin yaşam boyu öğrenme eğilimlerinin incelenmesi "Diyarbakır ili örneği" K. Ü. Kastamonu Eğitim Dergisi 23 (4), 1553-1566

Yıldırım, A. & Şimşek, H (2005). Sosyal bilimlerde nitel araştırma yöntemleri. Ankara: Seçkin Yayınevi.

Yokuş, H. & Yokuş, T. (2010). Müzik ve çalgı öğretimi için strateji rehberi 1 öğrenme stratejileri. Ankara: Pegem Akademi.

Zhukov, K. (2009) Effective practising: a research perspective, Australian Journal Of Music Education. N1 P3-12 2009.

Zimmerman, B. J. (2002). Becomming A self-regulated learner: An overview. Theory Into Practice, 41(2), 64–70 Doi: 10.1207/s15430421tip4102_2

Zimmerman, B. J. (2008). Investigating self-regulation and motivation: Historical background methodolojical developments, and future prospects. American Educational Research Journal, 45(1), 166–183

Zimmerman, B. J., Bonner, S. & Kovach, R. (1996). developing self-regulated learners beyond achievement to self-efficacy. Washington, DC: American Psychological Association.

Zimmerman, B. J., & Risemberg, R. (1997). Becoming a self-regulated writer: A social cognitive perspective. Contemporary Educational Psychology, 22, 73–101.,

Zimmerman, B. J., & Kitsantas, A. (2005). The hidden dimension of personal competence: Self-regulated learning and practice. In A. J. Elliot & C. S. 104 (Eds.), Handbook of competence and motivation (pp. 509–526). New York: GuilfordPress.

A FILM TOZ BEZI CRITICIZED BY WITHIN THE SCOPE OF IDENTIFICATION AND REPRESENTATION FACTS ASSOCIATED WITH MASQUERADE AND SPACE

Berceste Gülçin ÖZDEMİR[1]

ABSTRACT

The representation of female characters, which is one of the topics that feminist film theories dispute, and the identification of female spectators with female characters are two important topics in the sense of the development of feminist film theories. This study discusses the representation of the cleaning lady characters in the spaces of the movie *Toz Bezi* (Ahu Öztürk, 2015) and the identification moments of female spectators with these characters. In this sense, the identification moments of female spectators with the characters are discussed through Mary Ann Doane's concept of "*masquerade*". The representation of female characters in spaces are discussed based on feminist film theories with reference to the question "Who is seen?" that Mieke Bal addressed. The claim that is represented in the study and the existence of the female characters in limbo who could not be a subject as well as an object in the film narrative constitute a controversial representation in terms of feminist film theory. This representation repeats the passivity position with which women has been labeled in the patriarchal social order and causes female spectators feel the feeling of passivity with which they are represented at the moments of identification. Feminist films provide that women are represented either as subjects or objects; however, the representation of the existence of radical female characters who can reveal their subjectivity by resisting the patriarch is more important for the transformation of the social order. The existence of female spectators who can watch films without using masks and the substantial visibility of the existence of women in the films made with the point of view of a woman director will be hope-inspiring for the Turkish Cinema and for the development of feminist film practice and theory.

Keywords: Feminist film theory, feminist film criticism, identification, representation, space.

INTRODUCTION

In this study feminist film criticism has used to analyse a *Toz Bezi* (2015) within the scope of feminist film theories. Female characters' representation is analysed with public space and private space facts with regard to Mieke Bal's thoughts. Female spectators identification analysed by Mary

1 Dr. Öğr. Üyesi, Berceste Gülçin Özdemir, Gelişim Üni., bgozdemir@gelisim.edu.tr

Ann Doane's masquerade fact. Doane argues masquerade relation with spectatorship and subjectivity. She says, ''masquerade would hence appear to be the very antithesis of spectatorship/subjectivity." (Doane, 1988: 42). For this reason this study grounds on arguments and analysis masquerade fact with spectator identification and female characters representation. Two of these analysing are given arguments about film discourse, female characters representation and female spectators identification. Starting from this point of view, film can be read by ideological with feminist textual analysis and this can be given multiple arguments to develop feminist film theory and practice.

Identification and representation interrelated facts to each other. Teresa de Lauretis cites from Judith Mayne thoughts about these two facts:

'' One of the most basic connections between women's experience in this culture and women's experience in film is precisely the relationship of spectator and spectacle. Since women are spectacles in their everyday lives, there's something about coming to terms with film from the perspective of what it means to be an object of spectacle and what it means to be a spectator that is really coming to terms with how that relationship exists both up on the screen and in everyday life." (De Lauretis, 1986: 367).

Female Spectators Identification Within the Scope of Feminist Film Theories

''We see the image; we do not see the gaze…One can look at her looking, but one cannot look at oneself looking. The analogy that links identification-with-the-look to masculinity and identification-with-image to femininity breaks down precisely when we think of a spectator alternating between two." (Teresa de Lauretis, 1984: 142-143).

In 1970s male gaze was debated by feminist film criticism, in the 1980s debates were emphasis on female spectatorship. Feminists has started to search possible meanings of spectatorship for women. Female spectatorship and their identification has argued with multiple aspects. The concept of identification has based upon the human subject. Jean Laplanche and Pontalis think ''Identification is not simply one psychical mechanism among others, but the operation itself whereby the human subject is constituted." (cited by De Lauretis, 1984: 141). This thought is show which is the base upon the male and female contradiction and being a human facts. For that reason, primarily feminist film theoricians should think feminist film arguments under the skin of being human, subject and object facts in terms of female spectator, identification, gaze. Laura Mulvey argues male gaze in the classical narartive cinema in her article *Visual Plesaure and The Narrative Cinema* (1975), and she says, cinema

builds the way *to-be-looked-at-ness* and cinema codes have been created for the male gaze. In this context, voyeuristic and scopophilic gazes serves for the traditional cinema pleasure (Mulvey, 1999: 843). Ann Kaplan's question is very basis question for female spectator within this context, she asks: ''Is the necessarily gaze male?", and she adds; if the women gaze its their own gaze, they would be want to own the gaze (Kaplan, 2001: 25). Feminist academicians throw out lost of questions about female spectators and identification context, and these questions are opened new aspects for arguing female spectators identification. Rosemary Betterton asks, ''Are multiplied endlessly as a spectacle for male pleasure…what kinds of pleasure are offered to female spectators within the forms of representation…which have been made mainly by men, for men?" (cited by Stacey, 1994: 22) Barbara Creed defined female spectator, ''An effect of discouse, a position, a hypothetical site of address of the filmic discourse or as the woman in the audience who brings to the film her particular history and social identity." Elizabeth Cowie questioned, seeming to determine of textual production of sexual difference for narrative, charactes and spectator. This question answers can bee seen with Doane's thoughts. For Doane: ''I have never thought of the female spectator as synonymous with the woman sitting in front of the screen, munching her popcorn…It is a concept which is totally foreign to the epistemological framework of the new ethnographic analysis of audiences…The female spectator is a concept, not a person." (cited by Stacey, 1994: 23).

In this context, it can be asked under the skin of feminist film theories: ''How woman spectator get pleasure in film narratives and which ways can help them to watch film with their subjectivity?". Raymond Bellour argues, female spectatorships' different positions; masculine/feminine. Teresa de Lauretis arguings are paralel to Bellour, she discusses double identification of the female spectator with masculine gaze and passive feminine image (Stacey, 1994: 25). Teresa de Lauretis says, ''Double or split identification with the look of the camera apprehended as temporal, active or in movement, and identification with the image on the screen, percived as spatially static, fixed, in frame." (De Lauretis, 1984: 123).

With these thoughts, second question appear for feminist film theories with regard to female spectatorship: ''Are the female spectators' feel obligatory to watch films within the scope of male gaze?" Doane's masquerade fact becomes an important role for this question. Firstly, Joan Riviere wanted to understand oedipus complex with her patients and she was used masquerade fact and this fact appropriated to feminist film theory. Mary Ann Doane wanted to define femininity as a closeness or presence-to-itself with the look fact and she used masquerade fact to theorise female spectatorship (Kuhn, 1994: 214-215). For Doane: ''Masquerade

is not as recuperable as transvestism precisely because it constitutes an acknowledgement that it is femininity itself which is constructed as mask-as the decorative layer which conceals a non-identity." (Doane, 1992: 765). From the point of Doane, female spectator can use masks to feel identification with the female characters. Doane explains the masquerade theory with theory of lack, of distance, of separation (Doane, 1988: 44). Feminist film theory asserts, female characters should be represented with their subjectivity and female spectator should watch film with their feminine gaze. Gayln Studlar commentates Doane's thoughts, and she says, psychoanalytic facts help to spectator to understand the full possibilities and meaning of libidinalized looking (Studlar, 1985: 21). If the female spectator use masks to identification, how they will feel their subjectivity. Feminist film theoricians should argue this context. Female spectator can identify themselves with their subjectivity and female characters should represented by the directors with their subjectivity too. Contemporary cinema narratives can do this, but classical cinema narratives contribute their conventions for male gaze and male pleasure therefore spectators can't see female characters' with their subjectivity in the films.

In terms of Jackie Stacey, Doane's theory masquerade explores female spectators' gaze in conjuction with the facts; voyeurism and fetishism (Stacey, 1994: 25). For Jane Gaines, Doane's study shows operation of classical narrative cinema renounces female looking from the spectators (Gaines, 1990: 84). Janet McCabe argues masquerade in terms of female spectators, and she thinks this fact destabilises female image with structures of the male gaze (McCabe, 2004: 95). In the light of these arguments, identification fact can be thought again by female speactators' pleasure and desire? Female spectator watching experience is contradictive in conjuction with their pleasure and desire to search their subjectivity. Doane argues in her book *Desire to Desire: The Woman's Film of The 1940s*, subjectivity and desire of female gaze and she emphasizes these facts with feminist theoricians thoughts. From the point of Teresa de Lauretis, female spectator has passive desire because of their incommensurable entities (Doane, 1987: 7). In patriarchal social order all of the rules established by man dominance, hence these rules appear in classical narrative cinema discources. When the female characters and female spectators incommensurable entity repeating with these dominance discources, feminist film practice can't be developed. In this connection, female characters representation become an important context for the feminist film theory. Luce Irıgaray says, female characters are represented by lack, nonmale, non-one and they have no autonomous symbolic representation (Doane, 1987: 15). All of these facts are still arguing by the feminist film theoricians, and feminist film makers have serious responsibility to solve all of these problematics with their production.

Female Characters Representation Arguments In terms of Feminist Film Theory

Laura Mulvey argues female spectators identification with female characters, and for her, gaze fact is the base fact for this argument. ''Cinema turns on with the series of look, for Stephen Heath and it is the place of the look that defines cinema and governs its representation of woman." says de Lauretis (De Lauretis, 1984: 138).

Feminist film theoricians argue female characters representation in a lots of ways. Female characters' subject and object positions in film narratives become an important context for quering their representations'. How are they represented, which ways are using to represent them to the spectator, which space can spectator watch female characters in film narratives ext. these questions appear for arguing representation fact from the point of feminist film theory. Janet McCabe refers from Simone de Beauvoir's thougth to explain female character representation in patriarchal order. Patriarchal discourse consist of social myths and these myths have a relationship with culturel codes and this order constitute social order rules; ''representation of the world…is the work of men" and all of the experiences constituted of ''from their own point of view" (McCabe, 2004: 4). In the classical film narrative, female characters representation has constructed by patriarchal order discourses. Female spectator watches the film under the skin of male hierarchy and from their point of view. They watch female characters' with the characters' lack and absense. De Lauretis emphasizes representation of woman image: ''*…what the representation of woman as image, positive or negative, achieves is to deny women the status of subjects both on the screen and in the cinema. But even so an opposition is produced: the image and what the image hides (the elided woman), one visible and the other visible, sound very much like a binary set.*" (De Lauretis, 1984: 58). Female characters representation can be transformed by the women directors. Their represented strategies should be contained female gaze and female feelings. In addition to this, cinematographic narrative stratiges which are about the shooting plan, scale of shots, looking of camera, characters looking to each other and the other facts should be taken into consideration by the women directors. The place of woman, at once image and view, spectacle and spectator, social construction of sexual difference are argued with the representation and identification facts for de Lauretis. And she gives a references from the Judith Mayne, ''One of the most basic connections between women's experience in this culture and women's experince in film is precisely the relationship of spectator and spectacle…" (De Lauretis, 1986: 367). Women condemned by the social order are squeezed by their husbands and pushed to their private sphere. For

McCabe, feminist film theory and criticism work for deconstructing the representation (McCabe, 2004: 2). Characters stereotypes are contradictive fact to discuss representation and state of affairs associated with this fact. For Ann Kaplan, Hollywood conceals the nature of image, but representation fact indicates the constructed nature of the image (Kaplan, 2001: 13). Image can be discussed by two ways; firstly, types of role characters can be discussed in terms of sociological criticism, second one is, cinematographic analysis for discuss function of a character in narrative (Kaplan, 2001: 15). In this study, female characters representation criticise by female characters' represented spaces, and to argue the characters' subject and object positions in terms of representation fact. Cinematographic facts, narrative construction, types of roles closely related with arguments of narrative spaces. All of these facts show woman image and its relation to the characters' representation strategies.

Looking From Narrative Spaces Narrative Spaces with Mieke Bal's Arguments: Space Fact in Film Narrative

Mieke Bal argues perception of space's representation; sight, hearing and touch involves in the perceptual representation in film narrative (Bal, 1999: 133). Spectator can be understand the characters representation of passivity or dominance types of roles with film narrative spaces, because their representation closely associated with narrative spaces. For Bal, characters have relations with inner and outer spaces. Inner space is unsafe and experienced as confinement; outer space represents liberation and security (Bal, 1999: 134). Bal's thoughts can be argued with public and privates space in terms of female characters representation in film narrative. Just because, public spaces are attributed to men, private spaces are attributed to women in social order and classical film narrative uses this aspect to serve patriarchal order. Public space and relevant to this fact represent men world and it references; freedom, unsafe and uncanny facts too. Because of this, female characters couldn't be represented in public spaces in a classical film narratives. If they are represented in public space with their freedom, they are going to be punished at the end of the film of they are going to be an object of desire. They are integrated with private spaces where is safety and confidental for them.

Spaces function gives an idea to argue characters representation in film narrative too. For Bal, a steady space is a fixed frame, thematized or not; dynamically functioning space allows for the movement of characters (Bal, 1999: 136). These spaces can show female characters movement area and therefore, female characters movement ability can be argued in the way of feminist film theories. Contemporary film narratives can be decontsructed this convention for changing representation of women. Bal's question *" who is seen "* is related with these space facts, and this question facilitates to argue

female spectator identification with female characters. Mulvey's thoughts appeared in this context, film as controlling the time and the dimension of space, and all of these cinematographic facts are served for the male gaze and pleasure (Mulvey, 1999: 843).

To-be-looked-at-ness has been seen controlling by the cinema codes. Inner, outer, steady, dynamically functioning spaces are can be arguable with the characters representations and these spaces can be revealed new questions in terms of feminist film theory.

Film Criticism Within The Scope of Feminist Film Criticism Associated With: Representation, Identification & Masquerade, Space Facts

Toz Bezi tells story of iki cleaning women lifes' in film narrative. Hatun and Nesrin are neighbour in same apartment, they earn their money from cleaning. Hatun has husband and son. Nesrin has husband and daughter too, but all through the film narrative spectator can't see Nesrin's husband because he get loose from the home. Hatun and Nesrin have low-income group in their life. They experience difficult physical circumstances in their daily life. They go high-income people's house. All day they get tired and they do their domestic affairs in their home too. They are represented; passive and suffred in their daily life, on the other hand they are working and earning money to survive, this situtation shows their powerful struggle in the life. A film representes these female characters' all of their dramatical situations. Their cleaning moments, dialogues with home owner women, dialogues with their family, their daily conversations, their presence moments in homes, their lonely moments, represent their existence in life. Their existence moment in spaces show their representation in the spaces and this allow to argue representation of female characters in terms of feminist film theory. They only use transportation vehicle to go their home or to go their work. Public spaces are unsafe for them, they aren't exist in public space, they are working, but their working place can't be seen in public space. They haven't got any social oppurtunities so they aren't visible in life even they are working. In terms of feminist film theory visibility is an important in relation to female characters. Spectator can see them with their difficultness, struggle, endeavor, but all the film narrative male dominance can be perceivable too. Their function and their sociological situtations are giving lots of code about their existence.

Female characters represented spaces are present their movement area, and this situation shows how these characters represented by the woman director. In this regard, this representation context leads to new arguments for feminist film theory and practice. In film narrative, female characters

represented inner spaces are; house, kitchen, bathroom; outer spaces are; transportation vehicles and roads. These spaces can be related to private spaces. Their working hours, dialogues, movements and existence arouse in these spaces. Outer spaces are insecure for them, in other words they can't be in existence in these spaces. Inner spaces are their steady spaces too. They do their domestic affairs, they talk only each other, and talking about private life whom houses cleaned by them. Their dynamically functioning spaces are round trip to their home to their work. They haven't got big movements to go somewhere, they haven't got extended spaces to live in life. Generally, female characters was represented in inner spaces. Thus, female spectator can do identification with female characters' in an inner space, and they don't feel dynamically functioning space. Relationship of narrative and space facts can show characters inner world and existence of female characters in film narrative. If female characters are represented generally in an inner spaces and a steady space in a fixed frame, these characters' representation can be arguable in terms of female characters representation. In Hatun's house, spectator generally see Hatuns's husband Şero in the living room. After dinner, family members go their spaces, but Şero uses living room singly. He watches television, he crosses his legs and he can relax where he wants. Hatun is doing very difficult work with her body, she uses her physcical force but she can't crosses her legs like her husband because living room is not her space. Kitchen is her space for relax and to talk with her friend. She can thinks her daily routine in the kitchen or in the balcony, she can smokes cigarettes in the balcony and has a heart-to-heart talk with her friend Nesrin. Hatun cleans people's house but after her work she is using her physical force to her house too. She cooks, she clears the table, she cleans her house again and again, her husband never helps her. Nesrin is the same, she cleans people's house everyday and she works again in her house too. Furthermore, she raises her little daughter without her husband help. When Nesrin see Hatun and her husband Şero arm-in-arm out of the house, she remembers her husband, feels sad and wants her husband again. This situation breaks female character strongness and arguable in terms of representation of female characters under the skin of feminist film theory. Their life stucked and has been pressed by their husband.

A film shows female characters reality with characters living spaces but this reality repeats male hegemony aspect in cinema field withal shot by female director. Female characters bounded with strongly their living spaces, cleaning spaces and in generally their private spaces. Their existence has shaped in a steady spaces, and this shows their boundedness. Narrative spaces affect female spectators' identification. Female characters' can't breathe freely in life, they can't walk secured, they can't think personal so they haven't got individual life, they are living with their responsibilities

and obligations also with male hegemony order in the film narrative. In this context, female spectator watch them with their passivity. For this reason, female spectator uses masquerade when watching the film narrative. Doane says: ''Masquerade is employed not to illuminate the agency usually associated with spectatorship, but to designate a mode of being for the other –hence, the sheer objectification or reification of representation." (Doane, 1988: 42). Masquerade conceals a non-identy, on the other hand it gives a pleasure which is include voyeurism and fetishism. In film narrative, female characters suffer from the life, and female spectators can use their mask to understand characters' suffering, and their interpreting of film leads to feel masochism.

While the desire of the female spectator allows Doane to make a narcissistic identification through the mask, the transvestite glance comes with it when the female spectator becomes a male spectator. Tragic events and emotions in the film narrative, which are followed by masochistic sentiments through masks, also clarify why women use the mask. In this context, female audiences feel an excessive identification of masculinity as they identify themselves with female characters. On the other hand, the female spectator can feel narcissism by making herself an object of desire at the time of identification. In the direction of Doane's thinking, the female spectator is a spectator who is consumed by the female image. The fact that the female characters are presented in a real way causes the female spectators' to come face to face again with this reality. For this reason, as the female audience becomes identifiable with the female characters through the masks attached to them, they become out of their own state and turn themselves into characters positions. However, the problematic situation here is that female characters are taken by the social order, from the hands of their self-existence.

Mask, in the identification of the audience with female characters; As Doane stated is the concepts of lack, distance and discrimination. The female spectator, in the spaces provided by the cleaner women, shares their efforts to exist through masks and sees the lack of attribution to the woman. The woman who does not have the phallus is considered to be incomplete, the answer of the question, how the missing ones can be watched in the cinema scene, is given through the mask concept. The woman, who can not be seen in the public space and is etherized because it is not a phallus, is integrated with the representative position of the private space. Female characters, which are presented in an integrated manner with their specific fields, are presented intricately in the form of relationships in their special fields. Therefore, female observers are trying to understand the distances between female characters in their living spaces in the static places in private areas through the masks they wear during the monitoring of Toz Bezi. While the

director tries to present the struggles of female characters in life indoors, out of reality, in static places, also helps to reinforce patriarchal discourse from the other side. In classical narrative cinema; radical female stereotypes can be expected to be presented in contemporary narrative cinema, in which stereotypes different from fetishized and punished female stereotypes can be seen, but no radical female character stereotypes are found in this film. Due to their socio-economic situation, the female characters, who look to their families who have financial difficulties, are presented as' the other of the 'other'. In the dialogues they have made with each other, the women who go to their homes talk about the lives of others. It is also seen in the dialogues of female characters how important the male dominant discourse is in society. When Hatun indicates that she suffers from the condition and movements of her partner, Nersin says these excerpts are exaggerated and Hatun has left her husband's house. The Hatun is humiliating her friend Nersin by saying "Şero can be f….. you". Even in this blasphemy, the existence of man's domination in the social order is shown. The blasphemy used by the woman while humiliating the other woman puts the dominance power on the man and reduces the woman to the position of the secondary being. The female characters trapped in their private areas, trying to reveal their subject but devalued by their husbands; place the woman again as representative of the private space. Female characters represented spaces show public and private spaces contradiction to female spectators, this contradiction reiterates patriarchal discourses. Hardly, these patriarchal discourses should be deconstructed by the woman director to transform all of the same aspects. Otherwise, woman director should represent reality of life in terms of female characters, but within this context they can be represent with hopeful discources.

Presenting the troubles of the female characters integrated with the specific field and showing the deliration in their daily life contributes in terms of feminist film practice. But the moments of identification that these characters create in the audience should also provide a radical contribution to the discourses of feminist film practice. Therefore, while the discourse of social order in the presentation of female characters in the contemporary narrative cinema is shown to the audience, these discourses are forgotten and these discourses are presented repeatedly.

CONCLUSION

Annette Kuhn remarks production process of film with regard to feminist film practice. Kuhn says, making visible the invisible related to production and formation of textual structures foregrounded by a feminist perspective (Kuhn, 1982: 71). From this point of view, feminist film makers task are become an important like feminist film theoricians arguments. Their scenarios, scale of shots, production processes, moderating of actor/actress etc. lots of cinematographic facts should be chosen by the feminist perspective to represent female gaze and womens' feelings to the spectators. In this manner, women directors aspect is become significant. In this study, film director represents female characters' experiences in daily life from their point of view. The female characters' represented spaces show female characters situation in their difficult life. They are living in inner spaces, they aren't related to outer spaces. Female spectator watch them in a steady spaces and this gives the spectator limited space perception. Spectator uses the mask for understand their limited life. They watch their suffering with distance cause mask creates this opportunity.

In the direction of Gaines's, Stacey's and McCabe's thoughts, the meaning of the mask concept should be debated on the basis of criticism in terms of film narrative, whether female spectator have enjoyed voyeurism while watching the film narrative. The mask enables narcissistic masquerading, allowing female spectators' to follow the female characters from a voyeuristic point of view. The abandonment of Gaines' gaze for classical narrative cinema is being considered for the narcissistic identification of this film. As the female spectator identifies with the female characters, she can only observe them with masochistic feelings as soon as they are common to their troubles. McCabe stated that if the image of women is destabilized by the male gaze, then the film is debatable in terms of the female spectator's point of view. This is because, although the reality of women's existence is presented in a feminist way in the presentation of female images in the film presentation, the fact that male dominant discourses are included in the film narrative reveals the possibility that these images may be destabilized in terms of female audience. The friendships of Hatun and Nesrin reveal the realities of their female images, their relations with their families, their dialogues with their cleanliness in their homes and the problems they have in their lives and their inability to realize their own self due to these phenomena, but the audience can observe these realities under the presence of male domination. The presence of destabilizations in the view of women's images is the reason for the use of masks in the pursuit of the spectator's experience of watching. I cogitated fact about representation of ambiguous female characters in terms of being subject or object in film

narratives: *sub(ob)jectivated*. This means, *sub(ob)jectivated* characters are individuals in movies who have been turned into objects by the rules of the social order while they are in a struggle for being the subject (Özdemir, 2016: 236). In this context, the destabilizing view of women's image is also a fact that the film narrative is an example of contemporary narrative cinema. Attempts have been made to identify the spectator with the characters through frequently used subjective camera movements. If the narrative ends with an open end, it allows the audience to create new questions in terms of characters, in terms of narrative and in the name of the living existence of women. Since the existing realities about female characters are tragic and sad, the spectator feels masochistic while watching these characters, and on the other hand they can create narcissistic identification while presenting the strong existence of these characters in the audience. Thus, in narcissistic identification, the spectator's realization of the viewing experience arises within the struggles of the female characters with life. Female spectator's, both with a female look and with a male look, will be able to experience different emotions in their moments of identification, while allowing their views to vary. Many film theorists also question the fluidity of the spectator's identification, indicating that identification does not occur uniformly. The spectator, who provides masochistic and narcissistic identification through masks, can sense the emotions of female characters and can identify female characters by identifying through male gaze. Spectators can feel multifaced feelings when they watch the film. Cause they can feel masochism and narsicism too. The female spectator's identificatory positioning have discussed by film studies theoricians; Raymond Bellour, Janet Bergstorm, Nick Browne, and they think this positioning has the fluidity. Even, Bergstorm emphasizes, the spectator can experince the multiple identificatory. For Gayln Studlar, this fluid identifications allows the spectator to feel the ''the drive to be both sexes" in repressed everyday life (Studlar, 1985: 12).

Bal's question is '' *who is seen* " in response to multiple narratives in terms of film narrative. The film narrative shows how the female characters are visible to the spectator while the other side is not visible in the social order. In this context, while the female characters seen in the film are often presented in their private spaces, they provide a voyeuristic perspective to the male view of the patriarchal order. Female directors are required to present the existence of female characters that can be kept alive by public visibility, unlike the representation of characters that can not be disconnected from this area, which is not connected to specific areas in the presentation of female characters. Female characters should not feel their femininity, their self-esteem, only in the interior, in fixed places, or in private spaces. They should be allowed to walk in dynamic spaces, public

spaces, and outdoor spaces. The female characters that can travel on the wide roads, can exist alone, and can show their presence in every aspect of the public space, can change the discourse of classical narrative structure as promising female characters.

The radical narrative strategies that women directors will reveal in the presentation of female characters are necessary for the transformation of social order. All places in the world are for humanity, no place should be attributed to any one entity at all. While cinema mediates these attempts, feminist film practice has also great responsibilities in this regard.

REFERENCES

DE LAURETIS, Teresa, (1984), *Alice Doesn't: Feminism, Semiotics, Cinema*. USA: Indiana University Press.

DE LAURETIS, Teresa, (1986), ''Through the Looking-Glass''. *A Film Theory Reader Narrative, Apparatus, Ideology*. Ed. Philip Rosen. Newyork, Colombia University Press, pp. 361-372.

DOANE, Mary A., (1987), *Desire to Desire: The Woman's Film of the 1940's*. Bloomington, Indiana University Press.

DOANE, Mary A., (1992), ''Film and The Masqurade: Theorising The Female Spectator'', *Film Theory and Criticism: Introductory Readings* (4th edition). Ed. Gerald Mast, Leo Braudy and Marshall Cohen. Newyork, Oxford University Press, pp. 758- 769.

DOANE, Mary A., (1988), ''Masquerade Reconsidered: Further Thoughts on the Female Spectator'', Body and Masquerade. *Discourse*, Vol. 11, No. 1, Fall/ Winter 1988-89, pp. 42-54.

GAINES, Jane, (1990), ''Women and Representation Can We Enjoy Alternative Pleasure'', *Issues in Feminist Film Criticism* Ed. Patricia Erens, Bloomington, Indiana University Press, pp. 75-92.

KAPLAN, Ann, (2001), *Women and Film: Both Sides of the Camera*, London, Routledge.

KUHN, Annette, (1982), *Women's Pictures: Feminism and Cinema*. London, Routledge, pp. 67-81.

KUHN, Annette, (1994), *Women's Pictures: Feminism and Cinema*. (2nd Edition), London, Verso.

MCCABE, Janet, (2004), *Feminist Film Studies: Writing The Woman Into Cinema*, London, Wallflower.

MULVEY, Laura, (1999), ‘’Visual Plesaure and the Narrative Cinema’’, *Film Theory and Criticism: Introductory Readings*. Ed. Leo Braudy and Marshall Cohen. Newyork, Oxford University Press, pp. 833-844.

STACEY, Jackie, (1994), *Star Gazing: Hollywood Cinema and Female Spectatorship*. London, New York, Routledge.

STUDLAR, Gaylyn, (1985), ‘’Visual Pleasure and the Masochistic Aesthetic’’, *Journal of Film and Video*, Vol. 37, No. 2, University of Illinois Press, pp. 5-26.

ÖZDEMİR, Berceste, Gülçin, (2016), ‘’Representation of Women in the Outside-the- Mainstream Films of Women Directors in the Turkish Cinema: The Analysis of “Sub(ob)jected” Women in Space Within The Frame of Feminist Film Theory’’, Unpublished Doctoral Thesis, *İstanbul University*, İstanbul.

A COMPARATIVE STUDY ON THE TURKISH TRADITIONAL THEATRE "ORTAOYUNU" AND THE ITALIAN POPULAR THEATRE "COMMEDIA DELL'ARTE"[1] [2]

Fehime Nihal KUYUMCU[3]

ABSTRACT

The similarities between Commedia dell'Arte and Ortaoyunu, an important building stone in Traditional Turkish Theatre, have always been the subject of research, and a number of studies on their origins have been published. Commedia dell'Arte is an Italian Public Theatre tradition based on improvisation which began in North Italy in the 15th century, spreading rapidly all around Europe. There is no accurate information as to the certain date of the emergence of Ortaoyunu, a branch of Traditional Turkish Theatre. Although for some researchers its origin dates back into very old times, it is generally accepted to go back into the 19th century.

The 15th century is the time of the outset of the Renaissance movement and occurrence of many innovations in arts and sciences. The 19th century is the time in that the Ottoman State underwent many changes, oversaw transformations with respect to social events; also it is the time for making preparations for the foundation of the Modern Turkish Republic with regard to certain reforms. The historical backgrounds of both types of plays and the common points present in the stage of their evolution are noteworthy. This study puts forth a comparative study on the Commedia dell'Arte and Ortaoyunu and examines social events that took place in the process of their emergences.

Keywords: Traditional Turkish Theatre, Ortaoyunu, Commedia dell'Arte

INTRODUCTION

The similarities between Commedia dell'Arte, the Traditional Italian Theatre, and Ortaoyunu, an important building stone in Traditional Turkish Theatre, have always been the subject of research, and a number of studies on their origins have been published. Commedia dell'Arte, which

1 *This study was supported by Istanbul University Scientific Research Projects / UDP with the project number 43195.*

2 A very brief summary of this article was presented in *International Conference for Academic Disciplines* conference in Barcelona. 2014 and a very brief summary of this article published -June*Humanities and Social Sciences Review,* CD-ROM. ISSN: 2165-6258 : 03(04):11–16 (2014) Copyright c 2014 by UniversityPublications.net

3 Doç.Dr., nihal.kuyumcu@istanbul.edu.tr İstanbul Üniversitesi Hasan Ali Yücel Eğitim Fakültesi

emerged in the 15th century in Italy and spread fast all over the Europe, is an Italian Public Theatre tradition basing on improvisation. Ortaoyunu, like Commedia dell'Arte, is a type of play based on improvisation. Even though rumors circulated through about the history of its emergence and several sources of information mention that it was first exhibited in Seljuk Palace, took the form known to date, it was named and put on the record in the 19th century.

15th century is the period which witnessed the beginning of the Renaissance Movement in Italy and refers to the years in which a great amount of innovations came in sight in the field of science and art. Likewise, 18th and 19th century is the period in which the Ottoman State underwent many changes and applied many transformations on the society; also it is the time for allowing preparations for the foundation of the Modern Turkish Republic on grounds of restructuring. The historical backgrounds of both types of plays and the common points in the period of their emergence are salient and remarkable.

Societies are constantly changing. Change is defined as "a differentiation of an object, an event or phenomenon when compared to its previous state" and social change portrays "the change of social structures, the change of a network of relationships that form these structures and social institutions that determine these relationships" (Acun, 2007:19).

In order to scientifically better understand the social events, facts, and phenomena that occurred in a community, one must carefully examine the processes, variables, and under the influence of which social dynamics those changes appear. A change or transformation in a society never comes forth in an instant of time and spontaneously but is a result of another event, is caused by an impact or response to any other occurrence. To understand and determine the reasons, the subject requires to be approached multi-dimensionally and from a historical perspective. When we take a glance at the years Commedia dell'Arte and Ortaoyunu came into view, Commedia dell'Arte shows itself within a fair culture in the early Renaissance period of Europe leaving behind the Middle Ages and we find Ortaoyunu as having taken its final form in the Ottoman Empire towards its end in the throes of modernization.

1. Ortaoyunu and The Ottoman State in the XIXth Century

Art reflects the society of its birthplace. The features of this reflection are different for each branch of art. Theatre is the art which is closest and in deep relation to the community among all arts, and reflects not only the society's general tendencies or trends but also its detailed facts. This is because theatre becomes integrated with the audience, takes its final

form while being played in front of the audience, and actualizes itself as the exchange of stage and audience. For that reason, it has to come into agreement with the audience it directs on common values. Each work of art requires an agreement between the artist and reader, listener or performer; in other words it must gain acceptance accordingly. The theatre's privilege stems from the direct -rather than indirect- interaction, meeting with the audience in the same area, and coming into existence completing its process in front of the audience.

When one mentions about the Traditional Turkish Theatre; Shadow Play (Karagöz), Puppetry, Ortaoyunu, and Improvisational Theatre (Tüluat Tiyatrosu) come to the mind. One of the common features of these is that they are a kind of theatre basing on improvisation without any text, or drama. It does not reflect reality, nor is reality imitated. This sort of imitation, in the narrowest sense, provides a copy of reality. Therefore, there is no identification, replacement of reality or animation of reality, hence no sharing of reality. Dialectic of players and audience show up in the form of showing contemplation and not in the form of reception of production. The cast (performers / players) are not individuals or characters but they are "types": stereotypes, exemplums, figures, depictions. A player is not the one who echoes reality, or is not identified with its role. A player is, mostly, a master of imitation (imitator) hinging on improvisation (Çalışlar, 1993:17).

Expressed very succinctly and in a general manner, the aforementioned characteristics of Traditional Turkish Theatre can be linked to the lack of social conditions in Ottoman Society which gives birth to a tragedy or associating itself with a basis on non-contradictoriness; in other words, to the absence of conflicts such as democracy, class struggle, individualism (selfhood), liberation and emancipation, self-realization and so on.

Theater in Turkey in the Western sense entered into the institutionalization process with the Tanzimat Period in the 19th century. Albeit relatively, it began to bring its opponents in the artistic field, because of the beginning of despotic, theocratic, political structure-breakage; so that individual freedom and civil society properties started to take place and witnessed the unraveling structure of traditional and closed societies.

The very end of the 18th century and 19th century in which Europe entered into and followed the French Revolution naturally resulted in a change of economic and political equilibria. It was, therefore, unthinkable for Europe not to get affected from this process. 19th century refers to the years the Ottoman State turned its face into the West. Accordingly, it was very natural that art, which is tightly linked to the political and economic conditions, was affected by the change. Having increasingly begun to feel the pressure of the West, The Ottoman State correspondingly started to adopt the characteristics and methods of the West in order to survive. The

establishment of a new order in the state system became a necessity for the gradually weakening Ottoman State which the Westerners also referred to as the "Sick Man". In administrative, social, economic, and cultural sense, in nearly every field, "modernization" became inevitable. These were also the years that coincide with the promotion of handloom, introduction of new working systems, establishment of Western-like schools, translation of books, and bringing experts with the aim of restructuring the military structure. Launching an initiative for the modernization and westernization of the Ottoman Turkish society starts with and realized by the reforms of the era (Tanzimat). Tanzimat, the Reform Movements of that time, is considered as the first steps towards human rights, constitutional state, freedom, and democracy. The law enacted in 3 November 1839 is an important shift in the sense that it limits the Sultan's authority for the first time. The royal edict of Reform (Islahat Fermanı) issued in 1856 introduced new regulations such as freedom of religion, the right for all ethnic groups to engage in trade equally and freely, and equal pay taxes for everyone.

Innovative initiatives which started with the Tanzimat Movement find its meaning in thought, education, art, literature and theatre in the context of our area of study. The gradual transformation of art within this orientation is unavoidable in the sense that it is deeply in connection with the political and economic conditions.

Ortaoyunu emerged throughout the years -the end of 18th century and the beginning of the 19th century- in which aforesaid changes and transformations in the Ottoman State are embedded. Nonetheless, Ortaoyunu achieved its known traditional shape from the beginning of the 19th century. However, taking into account the fact that no art form emerges all of a sudden, but enlarges its self-reality being influenced by a couple of forms and cultures and has a deep connection with these, it would not be wrong to claim that Ortaoyunu took its final form by going through certain stages up until the 19th century. In that sense, one easily observes Ortaoyunu at various festivals and celebrations, wedding ceremonies, circumcision feasts, and religious festivals along with court carnivals and entertainments throughout the Ottoman history. It gained its traditional form over time by ways of various show formats which always attract the interest and appreciation of the people such as imitation, acrobatics, talent/stunt shows, mutual battle of words, instruments and songs, women's or men's –posed as women- humorous dancing (Kudret, cited in Pekman:2011).

Forming a kind of our traditional theatre, Ortaoyunu is usually said to be a version of Karagöz, a type of shadow play, which occurred to be performed on the stage. Very naturally it was asserted that Ortaoyunu was influenced by shadow puppetry. When gone deeper and investigated (under Byzantine influence), it reaches back into the Greek and Roman mimus

actors (pantomime), Dionysus festivities, theatrical village plays. Even, it goes back to the rituals belonging to the early times of mankind. It can be proclaimed that the starting point for Ortaoyunu is "Theatrical Village Plays" which continues its existence in today's world being performed at certain days of the year such as autumnal and/or vernal equinox, the switch of seasons; aiming to celebrate the awakening of the nature (*nawruz*); death and resurrection stories; the desire to dominate nature; or wishes of prosperity and abundance. Nonetheless, considering its present form, it would not be wrong to say that Ortaoyunu moved away from its original source, lost its ceremonial property, got estranged and its entertaining features has been in the forefront.

The repertoire of Ortaoyunu is comprised of Karagöz shadow puppetry, novels or plays adapted or translated from the West, and folk tales. The topics, in general, include urban culture, customs and traditions. These plays do not include animal motifs or resurrection of the dead in the village spectacle plays. The core of the folkloric theme lost its religious or traditional point of views, yet folk songs and folk dance were given place in Ortaoyunu. This peculiarity implies the fact that entertainment-oriented quality of Ortaoyunu overweights its ritualistic nature (Sokullu, 1979:132). Still, it is possible to find motifs of fairy tales such as magicians or 'arap bacı'.

As well as there are references sharing the information that there is a demonstration to keep the patients entertained in a mental hospital in the Suleiman the Magnificent period, there are also references as it was seen for the first time on Seljuk Palace (And, 1969:178). There is another reference dating back to the 17th century in that the sultans held on several occasions and spectacles of a variety of festivities, and themed comedies representing a type of play. (Nutku, 1995:35). Ortaoyunu took its final form in the period of Mahmoud II, the end of the 19th century.

The mosaic view of Ortaoyunu, which is comprised of mutual causerie, game pieces, dances, songs, skits, and rhymes as a portion independent from one another, inserts it into a vaudeville theatre identity classification at one hand. On the other hand, it allows a group of the everyday problems of everyday Ottoman city life to be reflected fragmentarily. These fragments unfold the various behavior patterns in social life and some of the problems of people everyday life rather than referring to a motion which develops a certain dramatic action containing conflicts. These problems and behavior patterns are reflected in the contrast between Kavuklu and Pisek. (Pekman: 2011)

The word "Ortaoyunu" is attributed meanings by associating it to its format and location of staging. For instance, on the basis of the word "orta", there is the establishment of relationship between "auto plays" Jews brought from Spain and the Janissaries. Establishing correlations with the Janissaries with the spectacles, it is asserted that either players went to war

with the army and entertained the sultan in the harsh difficulties of the war conditions or it is propounded to appear from the medium of Janissaries, trade guilds, or army and navy entertainments. (And, 1969: 179- 181). By synthesizing all these assumptions, Metin And indicates that Ortaoyunu should be regarded as "games played in the middle of nowhere" by its the nearest literally meaning reference. (And, 1969: 194). Jews are known to have produced and played various games and use circles, (tambourine) and pastal (*şakşak*) (Tekerek, 159:2007).

The most important feature of Ortaoyunu is that it is based on improvisation. Players have the freedom to determine their speeches, conversations, and behaviors according to the topic at hand not to a certain text already determined. All the game's plot develops via the existence of the conflicts when the two persons encounter, and it tells about the current realities. Imitations, the creditor's collecting their debts, the applicants as passersby are presented in certain calmness. Nevertheless, these issues have not been processed as prime problems. Social disorder is discussed within the perspective of a decadent management. Issues have not been addressed during the game, but was just contented with a short skit, and cited superficially. While bringing out the fault of one, the other one's attitude is also criticized, yet a behavior is not shown as an alternative to the other. (Sokullu, 1979:137) For example; while laying out the stinginess of a person, ingratitude of the other is revealed.

Although there are certain similarities between Ortaoyunu and Karagöz from the point of view of reflecting over the social occurrences of their time, there are also differences in terms of approaching to social problems. For instance, Ortaoyunu puts emphasis on the current daily reality; however, it seeks to avoid from political satire or humor. The main reason for this is that the players on the stage cannot directly target the ruling class in a totalitarian regime based on the authority of the Sultan. Average people and everyday life gained more importance in Ortaoyunu and human relations came into prominence.

Ortaoyunu was played on a square called *Palanga*. The setting consists of a small cage called as "dükkân" (shop) resembling a table with two wings and with an approximate height of 70 cm which is similar to a chair, and a folding screen called as "yeni dünya" (new world) without fabric and having three or four wings and one and a half meters in height. Besides, two or three chairs or stools would be enough for the play. Nevertheless, even the absence of any of them does not even prevent the play from being played. The reason for the fabricless screen is the necessity of an empty folding screen, which is located in the center of a four-side square full of audience enabling the holistic visuality for them to see the entire screen. Aforementioned two or three parts of the decor represent different venues

such as homes or offices. The audiences are told what these places are; thus invigorative narration takes the place of realistic narration. A band / orchestra consisting of *zurnacılar, çifte naracılar* and *tefçiler* sit at a corner of a square, on the stage. The players would change costumes in a place surrounded by curtains or in a tent called *pusat (*equipment*) room* or *sandık(*chest*) room.*

A kind of comedy, farce, which is based on entertaining the audience through situation and is also characterized by physical humor, is common in Ortaoyunu. There occur broadly stylized performances on fight scenes. In that sense, physical humor is a typical characteristic of Ortaoyunu. Furthermore, Ortaoyunu allows for humor arising from phrase-mongering or puns.

In Ortaoyunu, all structural and technical features serve for setting up the interrelation between and among the play-players-audience. Ortaoyunu is first and foremost an open-space play. "Performing publicly / on-the-eye" and "Theatrical Abstraction" are the defining characteristics of Ortaoyunu in that they result from the idea that the audience watch the play on an awareness and they are willing to have a common enthusiasm, which is also the traditional feature of the Asian Theatre and seen in the entire theater concepts oriented towards reconstructing the spectator-player relationship at present. (Tekerek, 2001:78)

Ortaoyunu, with a circular stage scheme, is a type of play that is redirected according to the relationship between the audience and the play, or to the response of the audience which is called as "open style". Because the stage is round, players would change their locations on the stage so that they enable all of the audience to see the performers. Although the play is mainly based of an oral-performance culture, actions and attitudes are also of great importance, which is ultimately decisive in the success of the play.

Ortaoyunu is comprised of stereotyped characters who are easily and immediately recognized with their speech, behavior and clothing. The music that starts to play already gives an idea about which character is joining in on the stage even before entering the field of play. Each character reflects all the specific features of the society or the region they belong to. Along with certain clothing, dress, attitude, behavior, and choice of words, the characters also distort their speeches due to the effect of the specific region, a particular occupation or disability requirements. Main characters, *Pişekar* and *Kavuklu*, have an outward-looking, extraverted personality, without any effort to seem like somebody else, and have a character trait exposing their internal responses immediately.

Pişekar is the one who directs the play carrying an instrument called *şakşak* (slapstick) in the hand. His very common characteristics would be as follows: Everyone's temperament leads his talks; he laughs to the face, knows to be hypocritical, appeases conflicts or breaks up the fights. He is

a real dissembler, a mediator, a reconciler, sober, and solemn; he knows to hold his tongue when necessary and has a flexible personality. He gives advice, guides, and mediates. He knows the social conventions and rules of good manners. Although superficial, he knows a little bit of everything. He is also a curtain twitcher, a negotiator and a peacemaker. He is an entrepreneur but not a real worker. He generally does not have a tendency to change the established system. He knows how to show everything better than it actually is. He calls the tune if there is an opportunity for deriving benefit from. Pişekar is, all in all, one of the main characters of Ortaoyunu.

Another main character of Ortaoyunu is ***Kavuklu*** who the main laughter-inducer and main buffo of Ortaoyunu. He is the second player who directs the play with Pişekar. Although all the players appear and disappear throughout the play, Kavuklu always remains on stage. Kavuklu is included in each and every complicated circumstance during play. He plays oxymoronic; he acts as if he did not know, yet he does know, or did not see. He takes out everyone's interest to help develop the play. Kavuklu is a bare representative of the public morality, understanding, and commonsense. He is rather straightforward and declares his thoughts without any hesitation; therefore, he encounters dilemmas and catastrophes. He always struggles to make a living; and because he does not have a permanent job, he perpetually tries to make ends meet. Last but not least he is daredevil and has a courageous characteristic.

Çelebi **(Chalabi)** represents a persona of a property owner, spendthrift, and womanizer. Çelebi is always in a role of a rich spendthrift and a son of a well-known family as their only heir. He is considerably literate and speaks perfect Turkish with an Istanbul dialect. He also has a flashy style of clothing. *Zenne* is a male player who plays a role of a female beloved or a loose woman. In other words, male players act as **Zenne** in Ortaoyunu and they make up eminently to look like women in appearance. Besides Zenne takes part in the play as the daughter, wife or acquaintance of Kavuklu or Pişekar, s/he can have connections with the other characters as of love affairs or assets and liabilities. *Cüce* (midget) or *Kambur* (hump): They came into view with Kavuklu at the beginning of the play. They are physically or mentally disabled characters walking behind him, and they are called as "Follower of Kavuklu". Apart from the characters mentioned above, various characters (like *Tuzsuz Deli Bekir*) belonging to different religious and ethnic backgrounds such as Albanian, Jewish, Rumelian, Laz, of Kastamonu, of Kayseri, Tiryaki, Matiz, Persian, Kurdish, Greek, Arabian or Armenian that took their places in the Ottoman society of the period are also included as the representatives of interest groups.

Ortaoyunu was influenced by the Western Theatre in its own development process. This influence sometimes showed itself as the use of topics and techniques of Western plays or the adaptations of several plays

of playwriters such as Moliere into Ortaoyunu. It also brought with it the moving of the play to the indoor scene. Towards the end of the 19th century, with the influence of the westernization phenomenon in the country, at one hand while Ortaoyunu continued on the streets, on the other hand it moved to indoor theatre stage and took a new form named *tuluat*, which is a kind of improvisational theatre and can be described as eulogy show in the Ottoman culture and entertainment life. Tuluat was also named as "curtained theatre" by the Ortaoyunu players. Tuluat theatre loosened the classical structure of Ortaoyunu and added itself a number of new parts such as canto, duetto, and western texts.

After the first quarter of the 20th century, together with the collapse of the Ottoman State and the establishment of the new Republic of Turkey, the country experienced major changes. Drastic changes included many areas from writing, clothing, and calendar to judicial system. These changes also affected the traditional theatre, yet it could not keep pace with the occurring changes and had difficulty in adapting itself to the new reality. So, even though the last remaining masters of Ortaoyunu -such as Naşit or Dümbüllü- tried to maintain their art, Ortaoyunu gradually disappeared and vanished completely without having a chance to reach the present days. Nevertheless, quite a few number of theatre groups, which benefit from Ortaoyunu techniques and stage improvisation-based plays, struggle to maintain this tradition.

2. Commedia dell'Arte and in the XVI. Siecle in Europe

Interference of the church in all aspects of life in the Middle Ages, the rigid legislation of the inquisition, the demonization of laughter (as humor and laughter used to be considered to be a threat against the authority of the rulers), brought about the carnival and fun-fair culture that had its own jurisdiction that enabled people to feel free to enjoy themselves without the fear of the Church. This entertainment culture, as a means of alternative to the holy festivals, was comprised of days that created a platform on which everyone was considered to be equal and could approach one another and have fun on equal grounds. The Church decreed that, from time to time, people needed a means of outlet of something fun and releasing, just as the olive oil barrels needed airing to get the excess gas out of them (Batin(a) 2005:31). As well as the usual carnivals, some other festivals were 'feast of fools' *festa stultorum*, 'feast of the ass' *festum asinorum*, and Easter laughter *risus pascalis*. A humorous version of each holy festival was also adopted and celebrated by the public. These funfairs provided a platform where the public released their freewill (Bahtin (a), 2005:31). They made fun of the king, the papacy, the clergy and the other institutions of the Church and have fun. These festivals during which outdoor funfairs were set up where midgets, giants, strange creatures and trained animals displayed special

shows were a good example of the humorous versions of the holly festival (Bahtin, 2005:31). These fair and carnival grounds and markets became the venues where the Commedia dell'Arte actors put on performances and earned their living by attracting the crowds.

Commedia dell'Arte came about around the end of the 15th, beginning of the 16th centuries. To put it in a different way, around the time when the public started to question the authority of the Church and its power weakened and Renaissance era started in Italy and moved into the whole of Europe rapidly. However, there are many different theories as to its origins in different sources. (Brocket, 2000:159) One school of theory tries to trace it back to the Atelian Persians of Rome who were guarded by the travelling miming performers of the Middle Ages. A substantial indicator to this theory is the similarities in the typical characters of the both type. Another school attributes its origins to the Byzantine mimers who most likely headed west after the fall of the Constantinapole in 1453. Another school claims that it flourished out of the improvisations of Terentius and Plautus's comedias.

Also with a good look into it, similarities between Commedia dell'Arte and the British folk plays (Mumming Plays) is possible to observe by means of main characters, the development of plots, costume changing, both being performed in public outdoor areas, village commons, and market places (Tcuk:2012).

In both types it takes part death and resurrection motives and -yet again- both include the conflicts of good and evil, black and white, or light and darkness. These plays, which have been performed so as to beg for prosperity and abundance, even exist in today's world with slight deviation from the originals in the mean time. At certain times of the year, people dress up, some as an old wise man with a false beard and white turban, holding a stick, some as a camel with a bell hanging down his neck and a saddle on his back, some wearing a cone on his head, holding a stick, his face painted black and walk around. There was also a female character put on by a male actor dressed up as a young girl for whom the men fought over. They put on a fight over the girl. The one with the black-painted face would kill the old man, the girl would cry over his body. Then she would put nuts in his mouth and the dead man would rise. The good and bad characters, girls the men fought over, dying heroes or iagos, the rise of the death and variations of these sorts of plots were the themes of the Mummers Play.

The themes of death and resurrection also show up often in Comedia dell'Art as well as Mummers Plays. The plot in these plays usually develop around the killings of the hero or the hero's being killed by his opponent. This battle is usually over a woman and the doctor arrives after the death of one party and rises the dead by a devilish and magical solution. (Tuck:2012)

The one with the black mask is the older version of Arleccino. As for the Mummers, they entertain and welcome the New Year. Mummers are thought to have a history reaching back to early Egypt, pagan Rome and European countries such as England, France and Germand due to maintain folk customs. It is also believed that for these traditions passing down from generation to generation, the immigrants took for these traditions to America.

Europe was experiencing early Renaissance and the late Middle ages in the 16th century. In fact, these two eras co-existed. Historians believe, though the characteristics of the Middle Ages were still prominent as late as fifteen hundreds, they accept that both eras trace back to as early as 1300s. The forces that brought about the end of the Middle Ages were effective in the initiation of the Renaissance too. In these centuries, the feudalism declined, cities got bigger, increasing power of the heirs and the dominance of the church on education and daily dwellings triggered a rebellious attitude. (Brocket:2000.137)

Corruption in the papacy also exposed the church to the influences of the terrestrial impacts. Arguments began to rise on the legitimacy of the judicial agency of the Church on behalf of the Roman King. During the exile of the papacy (it was moved to Avignon as a result of disagreements on ruling of papacy), many of the small Roman state rulers attempted to assume its powers. Rivalry amongst them rose prominently. Support from the rulers towards scientist, writers and artists began to be seen as a sign of enlightenment. As respect for individuality and its virtues escalated, artists that were accredited for their individual achievements established themselves and took over the anonymous writers and craftsmen of the Middle Ages. The classical mythology, history and fiction work replaced the subject of the holly scripts and theology. (Brockett, 2000:138)

We find forms of Commedia dell'Arte throughout the transition period from the Middle Ages to Renaissance in which all these developments took place. There is no recorded information on the definite origins of these improvised public performances that took place in the commons and market areas. However, it is certainly not insignificant that the public celebrated a form of performing arts in their own rights while the tragedia and the commedia had a life within the locked away palace grounds. It might also be attributed to the changes that the 16th century brought about to the people of Italy. These public performers could also be the successor of the jugglers and jesters of the Middle Ages. (Nutku, 1985:143)

Commedia dell'Arte bares two fundamental features: improvisation and having fixed stocked characters. The performers set off from a pre-established scenario and improvise their acting and dialogues around it and always finish up along the lines of this fixed scenario, making use of

special rehearsed routines inserted into the plays. Actors played each stock character dressed in the typical costumes and put on the typical disposition of each character repeatedly. The performers would stick to acting the same stereotype in each performance and this would prompt laughter amongst their audience. Beolce, who used the stage name 'Ruzzante' and performed the bigmouth Paduan peasant would be a typical example of the characterizations. Beolce made his fame and got established very quickly. Other character types were developed for different scenarios and gradually they joined to form famous public improvisation groups.

The plays used to be written for two types of characters predominantly: serious types and the comic types. The most significant serious characters were the 'lovers'. The male lover (*comic innamorato*) would take all sorts of risks for his lover and if the female lover is also found of him, she would face rigorous trials under the oppression of her family to find ways to meet her lover secretly. The comic characters were of three types: The greedy old men, the young sweethearts and the scheming servants (*zanni*). Pantalone was the main old man character. He was a wealthy Venetian merchant. He resembled Pappus of Attelian comedia. He was greedy, clumsy old man, always taken for a ride by his daughter and continuously tricked out of his money by his lovers. His early representation was him wearing a red cape which in later years was adopted to a black one, he wore hand-knitted Turkish shoes. He put on dark mask, had a peck-nose, grey hair and a goatee.

Another old-man type character was Dottore. Dottore, a Bolognese doctor of law was the representation and the successor of the Roman comedian character Dosennus. He was often cheated by his wife and was putty in the hands of his servants. He even performed surgical operations using his fake doctorate title. He was a good friend of Pantalone. On a brief note, he was an educated wag. His costume was black academic dress satirizing Bolognese scholars of the time. His appearance was completed by a wide-brimmed hat and a black mask with red cheeks and a short beard.

Main young comic character Capitano was a soldier, and also a particularly pompous character. He could always be found bragging about his conquests in both love and war, only to be exposed as a cowardly liar by the end of the performance. He was a resembled the Roman comedia character Miles Gloriosus. He defied everybody putting on ridiculous performances of bravado but his fear of confrontation would always come through. His mask had a long nose and a mustache. Another comic character Scaramuccia, invariably drunk, was sometimes a soldier and other times a servant.

The most intriguing characters of this theater type were the servants. Arlecchino (Harlequin) was a charming pick-pocketer and beggar and he made his entrance to stage with somersaults. He wore tatty colorful material

with random patches and a mask with foolish and crafty expression. Brighella, another servant character, had a devious expression and would not hesitate to take his victim's lives in the dark streets using his sharp dagger. In contrast, Arlecchino carried a wooden dagger. He wore baggy trousers, a cape, a ruffled hat and carried a mandolin. Pulchinella who had a hunchback and a long nose was another servant character and was a descendant of the Attelian Comedian character Maccus. He was merciless, devious, and selfish, yet also had charming aspects to his disposition. The most famous female servant was Colombina. Frivolous, charming, often with strikingly ravishing looks, she sang and danced in her performances.

Similarities between Commedia dell'Arte and 'Ortaoyunu'

It is obvious that Commedia dell'Arte and Ortaoyunu draw parallels in their characteristics even though they existed in different geographies and eras in time. It could be even said that Ortaoyunu in particular was heavily influenced by the earlier. Research would reveal the fact that both genres originating from the pagan traditions overlap in a lot of aspects even though Commedia dell'Arte matured into its distinct style towards the end of the 15th century and Ortaoyunu towards the end of the 18th century. We could name Mummers Plays and Village performances amongst these pagan performance traditions. These were ritual performances that adopted daily themes such as changes in the nature, medicinal cures, death and resurrection, abduction of virgins, presentations of daily life, revitalizing occupations, revival of agricultural traditions, animating shepherds' lives, animal impersonations, legends and storytelling, the traces of which can be seen in Anatolia as "Folk Village Plays" and in England and Scotland as "Mummers Plays".

As Ortaoyunu was performed in İstanbul, the capital of the Ottoman State, in other words as it was urbanized, it lost its ritual aspects and came into prominence as a mere form of entertainment. The short plays, dances, songs, rhymes that comprise the performances created an occasion to reflect on the contradictions of the daily life while on the other hand drawing references from the vaudeville theatre.

The table below outlines the comparison of the two genres:

Commedia dell'Arte	**Ortaoyunu**
It developed into its significantly recognised genre the period of transition from the Middle Ages to the Renaissance Era	It was fully recognized as form in the transition period from absolute Monarchy to democracy (19th century)
It originates from the 'Mummy's Plays', a Pagan ritual	It originates from the 'Peasant village plays', a Pagan ritual
The word 'Arte' means art as well as craft and its methodology. It embodies the combination of all the performance arts	The pronunciation of the word "Arte" is similar to the Turkish word "orta". "Orta" indicates the place in which the performances were staged. Ortaoyunu is a play that is staged "ortada / in public arena. "Oyun" means performance arts.
Commedia dell'Arte is performed by 'artists' who are recognized as 'masters' professional acting of their times. These master performers are the members of the guilds (Rudlin, 2000:28)	Ortaoyunu is based on a master-apprentice relationship. There is a hierarchy of roles. After gaining some skills an actor can play that another certain role.
It is based on improvisation whilst pre-established routines are made use of in a certain order. The scenario lays out the routine of plots acted in a certain order by certain characters. A summary of the story is read before the play.	It is based on improvisations, yet there is a certain order of routines for each play. Improvisation implies a performance without any written scenario.
The mastery of the actor is a substantial determiner for the success of the play. The actor takes a look at the script structure just before the play is performed. These drafts would be hang in the back-stage and the actor would enrich the frame with their mastery of acting	The mastery of the actor is a substantial determiner for the success of the play. Already-determined and rigid plot is repeated with a few reminders. Repetitions are realized within the master-apprentice relationship, so that the text is learned.
The actor is the writer of their own acting in the play. He improvises their dialogues in line with the pre-determined plot.	The actor is the writer of their own acting in the play. He improvises their dialogues in line with the pre-determined plot.
Character names, masks and costumes are fixed. The characters are stock characters.	Character names and costumes are fixed. The characters are stock characters.

The old men(vecchi): He resembled Pappus of Attelian comedia. Heis always a bit stingy, pure, flirtatious, deceived, mocked, two-faced, slanderer, combative, and unhappy man complaining of rheumatism and cough. While walking with slow movements, he suddenly rouses up for his self-interest with an unexpected agility. Women and men servants: (Servetta, Zanni)Arlecchino, Pulcinella. The player with a flexible and dynamic body, as Arlecchino, makes acrobatic moves on stage. He has a never-ending energy. He is a pitifully poor worker. He has body-hugging long skirt-pants; random patches sewn on, and wears a jacket ornated with silver thread and attached with a belt. He also wears a blackmask starting from the bottom of the face up to the top of the head, attributing a sense of African slave. Lovers : Orazio, Flavio, Isabelle, Flaminia, Lelio; (a player who plays this type of a role should be in able to speak Italian in a harmonious manner and well). Their *status quo* is higher but their infatuated conditioning puts them in a difficult situation. They wear no masks but have a heavy makeup. Il capitano: He likes solitude, He pretends to belong to a higher *statue quo*. He is a mercenary and wears uniform. He is a real prurient and a boastful silly. He carries a feathered helmet, wears big boots, left-right boots would be different from each other, and his wallet is always empty. He wears a long-nosed mask reminiscent of Phallig.	Pişekar is the one who directs the play carrying an instrument called şakşak (slapstick) in the hand. He is twofaced, and sides with status quo and he knows to be hypocritical, appeases conflicts or breaks up the fights. He is a real dissembler, a mediator, a reconciler, sober, and solemn; he knows to hold his tongue when necessary and has a flexible personality. He gives advice, guides, and mediates. He knows the social conventions and rules of good manners. Although superficial, he knows a little bit of everything. He is also a curtain twitcher, a negotiator and a peacemaker. He is an entrepreneur but not a real worker. He is one of the main characters in Ortaoyunu. He has quilted turban with a sharp end similar to börk on the head and wears green robe, green baggy,and patterned shirt. Kavuklu is the second main player and a real laughter-inducer. Kavuklu always remains on stage. Kavuklu is included in each and every complicated circumstance. He acts as if he did not know, or did not see. He takes out everyone's interest to help develop the play. Kavuklu is a bare representative of the public morality, understanding, and commonsense. He is straightforward and declares his thoughts without any hesitation; therefore, he encounters dilemmas and catastrophes. He always struggles to make a living; and because he does not have a permanent job, he perpetually tries to make ends meet. He has quilted turban with 12 slices on the head and wears red robe and baggy. Çelebi is the prodigal and the womanizer character of the play. Zenne is a male player who plays a role of a female beloved or a loose woman. Cüce (midget) or Kambur (hump): They came into view with Kavuklu at the beginning of the play. They are physically or mentally disabled characters walking behind him, and they are called as "Follower of Kavuklu". Apart from the main characters mentioned above, various characters (like Tuzsuz Deli Bekir) belonging to different religious and ethnic backgrounds such as Albanian, Jewish, Rumelian, Laz, of Kastamonu, of Kayseri, Tiryaki, Matiz, Persian, Kurdish, Greek, Arabian or Armenian that took their places in the Ottoman society of the period are also included as the representatives of interest groups.
Madidus (Latine) the old man, drunk	Matiz =old and drunkard

Wooden dagger that Arleccinonun uses =coltelli di legno) clapper = batocio	The equipment that Pişekar uses *pastav*, *şakşak* (slapstick)
Village Common = *Palanca* (Italian) *Palanque* (Spanish)	Palanga=Meydan in which Ortaoyunu performed

CONCLUSION

We can conclude on a historical perspective that both Commedia dell'Arte and Ortaoyunu bare similarities in characterization, plot patterns, and style of performing and that they resonate with the Mumming Plays and peasant/folk village plays. However, 'Ortaoyunu' lost its ritual aspects when it started to be staged in the urban cities and the entertainment aspect of it became more prominent.

It shaped its own form in time that represented the daily lives of ethnic groups in the Ottoman State in performances of music, dance, and short plays.

Both revolved around the improvisation tradition that is inherited from generations to generations by means of master-apprentice relationships. The dispositions of the characters distinguished by costumes of certain colors and accessories and the grounds (open fields) on which they were staged were the prominent features of both genres. Commedia dell'Arte's characters put on typical masks they were recognized with. In Ortaoyunu a piece of music was played for the introduction of certain characters for stage that the audience acquainted with that character. Music also had a significant place in the Commedia dell'Arte.

Though the origins of both genres trace back to the same sources, the recording times and the maturing eras of the two differ. Commedia dell'Arte seems to have been fully recognized as a form through the transition period from the Middle Ages to the Renaissance whereas Ortaoyunu in the 19th century coinciding with the end of the Ottoman State and the establishment of the Modern Turkish Republic. Both exhibit in a period in which social changes came about, different dynamics in the fields of arts, literature, economy and political arena dominated. The study of all the scripts within this framework, or to determine what they mean or what they attempt to highlight in relation to the era they came into existence may refer to other topics to be written in another study.

REFERENCES

Acun, Fatma, "Osmanlı'nın Torunları, Cumhuriyet'in Çocukları" SDÜ Fen Edebiyat Fakültesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi Mayıs 2007, Sayı: 15, ss. 39-64 And, Metin "Oyun ve Bügü Türk Kültüründe Oyun Kavramı",YKY yapı kredi yay. İstanbul 2012

And, Metin,(a) "Bizans Tiyatrosu", Forum Yayınları, Ankara, 1962

And Metin (b),1964, "Dionisos ve Anadolu Köylüsü" Elif Yay. Ankara

Bahtin, Mihail,(a) 2005, "Rabelais ve Dünyası", Ayrıntı yayınları, İistanbul

Brockett Oscar,1995, "Tiyatro Tarihi", Dost Kitabevi Yayınları, Ankara

Güvenç, Bozkurt "Antropoloji" Anadolu Üniversitesi açık Öğretim Fakültesi yayınları s.52

Kudret, Cevdet Ortaoyunu, Türkiye İş Bankası Kültür Yayınları, Ankara 1973, s: 1

Nutku, Özdemir, 1985) ,"Dünya Tiyatrosu Tarihi", Cilt.I. Remzi kitabevi Yayınları, İstanbul

Pekman, Yavuz, "A Propos du Ortaoyunu," UN OEIL SUR LE BAZAR, L'espace D'un Instant, Paris, 2010, s: 35-41

Rudlin, John, 2000, Commedia dell'Arte Oyuncular için el kitabı, Mitos Boyut yayınları, Kültür Dizisi:38 İstanbul

Sokullu, Sevinç, 1979, "Türk Tiyatrosunda komedyanın Evrimi" Kültür Bakanlığı Yay. Ankara

Tekerek,N, 2007, "Köy Seyirlik Oyunları, Seyirlik Uygulamalarıyla 51 Yıllık Bir Amatör Topluluk:Ankara Deneme Sahnesi ve Uygulamalarından İki Örnek: Bozkır Dirliği Ve Gerçek Kavga" A.Ü. DTCF Tiyatro Araştırmaları Dergis, 24: ISSN: 1300-1523

Tekerek,Nurhan, 2001,"Popüler Halk Tiyatrosu Geleneğimizden Çağdaş Oyunlarımıza Yansımalar" Kültür Bakanlığı Yayınları, Ankara

Töre, Enver, "Türk Tiyatrosunun Kaynakları" Studies International Periodical For the Languages, Literature and History of Turkish or Turkic Volume 4 /1-II Winter 2009 Erkek,H, Buttanrı,M (Editörler) "Türk Tiyatrosu" Anadolu Üniversitesi yay. Eskişehir 2013

Tuck, Bill., Death and Resurrection in the English Folk Play and Italian Comedia dell'Arte, Mummers

Unconvention, Bath, 2012.

http://www.mummersunconvention.com/symposium/symposium-programme-2012/symposium-2012-abstracts/ 20.04.2014

www.folkplay.info/Confs/Tuck2012.pdf 20.04.2014

Karadağ, Nurhan (1978), Köy Seyirlik Oyunlar›, Ankara: Türkiye İş Bankası Yayınlar

http://turkoloji.cu.edu.tr/HALKBILIM/3.php 24.04.2014

**http://web.abo.fi/karen/special/steatern/arkiv/2005/material/mummers_play/mummings.htm l 23.04.2014

http://www.phillymummers.com/history.htm 01.06.2014

http://www.tiyatronline.com/yazarlar/54/haber/226/okan-metin-karagoz-ile-orta-oyunu-tarihlerinin-karsilastirmasi-i

*Metin And, in his work "Dionisos and Anatolian Villager", explains those seven stages as follows: 1-a disguised player who wants to be anyone else but himself 2- There is no scene, but the play gained a ceremonial nature by procession. It has religious objectives about beliefs. 3- Metaphors are produced by wearing animal skins and horns, with a particular action such as passing away and resurrection imitative magic is performed. The following stages are more related to the setting of the stages about the history of the theatre, reorganizing the indoors etc…

Management and Strategy Studies

KNOWLEDGE MANAGEMENT IN MULTINATIONAL CORPORATIONS

Ebru AYKAN[1]

ABSTRACT

The competitive environment in which the corporations operate makes their activities and effective management difficult. Corporations seeking a sustainable competitive advantage in this continuously changing and developing environment have turned to knowledge management which is a systematic approach to find, understand and use the information in order to reach their goals. Multinational corporations operating in national and international markets ensure the correct transfer of the information coming either from the companies themselves or from their branches or from the outside environment by passing through processes like gathering, collecting, distributing and implementing and contribute to create value for the organization in order to reach their goals. With the knowledge management practices, these corporations are informed about the changing and developing environment, they can respond these changes very quickly and most importantly they can develop strategies for the future.

In this study, "Knowledge Management In Multinational Corporations" is examined in various aspects. Within this purpose, information about the definition and types of the knowledge will be given first, the definition, process, elements, and purposes of the knowledge management will then be explained, and finally the knowledge management in multinational corporations will be emphasized.

Keywords: KNOWLEDGE MANAGEMENT, MULTINATIONAL CORPORATIONS

INTRODUCTION

The competitive environment in which the corporations operate makes their activities and effective management difficult. Corporations seeking a sustainable competitive advantage in this continuously changing and developing environment have turned to knowledge management which is a systematic approach to find, understand and use the information in order to reach their goals. Multinational corporations operating in national and international markets ensure the correct transfer of the information

1 Doç. Dr., Erciyes Üniversitesi, Uygulamalı Bilimler Yüksekokulu, İnsan Kaynakları Yönetimi Bölümü, 38039, Kayseri-TÜRKİYE. Tel: 0.533.3772007 Email: aykane@erciyes.edu.tr

coming either from the companies themselves or from their branches or from the outside environment by passing through processes like gathering, collecting, distributing and implementing and contribute to create value for the organization in order to reach their goals. With the knowledge management practices, these corporations are informed about the changing and developing environment, they can respond these changes very quickly and most importantly they can develop strategies for the future.

In this study, "Knowledge Management In Multinational Corporations" is examined in various aspects. Within this purpose, information about the definition and types of the knowledge will be given first, the definition, process, elements, and purposes of the knowledge management will then be explained, and finally the knowledge management in multinational corporations will be emphasized.

1. DEFINITION AND TYPES OF KNOWLEDGE

Knowledge is a subject that has started to be interested by economists (Hayek, 1945; Arrow, 1962; Marshall, 1965), theorists of organization (March & Simon, 1958) and philosophers (Polanyi, 1966) (Kakabadse et al., 2003) in the last century. Although the first recorded studies about learning and knowledge date back to Plato and Aristoteles, thinkers like Daniell Bell (1973), Peter Ducker (1993), and Alvin Toffler (1970, 1980) and the thinker Michael Polanyi (1958, 1967) came to the fore in the studies conducted in the modern age. Polanyi's studies formed the basis of the popular knowledge management theories and books of Ikujiro Nonaka (1991, 1995), a Japanese organizational learning guru (O'Dell et al., 2003).

Knowledge is a concept that differs depending on the topic being studied and having no consensus on its definition in the literature. In general, knowledge can be defined as data that can be organized, grouped, modeled, and realized in the style to create value for the corporation (Özgener, 2003). While knowledge can also be expressed as an attempt to justify the belief of enhancing the capacity of an entity for an effective activity, knowledge can be examined through various perspectives (Alavi & Leidner, 2001). In Table 1, the various aspects of the knowledge, the definitions of knowledge in these perspectives and knowledge management practices are summarized.

Table 1. Viewpoints to knowledge and knowledge practices

Viewpoints	**Definitions**	**Knowledge Management Practices (KM)**
Knowledge versus data	While data is a phenomenon and unprocessed information, information signifies the personalized information.	Knowledge management focuses on easing the assimilated information and making it useful for individuals.
Mood	Knowledge is the status of knowing and understanding.	Knowledge management includes the development of understanding and learning of individuals by obtaining information.
Object	Knowledge is an object that can be stored and processed.	Key knowledge management concept is creating and management of knowledge.
Process	Knowledge is a process of benefiting from experiences.	Knowledge management focuses on knowledge flow and creation, sharing and distribution processes of information.
Information access	Knowledge is the access conditions for information.	Knowledge management focuses on the creation of information content and the necessary arrangements to reach this content.
Capacity	Knowledge is a potential for effective activity.	Knowledge management is associated with the understanding of strategic technical knowledge and the formation of basic skills.

Source: M. Alavi and D.E. Leidner (2001), "Review: Knowledge Management and Knowledge Management Systems: Conceptual Foundations and Research Issues", **MIS Quarterly**, Vol.25, No. 1, 111.

Knowledge is classified into two groups as information based on practical experiences (Tacit) and information based on theoretical basis (Explicit) (Sandars, 2004). Polanyi and Nanoka also state that there are two types of knowledge; explicit and tacit. Instead of these terms, non-formal/uncoded and formal/coded knowledge (O'Dell et al., 2003) or formal and informal knowledge terms are also used. Formal knowledge is written information that can be located in formal models, documents and databases and can be expressed corporeally. Non-formal knowledge is the wealth of know-how that is hidden in people's minds and finds its roots in the depths of learning and experiences (Özgener, 2003). For non-formal knowledge, information

of how a bicycle can be ridden and how a computer can be used can be shown as the most general examples (Linde, 2001).

Non-formal knowledge is seen as particularly problematic for knowledge management practices. Because it is very difficult to show this knowledge in the rules or plans. In addition, such knowledge cannot be expressed and told easily and simply (Linde, 2001), it is not easy to identify its details, and it has short-lived and transient characteristics (O'Dell et al., 2003).

Many authors have made different classifications about knowledge. Blumentritt and Johnston (1999) classify knowledge as organized, collective, social, and tangible information (Blumentritt & Johnston, 1999). Table 2 shows the types, diversities, and development stages of knowledge by years.

When the below table is examined, it is seen that the knowledge varies according to the authors' viewpoints. While the literature about the knowledge management explains the knowledge conceptually, it focuses especially on the organizational dimension of the knowledge. According to knowledge management, information is firstly created on the individual level and spreads then to the organizational dimension by passing through various information processes. In this framework, information can be defined in the most basic sense as "the most basic input of any kind of organizational activity". With organizational activities, various activities carried out both around the units and around the organization for efficiency purpose are expressed. These activities may be a strategy of an organization for adaptation to its environment and may also be the policies to be implemented in the future to increase the efficiency by the organization. This knowledge is composed of the sum of all sorts of both inter-organizational and outer-organizational dynamics that support and enable the realization of such organizational activities (Sağsan, 2003).

Table 2. Classification of Knowledge

Authors	Types, diversities and development stages of knowledge
Bacon (1605)	• Defines the natural and universal pure knowledge as the enlightening with the light of people who denominate other creatures in the heaven.
Socrates (Plato, 1953)	• Defines it as pieces of knowledge that can be identified, displayed, and discussed (completely personal) with agreements and previsions which is expressed as Mythos, • Expresses the knowledge derived from addition, reading, explanation, rule, principles and reasons as Logos. Mythos and Logos represent the information which is related and complementary with each other.
Polanyi (1958, 1996)	• Formal knowledge, • Non-formal knowledge.
Schank and Abelson (1977)	• General knowledge, • Private knowledge, • Specialized knowledge.
Boswell (1979)	• Either we know our own subject or • We know where to find information about the subject.
Frantzich (1983)	• Resident knowledge, • Access knowledge.
Anderson (1985)	• Declarative knowledge, • Procedural knowledge, • Causal Knowledge.
Holiday & Chandler (1986)	• Knowledge as general ability, • Pragmatic knowledge, • Knowledge as a reflector.
Blacker et al., (1993)	• Adopted knowledge, • Objectified knowledge, • Socialized knowledge, • Embedded knowledge, • Coded knowledge.
Nonaka & Takeuchi (1995)	• Technical knowledge, • Cognitive knowledge.
Heron (1996)	• Proposition knowledge (theoretical ideas), • Practical knowledge (Activities about know-how), • Experience knowledge (based on experience), • Promotional knowledge (providing feedback from creative results).
Tsoukas (1996)	• "Classifying" knowledge (knowledge indicating differences between explicit and tacit knowledge).
Edvinsson & Malone (1997)	• Product information, • Routine information, • Process information.

Source: N.K. Kakabadse, A. Kakabadse and A. Kouzmin (2003), "Reviewing the Knowledge Management Literatüre: Towards a Taxonomy", **Journal of Knowledge Management**, 7, 4, 80.

In the new economy, knowledge constitutes the primary source for individuals and society. The main reasons for the growing importance of knowledge can be listed as follows (Özgener, 2003):

- Increasing competition and increasing rate of being innovative in the markets,
- Today, information is dense in the a great majority of the prosperous industries
- Emergence of the necessity of substitution of informal knowledge and formal methods due to the fact that the corporations which have to reduce their costs by competitive pressure primarily go to firing personnel,
- The fact that early leave of employment and increased labor force mobility cause information losses,
- The need for managing the complexity increased by having the opportunities to find outsourcing for the small and medium-sized companies,
- The fact that the changes in strategic directions result in a loss of information in a specific area
- New developments in the markets where information assets are traded,
- The fact that businesses compete on the information axis and the majority of the work (about 70%) is based on knowledge,
- The necessity of the lifelong learning is inevitable.
- As a result, it is seen that the knowledge has a critical importance for the organizations that want to maintain a sustainable competitive advantage in a globalized world. Owing to constantly changing and renewing information, corporations are able to renew themselves and adapt to their surroundings, and increase their competition chance by determining their superiority and weaknesses.

2. DEFINITION OF KNOWLEDGE MANAGEMENT

Knowledge management which is shown as the only solution to provide competition advantage in the new century (DeTienne & Jackson, 2001) is an interdisciplinary business model for all approaches (production, coding, sharing, learning and renewal) of knowledge in the organizations (Sağsan, 2003). Knowledge management refers to a systematic approach that the organization finds, understands and uses the information to achieve its goals (Pataki, 2002).

When the organizational knowledge is clearly managed, it is used to accomplish the mission of the organization. Knowledge management, therefore, is a conscious strategy to help ensure that the right information is delivered to the right people at the right time and information is mobilized in the process of sharing information by the employees and improving organizational performance (O'Dell et al., 2003). In other words, knowledge management can also be defined as the ability to create value and retain more value from core business skills (Tiwana, 2003).

Knowledge management is based on various theoretical bases. First of all, the organizational learning field by Argyris and Schon in the late 1970s and then popularized by Senge in 1990s forms the basis for knowledge management (Drew, 1999). Since the organizational learning contains the processes where the new information and perspectives are developed to influence behaviors (DeTienne & Jackson, 2001), it forms the basis for knowledge management at the point of creation and sharing of knowledge. In addition, information technologies and strategic control literature also form the basis for knowledge management. As a tool of knowledge management, Kaplan and Norton brought Balance Score Card applications to the agenda (Drew, 1999). In addition, disciplines such as artificial intelligence, information based systems, software engineering, reengineering, human resources management and organizational behaviors also form the basis for knowledge management (Özgener, 2003). Figure 1 shows the evolution of knowledge management from the 1950s to present.

When Figure 1 is examined, the management tools used by the managers from 1950s to 2000s are seen. The result that emerges as a common point in all these applications is the necessity of renewing the information. The necessity of renewing and managing information has resulted today in the development of knowledge management. In the developments after 2000s, it has been focused on creating information synergy where the information can be accessed and used by everyone by developing innovation concept of knowledge management practices. In this approach which is based on global innovation and knowledge management, online business analytic information technologies and their applications are used, they express a structure which allow organizational structures consisting of unlimited, streaming and transient societies and multidirectional communication between them and supporting the autonomous decision-making management processes.

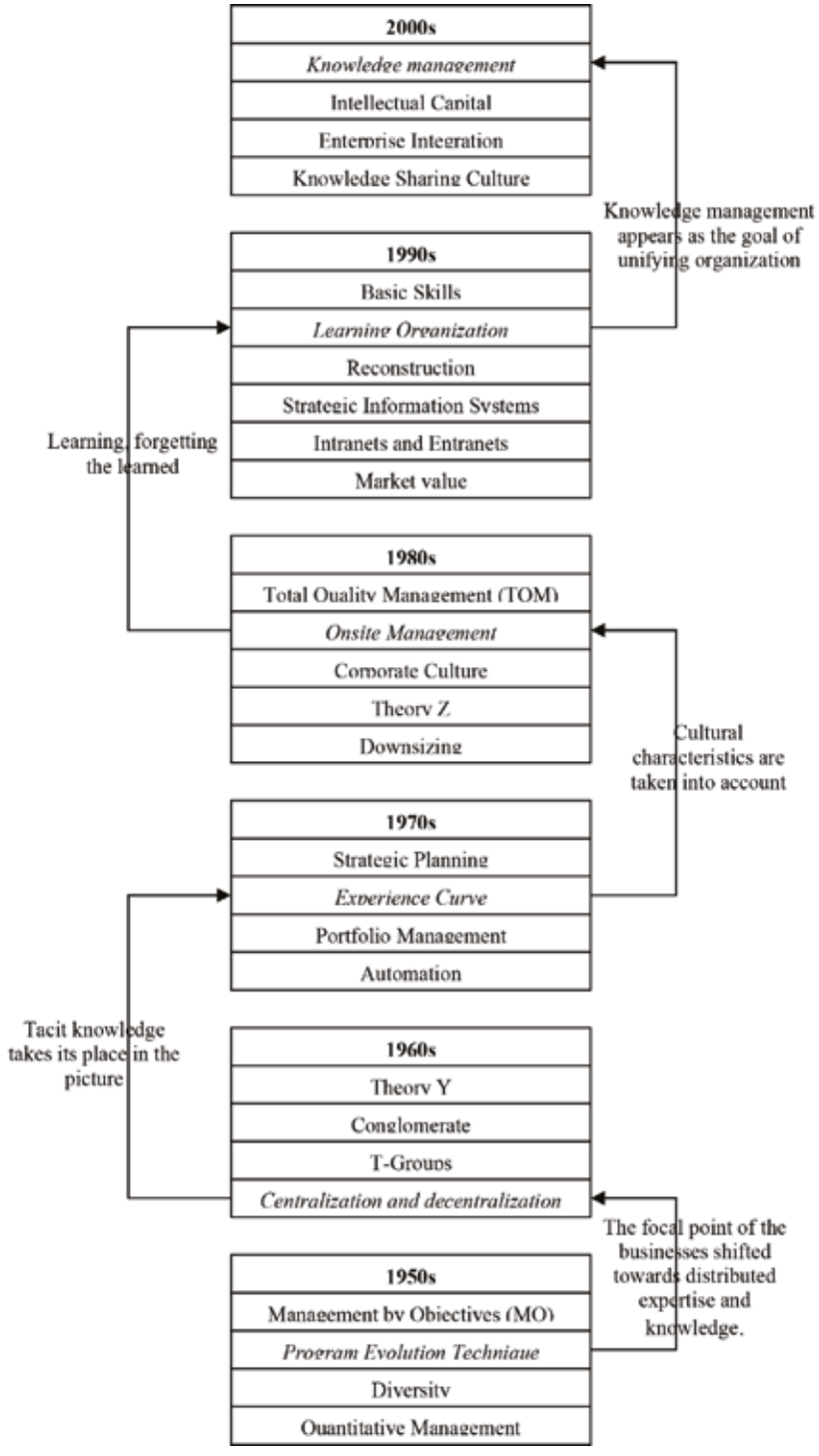


Figure 1. Development of knowledge management from the 1950s to the present

Source: Tiwana, A. (2003), **Knowledge Management**, Dışbank Books-5, Translated: E. Özsayar, Kelebek Press, s. 23.

3. PROCESS, ELEMENTS AND OBJECTIVES OF KNOWLEDGE MANAGEMENT

Even though the knowledge management and the transfer of the practices sound easy, it is difficult to implement. This apparently requires the introduction of basic elements of simple process. Most companies do not know where to start their works on this subject. The knowledge management process helps corporations in this sense. The knowledge management process consists of four stages (Sandars, 2004; Alavi & Leidner, 2001):

1. **Creation of Knowledge***:* In the phase of creation of knowledge, developing new ideas or renewal of the existing ideas are expressed with formal and informal knowledge in the organizations. Nonaka (1994) expresses that the formation of organizational knowledge containing the relationships between formal and informal knowledge dimensions as well as knowledge flows at individual, group and organizational level takes place in four ways; Socialization, expression, learning and combining (Alavi & Leidner, 2001).
2. **Collection of Knowledge:** It is seen that knowledge is forgotten sometime after being created and learned. Therefore, organizations create their own memories in order to collect and store this information. Information about past experiences, experiences, and events that affect today's activities in the organization is described as memory of that organization. Organizational memory is more comprehensive than individual memories that include other elements such as organizational culture, transformation, structure, information archive.
3. **Transfer of knowledge:** At this stage, it is very important for the organizations to get the right knowledge at the right time and transfer it to the right person in order to make and apply effective decisions. Knowledge sharing is performed by the way of consultation or transferring the experiences (Sandars, 1999).
4. **Application of knowledge (evaluation):** Knowledge is meaningless for an organization unless it is used in decision making and problem solving. Application of the decisions is the most difficult task of this process. Technology is seen as a supporting element in the application of knowledge.

5.

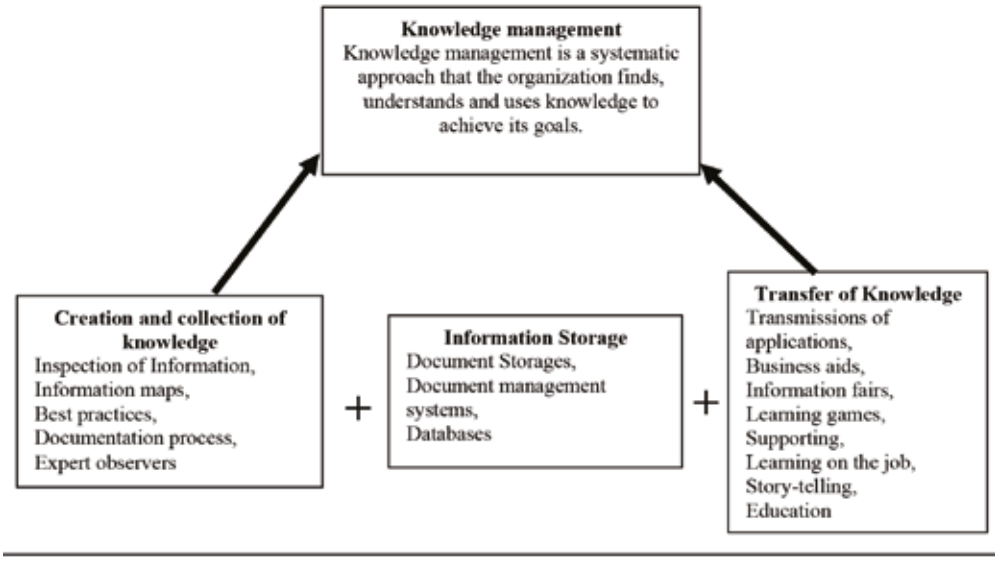


Figure 2. Strategies of knowledge management process
Source: G.E. Pataki (2002), "Why Knowledge Management/Transfer?", www.Essionplanning/Workgroups/knowledgemgmtTransferfind/Report.pdf (Date of access 19.07.2015), 3.

Many strategies are used in the creation, storage and transfer of knowledge in the organizations. While the practices of these strategies vary from organization to organization, they are generally applicable to every organization. The strategies applied in the knowledge management process are summarized in the figure above.

The aim of knowledge management in organizations is not to manage all information but to manage the collective knowledge and skills of the entire workforce to achieve its specific goals. In knowledge management, it is necessary to ensure that the right knowledge is delivered to the right person at the right time. There are three basic elements for the knowledge management to achieve this (Pataki, 2002):

- Human: Human is the basic element in the formation of knowledge. Knowledge is formed in the human mind as a result of complex operations. Human can analyze and apply this information. The success of all knowledge management efforts is assessed mostly by the role of the human factor in the process (Kalkan et al., 2003).
- Process: The organizational structure should be designed as flexible in order to benefit from the technology at the highest level. Knowledge is available both inside and outside the corporation. The more

important it is to manage internal information for the corporation, the more important it is to manage external information. The challenge here is about encouraging the people, who need to find, acquire, create, organize, share and transfer the knowledge, to use it. Incentive systems of a corporation are designed to make it easier for employees to share knowledge with people outside of their departments and functions by determining from which channel and how the employees can access the information (Özgener, 2003: 4).

- Technology: It covers technological applications that support knowledge management applications, helping greatly to realize knowledge transfers and are the key elements of rapid knowledge sharing (Alavi & Leidner, 2001).

Knowledge management for organizations is applied in order to realize various purposes. In this framework, the aims of knowledge management can be listed as follows (Davenport et al., 1998):

- Creation of new knowledge within the organization,
- Bringing the valuable knowledge from the external sources to the organization,
- Management of knowledge as a resource,
- Expansion of the knowledge environment,
- The use of information accessible in organizational decisions (Sağsan, 2003),
- Provide a faster improvement (Özgener, 2003),
- Ensuring that the right knowledge reaches to the right people at the right time (Özgener, 2003),
- Evaluation and transformation of organizational knowledge into intellectual capital and performing its measurement through knowledge management (Sağsan, 2003),
- Accelerating the learning curve (Özgener, 2003).

Knowledge management manages the collective knowledge and skills of the entire labor to achieve the objectives mentioned above. Thus, they apply the strategies and reach their goals by evaluating all kinds of information activities occurring both in the or around the organization.

4. KNOWLEDGE MANAGEMENT IN MULTINATIONAL CORPORATIONS

Even though information intensity in the outcomes of the corporations increases during the industrial revolution, this process has gained momentum over the last two decades. Corporations that were trying to grow with the technological differentiation in the 1970s have turned today to shrink and develop their skills as a result of industrial developments. Therefore, knowledge management is seen as a source of competitive advantage today (Mudambi, 2002). Since the multinational corporations operate in both local and international markets, sharing and transferring the knowledge is more important for these corporations.

Knowledge management involves ensuring that the right knowledge flows to the right people at the right time to achieve organizational strategy. Thus, knowledge management helps employees to reveal and share their knowledge, skills and abilities to improve the organizational performance (Pablos, 2004).

The knowledge lies on the basis of all resources owned by the companies. The ways to create sustainable diversity and provide competitive advantage pass through the knowledge. Multinational corporations are able to survive by using explicit knowledge which is effective and efficient in the organization more than the foreign market mechanisms and by using their own abilities through its transfer (Gupta & Govindarajan, 2000). However, as in all strategic decisions, external environment is also effective in providing the knowledge flow between the corporations.

In recent years, the concept of global learning has come to the forefront with the diversification of markets. The thing making the global learning valuable in multinational corporations is the point of providing information access from the foreign markets. Providing information indirectly from different markets makes it possible for more information on the investments to be returned to the companies, thus leading to an increased performance of the corporations (Cho & Lee, 2004). In order for multinational corporations to increase their value through global learning, it is necessary for the multinational corporation to learn from outside the network (Extra-network learning) and to learn through the distribution of the information effectively and on time within the communication network of the company (Intra-network knowledge sharing) (Cho & Lee, 2004).

The flow of knowledge between the corporations is defined as the transfer of the experiences like information and ability or external market information which has a strategic value. While the transfer of experiences can be dealt by input processes such as purchasing skills, production processes

such as product design, process design and packaging design and output processes like marketing technical information, distribution expertise, the transfer of external market information similarly deals with the global information about the main competitors, consumers and suppliers (Gupta & Govindarajan, 1991). Figure 3 shows a model containing information providing ways of the multinational corporations and determining the knowledge flow.

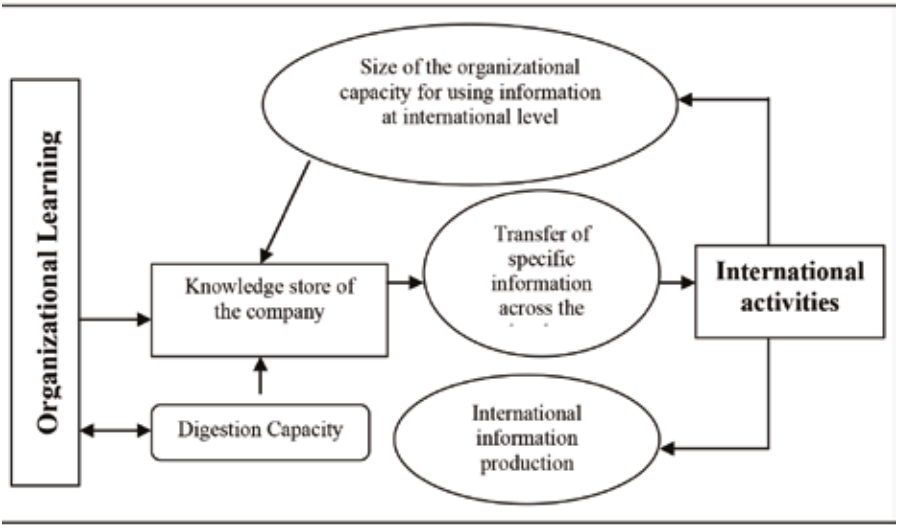


Figure 3. A model for multinational corporations to provide information
Source: P.O. Pablos, (2004), "Knowledge Flow Transfers in Multinational Corporations: Knowledge Properties and Implications for Management", **Journal of Knowledge Management**, Vol. 8, No. 6, s. 106.

As seen from the figure above, organizational or global learning is directly affected by the knowledge and digestion capacity of the company. The size of the organizational capacity of the corporation, the transferability of specific information, and the international knowledge generation also are the factors affecting the knowledge flow. The global learning of multinational corporations is also affecting the host country governments. Through foreign direct investments, information is transferred and spread throughout the channel, which in turn increases the productivity of the host country's industry. That is why governments allow and encourage multinational corporations to open branches in their own countries in order to distribute the information and benefit from this information (Cho & Lee, 2004).

In order for the multinational corporations which are considered as the actors of the international knowledge and technology transfer to share strategic information and reach their goals, they need to adapt

between their organizational learning capabilities, to respond quickly to the environmental changes, their status of coordinating the information by gathering them from different centers and their capacities to minimize costs compared to their competitors (Pablos, 2004).

How the information sharing takes place between the multinational corporations and their branches is an unclear issue in the literature. The basis of the discussions is the presence of barriers that prevent the information sharing between the units spread across the geographical areas containing different markets. These barriers are related to the factors such as how information will be created, conditions for applying information, interest and abilities of the recipient and the sender, motivational factors (Anderson, 2003).

Mudambi (2002) emphasizes that multinational corporations should have two perspectives for strengthening local competencies and managing their activities in the national and international market, their relations and knowledge flows (Mudambi, 2002):

- Micro perspective (Intra-company and Inter-company knowledge flow): The micro perspective includes the transfer of knowledge from a source to a target. This dimension carries the most crucial points of the knowledge transfer. At this dimension, knowledge flow is realized in four ways:

    1. From branch to the headquarters: This knowledge flow is also called as knowledge transfer and forms the basis of the communication networks of multinational corporations. This high-level knowledge flow empowers the central offices of multinational enterprises to play a role as knowledge brokers and to use local opportunities.

    2. From Region to Branch: This knowledge flow includes the branches to learn necessary information and to use local skills and resources. Here, the ability of obtaining information and the digestion capacity of the branch has a critical importance.

    3. From Branch to the Region: This knowledge flow can be expressed in the form of distribution of information. Information can cover a wide area including local partners, customers and suppliers.

    4. From Headquarter to the Branch: Branches use basic information advantages with this knowledge flow which is called as the traditional knowledge flow.

- Macro perspective (Clusters and relationship networks): In recent years, a great majority of the literature has been studying on industry clusters concentrated in specific geographical areas. Competitive industrial clusters can be defined as a geographical area in which

competitive companies cluster which is either established in the same industry or in the purchase relationship with the other close industries in the region or using the common technologies or sharing a special workforce pool. When these industry clusters are examined, it becomes easier to understand the competitive advantages, structure of this field and development of the industry. The R&D activities of multinational corporations are more dynamic and future-oriented in geographic clusters and the drivers of potential information distribution and creating beyond the industrial relationships existing fundamentally grow in these regions.

Gupta and Govindarajan (1991) examine the flow of knowledge in multinational corporations in two dimensions (Gupta & Govindarajan, 1991):

- The Branch's level of inclusion of the inputs from the other divisions of the corporation into the knowledge flow and
- The Branch's outputs about the other divisions of the corporation, its degree of including them into the knowledge flow

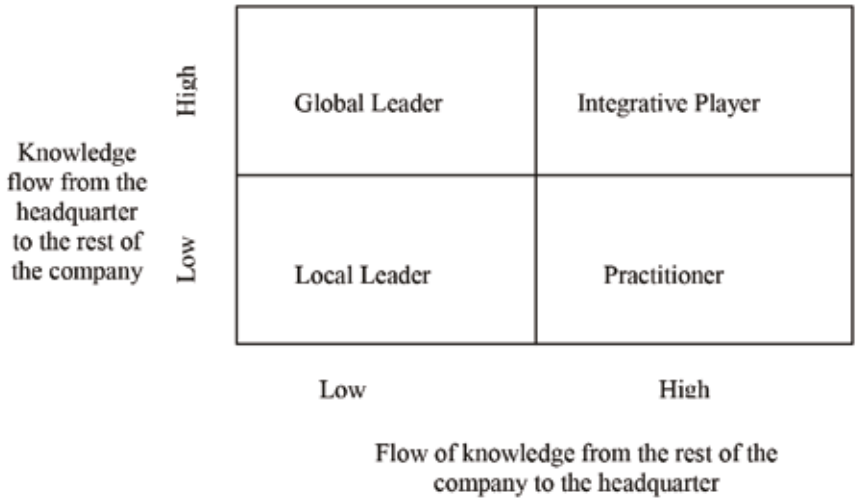


Figure 4. Knowledge flow in multinational corporations
Source: A.K. Gupta and V. Govindarajan (1991), "Knowledge Flows and the Structure of Control Within Multinational Corporation", **Academy of Management Review**, 16, 4, 774.

There are fundamental differences between a multinational corporation and its branch. In this case, the branch may participate in high or low input and output information depending on the specific situation of its corporation (such as capital, product, and knowledge) (Pablos, 2004). According to Figure 4, the branch of a multinational corporation has

different roles such as global leader, local leader, integrator player or practitioner. The main features of these roles are summarized below (Gupta & Govindarajan, 1991):

- **Global Leading Role** (High external knowledge, low internal knowledge) : The branch is in the role of being a knowledge source for the other units. While this role got used to be used only by local companies especially by the Japanese and American multinational corporations in the past, it is used today by a great majority of countries with the spread of technology (Pablos, 2004).
- **Integrative Player** (High external and internal knowledge): Integrative player role, similar to the global leader, carries the responsibility of creating the knowledge that other branches will benefit from. In addition, branches in the role of integrative player cannot provide their knowledge needs in an effective way.
- **Practitioner Role** (Low external knowledge, high internal knowledge): The branch which is in the practitioner role uses the information coming from the headquarter or from the other branches needs very little information for itself .
- **Local Leader Role** (Low internal and external knowledge): The branch in the local leader role takes the responsibility to establish local information about technical knowledge (Know How) in all of the key functional fields. In addition, this knowledge is seen as the knowledge used for the competition outside the country, where the local leader is located, created about special cases.

Nielsen and Michailova, stated that knowledge management system in multinational corporations goes through various stages (Neilsen & Michailova, 2004): Awareness, action, development and progression stages. Figure 5 shows the development phases of global knowledge management system in multinational corporations and Table 3 shows the key concepts and characteristics in the four stages of knowledge management system.

Table 3. Basic subjects and characteristics of four stages of knowledge management system

Basic subjects				
Stage	**Characteristics**	**Policy / Strategy**	**Organization/ Structure**	**Culture**
Awareness	Importance and manageability of knowledge sources are known, formed spontaneously.	There is no clear strategy. Rather than knowledge management, even the distribution of knowledge cannot be done.	It depends on the current regulations. Infrastructure of value creation from knowledge sources has not yet evolved. There is no system to combine knowledge activities.	There is no human resources management related to systematic knowledge
Taking action	The regulation of the efforts for knowledge is made, an official system is established to manage knowledge sources	Policies are designed for the creation, access, sharing and use of knowledge, focusing on the transfer of knowledge between sub-units.	New organizational structures that support the provision of indirect information from different units are being developed, information technologies are invested, and the headquarter serves as a knowledge center.	Distribution of the knowledge about the positions is made but no special trainings are given, there are barriers in the knowledge sharing
Development	A trend towards Global Knowledge Management systems, a correct trend towards active knowledge management, knowledge creation and development	Providing information not only from inside but from outside information, identifying branches as superior and global leaders	The formation of organizations learning by global knowledge networks, Using local knowledge repositories as an advantage.	Development of motivation and reward systems for collaboration, knowledge creation and sharing instead of internal competition.
Progress	Being a true e-business, integration of value systems correctly, Continuous development is seen as a key source.	Systematic design of intellectual capital, designing policies that allow branches to strengthen themselves through exchange of knowledge.	Establishing centers based on information sharing and artificial teams, using information technologies supporting knowledge formation and change.	Creating an e-thinking structure for the entire organization; Hiring various knowledge workers; the use of individual incentive systems.

Source: B.B. Nielsen and S. Michailova (2004), "Toward a Phase-Model of Global Knowledge Management Systems in Multinational Corporations" http://ep.lib.cbs.dk/download/ISBN/8791506182.pdf (Access Date: 17.07.2015), 31.

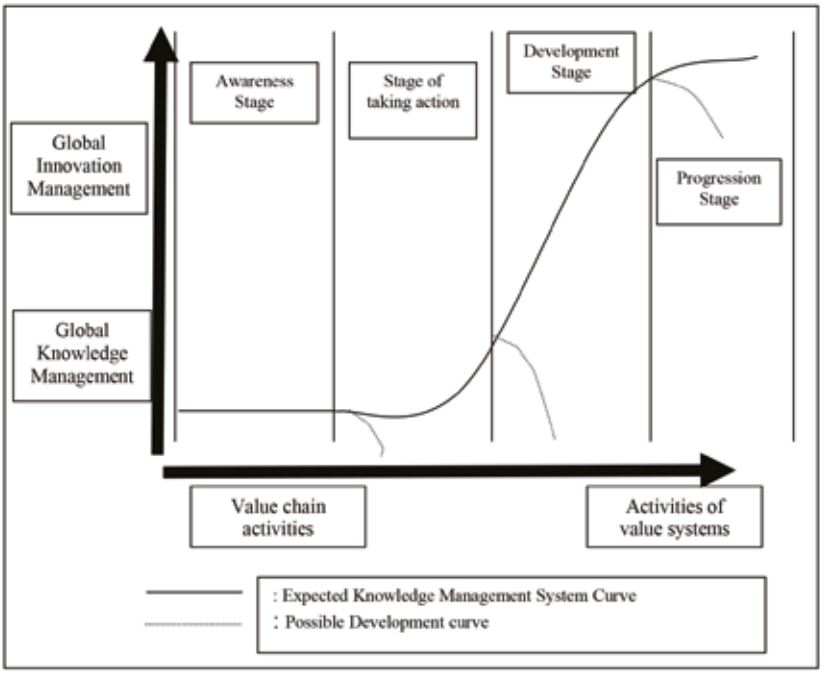


Figure 5. Development stages of global knowledge management system in multinational corporations

Source: B.B. Nielsen and S. Michailova (2004), "Toward a Phase-Model of Global Knowledge Management Systems in Multinational Corporations" http://ep.lib.cbs.dk/download/ISBN/8791506182.pdf (Erişim Tarihi: 17.07.2015), 30.

Even though there is a trend towards value systems activities from value chain activities in multinational corporations, a development is seen from global data collection to global knowledge management and global innovation management. Not all multinational corporations need these four stages. In the process starting by the recognition of knowledge as a value and a competitive advantage, the corporations are seen to change their strategies, structures and necessary human resources management practices and to renew themselves.

Table 4. MNC types and their main features in information management perspective

	Traditional MNC	**Information network MNCs**	**E-Commerce MNCs**
Value	Data	Information	Innovation
Focus	Global knowledge management; know-how transfer from the new department/ market	Global knowledge management; Creation of new knowledge and creation of innovation that will strengthen the entrepreneur	Global innovation management; Instant and continuous (mobile) sources that everyone can access knowledge
Strategic Approach	Global, productivity focused	Transnational, dispersed resource focused	Symbiotic, information synergies and innovation-focused
Knowledge management Practices	Privatization and centralization of the knowledge received from the headquarter (Information economies)	Globally networked flows, scattered information throughout the organization (Learning organization)	Information workers connected via Internet without time and space limitations (Information synergies)
Practices of Information Technologies	Traditional database systems, data storages, data mining, digital libraries and documentation user interface	Business intelligence, group support systems, intranet, multimedia technology and Graphical user interface	Online business analytics, analytical process and browser user interface
Organizational Configuration	Central hub; Divided or matrix	Integrated network; Alliances, networks and divisions	Distributed system; Unlimited, fluid and transient practice communities
Communication Patterns	One-way communication to the companies connected from Headquarters (HQ)	Companywide Two way communication	Multi-way communication in industry and cross-industry
Managerial Effects	Developing competitive advantage with value added activities	Coordination of complex processes and interests and cooperation in decisions	Different management processes allowing autonomous decision-making

Source: S. Michailova and B.B. Nielsen (2006), "MNCs and Knowledge Management: A Typology and Key Features", Journal of Knowledge Management, Vol. 10, No. 1, 46.

When Table 4 is examined, three types of models with different basic distinctions are encountered: traditional MNC, information network MNCs and E-Commerce MNCs. First of all, each model is based on a different strategic approach and basic value. Conventional MNCs are the structures in which the main source of information is formed by data,

it is the efficiency oriented, the information from the HQ is processed, traditional databases are used, the central organization structure and the one way communication are dominant and the competitive advantage consists of the activities creating the added value. The knowledge network MNC, contains a structure whose key source is formed by knowledge, and which is source focused, and shows learning organization characteristics and in which information technologies such as business intelligence, group support system are used, integrated networks in the organizational structure are present, and two-way communication and cooperation are based.

Finally, e-commerce MNCs refer to a structure which is based on innovation and information synergies, in which online business analytics information technology and practices are used, which are unlimited, allow the organizational structure formed with flowing and temporary communities and the multidirectional communication between them, and support the management processes taking decisions autonomously.

CONCLUSION

Changing of the globalized market conditions and the field and structures where the companies are operating have led to investigate the conditions and situations that will provide sustainable competitive advantage for the corporations. The fact that the knowledge is in the basis of all sources of the companies and the ways of creating a sustainable difference and providing competitive advantage pass through information has increased the tendencies of the corporations to information management. Especially for multinational corporations, which are the main actors of international activities, they have created problems of creating and sharing knowledge among the units spread over different geographical areas containing different markets. Even though how the knowledge sharing is provided between the multinational corporations and their branches is an unclear subject in literature, every corporation needs a knowledge management system that combines their own condition and objectives. A knowledge management system that will combine people, processes and technologies to provide faster and more efficient works will be achieved by providing accurate and efficient knowledge flow between branches and central companies for multinational corporations. With the knowledge management practices that express to ensure that the right knowledge reaches to the right person at the right time, these corporations gain speed and flexibility as well as a proactive thought.

REFERENCES

1. A. K. Gupta, V. Govindarajan, "Knowledge Flows and the Structure of Control Within Multinational Corporation", *Academy of Management Review*,16(4):768-792, 1991.

2. A. K. Gupta, V. Govindarajan (2000), "Knowledge Flows within Multinational Corporation", *Strategic Management Journal*, 21:473-496, 2000.

3. A. Tiwana, Bilginin Yönetimi, Dışbank Kitapları-5, Çeviren: E. Özsayar., Kelebek Matbaası, 2003.

4. B. B. Nielsen, S. Michailova (2004), " Toward a Phase-Model of Global Knowledge Management Systems in Multinational Corporations", 1-38, 2004.

http://ep.lib.cbs.dk/download/ISBN/8791506182.pdf (Erişim Tarihi: 17.07.2015).

5. C. Linde, "Narrative and Social Tacit Knowledge", *Journal of Knowledge Management,*5(2): 160-170, 2001.

6. C. O'Dell, C.J. Grayson, N. Essaides, Ne Bildiğimizi Bir Bilsek, Dışbank Kitapları-3, Çeviren: G. Günay, Kelebek Matbaası, 2003.

7. G. E. Pataki, "Why Knowledge Management/Transfer?", 1-59, 2002.

www.Essionplanning/Workgroups/knowledgemgmtTransferfind/Report.pdf (Erişim tarihi 19.07.2015).

8. J. Sandars, "Knowledge Management: Something Old, Something New!", *Work Based Learning in Primary Care*, 2: 9-17, 2004.

9. K. B. DeTienne, L.A. Jackson, "Knowledge Management: Understanding Theory and Developing Strategy", *CR*, 11(1):1-9, 2001.

10. K. R. Cho, J. Lee, "Firm Characteristics and MNC's Intra-Network Knowledge Sharing", *Management International Review, Fourth Quarter*, 44(4):435-455, 2004.

11. M. Alavi, D.E. Leidner, "Review: Knowledge Management and Knowledge Management Systems: Conceptual Foundations and Research Issues", *MIS Quarterly,* 25(1) 107-136, 2001.

12. M. Anderson, Creating and Sharing Subsidiary Knowledge in Multinational Corporations, Uppsala University, Departman of Business Studies, 1-57, 2003.

www.diva-portal.org/diva/getDocument?urn_nbn_se_uu_diva-3312-1__fulltext.pdf (Erişim Tarihi 14.07.2015).

13. M. Sağsan, "Bilgi Yönetiminin Kavramsal Çerçevesi ve Başkent Üniversitesi İletişim Fakültesi Bilgi ve Belge Yönetimi Bölümü", 1-7, 2004.

www.bilgiyönetimi.org (Erişim Tarihi: 14.07.2015).

14. N. K. Kakabadse, A. Kakabadse, A. Kouzmin, "Reviewing the Knowledge Management Literatüre: Towards a Taxonomy", *Journal of Knowledge Management*, 7(4):75-86, 2003.

15. P. O. Pablos, "Knowledge Flow Transfers in Multinational Corporations: Knowledge Properties and Implications for Management", *Journal of Knowledge Management*, 8(6):105-116, 2004.

16. R. Blumentritt, R. Johnston, "Towards a Strategy for Knowledge Management", *Techonolgy Analysis and Strategic Management*, 11(3): 287-299, 1999.

17. R. Mudambi, "Knowledge Management in Multinational Firms", *Journal of International Management*, 8:1-9, 2002.

18. S. Drew, "Building Knowledge Management Into Strategy: Making Sense of a New Perspective", *Long Range Planning*, 32(1):130-136, 1999.

19. S. Michailova, B.B. Nielsen, "MNCs and Knowledge Management: A Typology and Key Features", *Journal of Knowledge Management*,10(1):44-54, 2006.

20. Ş. Özgener, "Global Ölçekte Değer Yaratan Bilgi Yönetimi Stratejileri", 1-13, 2003.

www.bilgiyönetimi.org (Erişim Tarihi: 15.07.2015).

21. T. H. Davenport, D.W. De Long, M.C. Beers, "Successful Knowledge Management Projects", *Sloan Management Review*, (39):43-57, 1998.

22. V. D. Kalkan, A.E. Akgün, H. Keskin, "Bilgi Yönetimi ve İnsan Kaynakları Yönetimi: Literatür Değerlendirmesi ve Gebze'deki Üretim İşletmelerinin İnsan Kaynakları Departmanlarında Bir Uygulama Çalışması", 1-10, 2003. www.bilgiyönetimi.org (Erişim Tarihi: 15.07.2015).

THE IMPORTANCE OF CORPORATE GOVERNANCE RATING SCORES: SECTORAL ANALYSIS OF COMPANIES REGISTERED IN ISTANBUL STOCK EXCHANGE CORPORATE GOVERNANCE INDEX

Sena ERDEN AYHÜN[1]

ABSTRACT

Corporate governance rating scores indicate the success levels of companies in terms of corporate governance practices. Corporate governance practices advocate that the interests of shareholders and stakeholders should be taken care of, that public disclosure should be made accurately and that the board of directors should fulfill their tasks successfully. In the study, companies registered in the BIST (Istanbul Stock Exchange) corporate governance index have been determined and corporate governance rating scores have been analyzed according to the sectors. Research findings indicate that corporate governance index is mostly considered important in the sectors such as automotive, electronics, investment partnership and banking. According to study, it is observed that the number of companies registered in the corporate governance index was the largest in the service sector. It is determined that Aksa Akrilik Kimya A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating among all sectors. According to the analysis conducted in production sector, it is determined that Arçelik A.Ş., Pınar Entegre Et ve Un Sanayi A.Ş., Anadolu Efes Biracılık ve Malt Sanayi A.Ş. and Doğuş Otomotiv have the highest corporate governance ratings in their relevant sectors. In the service sector, the highest rating of corporate governance is found to belong to Migros A.Ş. In addition, according to the analysis conducted in the service sector it is determined that Türkiye Sınai Kalkınma Bankası AŞ., Turcas Petrol A.Ş., Garanti Faktoring Hizmetleri A.Ş., Türk Prysmian Kablo ve Sistemleri and Akiş Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş. have the highest corporate governance ratings in their relevant sectors. The highest corporate governance rating in terms of Holding Companies is found to belong to TAV Havalimanları Holding A.Ş. Also, it is observed that only one company has a corporate governance rating score in some sectors, and according to study these companies are mentioned as leading companies in their field of activity.

Keywords: Corporate governance, corporate governance index, corporate governance rating score, joint stock company, governance

1 Assist. Prof. Dr., Çanakkale Onsekiz Mart University, Çanakkale Vocational School of Social Sciences, Management and Organization Department, senaerden@comu.edu.tr

1. INTRODUCTION

The companies registered in the Istanbul Stock Exchange are aiming to be ranked in the corporate governance index voluntarily through the corporate governance rating scores they receive from independent rating agencies. Corporate governance rating scores; provide significant information about the importance attached by the organizations to their shareholders' interests, their behaviors in terms of public disclosure and transparency, their relationships with the stakeholders of the organization and general characteristics of board of directors in the organizations. The high level of corporate governance rating scores indicates that the enterprises have successful corporate governance practices. The companies ranked in the corporate governance index and their rating scores provide information about the credibility of the companies and affect investors' decision towards making investment. Higher scores under corporate governance ratings could increase the value of companies' stock certificates; facilitate companies' stock sales and; increase the reputations of the companies in the market. In this context, determining the number of companies registered in Istanbul Stock Exchange corporate governance index and field of activities for these companies is important for the investors in terms of making more accurate decisions while making decisions on investment. Moreover, the fact that companies are registered in Istanbul Stock Exchange corporate governance index also implies that they also have a participative management mentality.

In the study, the companies included in Istanbul Stock Exchange corporate governance index were determined and a classification was made according to the company's field of activity. In addition, the corporate governance rating scores of the companies in the field of activity in question were also determined and their achievements were compared at the sector level.

2. THE CONCEPT OF CORPORATE GOVERNANCE

It is stated in the literature that the concept of governance is derived from the word of government. The concept of governance refers to; a new process in the management, the change of existing rules and participation of all stakeholders in the management processes within new management processes to which the enterprise is subject. In this context, governance accounts for the change in the concept of management (Rhodes, 1996: 652-653). Institutional democracy forms the basis of the corporate governance concept. It is observed that all stakeholders participate in decision processes democratically in the enterprises where the corporate governance processes are implemented. Corporate governance; is the set

of mandatory and voluntary obligations which encompasses management practices that do not harm the beneficiaries of a company and the public interests, and which involve the enterprises that are transparent, accountable, fair and responsible (Çonkar et al., 2011: 84-85). The concept of corporate governance has come to the fore for the purpose of solving the management problems in private companies. In general terms, the objective of the corporate governance is; to protect the interests of all the stakeholders that contribute to the enterprise and to ensure that the goals of shareholders are fulfilled by means of controlling the behaviors of the senior managers in an enterprise (Saklı, 2012: 51). Today, businesses are aiming to direct the capitals of the investors to their own companies by gaining reputation in capital markets through the corporate governance process they have implemented (Shleifer & Vishny, 1997: 739).

The rise of competition, the developments experienced in information and communication technology, and the fact that the enterprises have started to operate in national and international fields by growing their capacities have led to the separation of management and ownership concepts. Separation of the management and ownership concepts has laid the groundwork for the establishment of professional management processes on the other hand; the proxy problems have come to the fore.

The proxy approach; is expressed as an approach examining the problems that arise in the case of solidarity between two parties whose goals and interests are different from each other emerging as a result of separation between ownership and management concepts and assignment of management to the professional managers in the enterprises. In the proxy theory, a shareholder can be addressed as proxy grantor; a manager can be addressed as proxy or a senior manager can be addressed as proxy grantor; an employee or customer can be addressed as proxy (Koçel, 2007: 272-273). When capital and management are separated from each other in the enterprises, there is a relationship of representation between entrepreneurs, who are the legal owners of the enterprises, and managers who are assigned to manage the enterprise on behalf of the shareholders. The rationale of the proxy theory, which expresses the relation of representation, is constituted by the idea that the managers govern the enterprise in the capacity of representing the shareholders who are the legal owners of the enterprise (Doğan, 2007: 6). The advantage of this situation is that; the enterprise is governed by a professional person who is successful in the relevant field and inadequacy of management due to reasons such as entrepreneur's lack of professional experience could be avoided. In particular, this approach aims to prevent management problems that may be caused by untrained or inexperienced entrepreneurs in their relevant fields. However, the studies

conducted in the literature reveal that the theory in question will also bring some problems with it. This approach sometimes implies that the proxy will exhibit behaviors seeking his or her own interests only and the proxy will govern the enterprise in line with his or her interests rather than the interests of the enterprise.

The theory of proxy (shareholder approach) states that the companies will operate in line with the objectives of the shareholders while the theory of stakeholder refers to that all stakeholders who are affected by the activities of the enterprise or influencing these activities should participate in the management of the enterprise. In the enterprises governed by based on the stakeholder approach, it is encouraged that internal and external stakeholders that contribute to the institution should participate in the management processes as well as meeting the shareholder expectations. In addition, special emphasis is placed on the opinions of all stakeholders with regard to decisions on innovative and creative behaviors of the enterprise (Freeman & Reed, 1983: 95).

The proxy theory explains that companies would operate in line with the objectives of the owners, while "stakeholder theory" refers to the view that all stakeholders influenced by the activities of the organization or affecting these activities should participate in management decisions. It is important that a corporate governance approach that pays attention to stakeholder theory involves the decision-making processes and control mechanisms that could respond to the rights and expectations of internal and external stakeholders (Saklı, 2012: 52).

2.1. Concepts of Underlying the Corporate Governance

Concept of corporate governance; proposes to act transparently, accountably, ethically and responsibly towards internal and external stakeholders in all activities that the company management has performed. Given these factors, it is important for company managers to comply with business ethics and social responsibility principles in their future decisions in terms of good governance practices.

2.1.1. Work Ethics

Ethics have importance among the rules governing people's lives and behaviors. The morality concept is used to express the rules accepted and adopted in society and regulating the behaviors of people. In this manner, a set of principles adopted and applied by at least a majority of the society in a certain period constitutes the scope of the morality concept (Akbulut, 2000: 2). The morality concept involves the behaviors that are expressed as "right" or "wrong". The perspectives of different cultures on the morality concept may vary; the ethics adopted by the society in question may be influential

on almost all the behaviors of individuals living in some traditional societies. The ethics developed on a particular cultural axis and adopted by the society could undergo changes over time (Lovett & Jordan, 2005: 167). In the literature, work ethics is defined as rules and behavior forms that are considered as useful in the execution and application phases of activities on a certain field (Akbulut, 2000: 4). In general terms; work ethics plays an integrative role in the product/service processes of the enterprises and has an influence on the behaviors of the employees working in the enterprise by directing their attitudes. In this context, the behaviors displayed on the axis of work ethics affect the working performance of individuals. Historical, philosophical and religious factors could be influential on the formation of business ethics within enterprises (Sidani & Gardner, 2000: 597).

2.1.2. Corporate Social Responsibility

The concept of "corporate social responsibility" has emerged on the recognition that the enterprises are part of society and that they have the potential to make positive contributions to social objectives (Jones et al., 2005: 882). Corporate social responsibility is expressed as; companies acting in accordance with the wishes and desires of the society as well as the obligations of companies for making profit without harming any of the employees, shareholders, consumers and individuals in society using the scarce resources they have in the best way (Sabuncuoğlu, 2008: 26), Corporate social responsibility; is named as an obligation undertaken in order to provide the social welfare with the contribution of voluntary business practices and institutional resources. Voluntary business practices refer to the voluntary obligations undertaken by the enterprises (Kotler & Lee, 2008: 3). In corporate social responsibility, the enterprise voluntarily interacts with its stakeholders and its activities focus on the social and environmental factors. Paradoxically, some enterprises regard social responsibility as an opportunity, while others perceive it as a risk. Indeed, social responsibility could have a negative effect on the enterprise if not managed accurately. However, the social responsibility efforts play a strategic role in the long-term success of the enterprise (Decker, 2004: 173). Corporate social responsibility increases the spiritual capital of the enterprise thus contributes to the profitability by providing added value to the enterprise and the brand of the enterprise as part of a long-term business strategy in the long-term.

2.2. Corporate Governance Principles

Regulations regarding corporate governance also focus on four fundamental principles named as fairness, transparency, accountability and responsibility. These four basic principles of corporate governance are related to each other based on the concept of measurement and development

of performance and thus aim to work in harmony with social values while creating values for companies' shareholders. The basic principles regarding corporate governance are described below (TKYD-Deloitte, 2006: 4-5):

Fairness: The principle of fairness refers to that the management of the company acts equally against all rights-holders. The principle in question aims to protect shareholder rights, including minority shareholders and foreign partners.

Responsibility: The principle of responsibility states that companies create value for their shareholders, and comply with laws and regulations in accordance with ethical values beyond its legal obligations.

Transparency: The principle of transparency explains how enterprises communicate accurate, clear and comparable information to the public.

Accountability: The principle of accountability refers to that board of directors independently monitors the performance of top management and that the accountability of top management is assessed by the shareholders.

Apart from the basic principles mentioned above, there are also some specific principles aimed at expressing corporate governance practices. Capital Markets Board (CMB), introduced a series of legal reforms regarding corporate governance to be implemented by public companies in Turkey within the framework of these specific principles. The CMB updated its own principles on the basis of amendments made in OECD principles in 2005 after publishing its Corporate Governance Principles based on the "apply or disclose" approach in July 2003 (www.yoikk.gov.tr). The CMB's Corporate Governance Principles consist of the following four main headings:

- Shareholders
- Public Disclosure and Transparency
- Stakeholders
- Board of Directors

Shareholders; the dimension of shareholders includes information regarding shareholders' rights, fair treatment against the shareholders and basic partnership functions. It has been decided to treat all shareholders fairly, including minority shareholders and foreign shareholders while the protection of shareholders' rights is emphasized. In addition, it has been decided to have an effective remedy possibility if all shareholders' rights are violated (OECD, 2015: 19).

Public Disclosure and Transparency: The dimension of public disclosure and transparency refers to; making timely and accurate statements on many

important issues including the company's financial situation, performance, partnership structure and management. This principle also includes the simultaneous reporting of important and necessary information to all stakeholders in order to ensure that shareholders are treated fairly (OECD, 2015: 41).

Stakeholders: The dimension of stakeholders explains the recognition of the rights of stakeholders ensured by law or mutual agreements, allowing the effective cooperation in creating wealth and employment between the company and its beneficiaries, and ensuring the sustainability of financially strong companies. This principle embraces the idea that stakeholders are a valuable resource in the formation of companies' competitive and profitable structures (OECD, 2015: 41).

Board of Directors: The dimension of board of directors explains that; the board of directors should provide strategic guidance to company, ensure an effective supervision in management activities and perform accountability against the company and its shareholders. This principle explains the roles and responsibilities of the board and indicates the duty of the board on monitoring the performance of the company (OECD, 2015: 51).

2.3. Corporate Scandals and Prominence of Corporate Governance Concept

The effective corporate governance practices realized by the companies aims to increase the reliability of the companies traded in publicly traded corporations and to increase the number of investors. When many companies that terminated their activities in the past are examined, management problems experienced in these companies are noteworthy. One of these problems is that the irregularity performed by Arthur Andersen, the audit firm in the bankruptcy procedures of Enron, a company operating in the US. It is observed that the independent audit firm condoned accounting tricks of the company in question even if the primary objective of this audit firm was to protect the investor interests. The audit firm demonstrated as if company in question was making profits even though they were making loss and this action caused that he investors were deceived. One of the most important reasons for this action is the fact that Arthur Andersen received payments from the Enron company for consultancy activities in addition to audit procedures and that even the consultancy fees received were in considerably higher amounts (Fearnley & Beattie, 2004: 118).

WorldCom, which was the second largest phone company in the USA, declared bankruptcy in 2002 upon demonstrating its profit more than the actual amount. An average of 17,000 employees were unemployed and former CEO Bernard Ebbers was sentenced to prison for 25 years in

2005 due to the scandal (www.fortuneturkey.com). It is observed that the management applied various techniques in order to conceal the financial situation in the WorldCom scandal. In the company, fraudulent transactions were performed, operating expenses were classified as capital expenditures, book values of the acquired assets were reclassified as to include future expenses and debt reserve calculations of the enterprise were manipulated. These practices aimed to indicate the total net income in the activities of WorldCom at higher amounts (Kuhn & Sutton, 2006: 63).

Parmalat is one the seventh largest food companies in Italy and manufactures a wide range of product categories, most of which are manufactured in the category of dairy products. Europe's biggest corporate fraud took place in the company named Parmalat for the first time in Italy and caused international negative effects. Research studies revealed that fraudulent accounting operations were carried out in the company and that 10-14 million euros were hidden. The operation performed by tens of thousands of farmers in Latin America and Africa, where Parmalat, which became bankrupt due to insufficient cash, was affected negatively by the bankruptcy of the company in question (Gavridis & Ficarella, 2004: 39). There are similar offenses and auditor mistakes similar to the Enron crisis with regard to the bankruptcy of this company. It is stated that Deloitte (the main auditor) and Grant Thornton (the secondary auditor), who were in charge of auditing at Parmalat, had made important mistakes. The point that attracts attention in this case is; that Arthur Andersen and Deloitte are the same companies, that Arthur Andersen's branch has been founded in Italy as Deloitte Touche Thomatsu after the collapse of Arthur Andersen's company located in America (Gavridis & Ficarella, 2004: 53).

In addition to bankruptcy of these three large companies, the Mortgage crisis experienced in the banking sector has also had a negative effect on the confidence levels of the investments made by investors on the banks. Mortgage borrowers, who cannot pay due to higher mortgage prices on the market, have begun to sell their homes. Following this, other investors upon realizing that the mortgage fees paid by them were much higher than the market value of the homes that they had bought, began to sell their homes when they actually had the ability to make payment. (Geanakoplos & Koniak, 2009, www.nytimes.com). The fluctuation that started in the US mortgage markets in 2006 penetrated the global financial system by transforming into credit crisis primarily as of 2007 and subsequently into liquidity crisis. In this process, many major financial institutions such as Bearns & Stearns had to declare their losses, while financial markets had learned how the fluctuations occurred in credit markets became a threat through securitization. It is expressed that all parties playing role in the mortgage market ranging from borrowers to credit institutions, issuers of

securities, credit rating agencies and investors are responsible for the US mortgage crisis. In particular, subprime mortgage loans, which constitute the majority of non-performing loans, have been supported by the government and non-paying loans have been funded in accordance with government policies which have led to formation of a system that is difficult to evaluate and measure (Demir et al., 2008: 98). Institutional governance practices have importance in the banking sector. Especially in the banking sector, the elements such as characteristics of the board of directors, the level of wages for top managers and the ownership rates etc. affect the corporate governance practices and help to ensure that the global financial crisis periods are overcome successfully (Tarchouna et al., 2017: 645).

Company scandals which have been described above and brought victimization of investors to the agenda and the Mortgage crisis experienced in the world and in Turkey have lead the corporate governance concepts to become prominent. Corporate governance practices have both aimed to ensure the companies' own sustainability and gain the investor confidence.

2.4. Corporate Governance Practices and Company-Performance Relation

In general, elements affecting firm value are constituted by enterprise size, profitability, borrowing rates and investment opportunities (Najjar & Najjar, 2017: 413). Many studies conducted in the literature indicate that an effective corporate governance mechanism will increase the firm performance. Findings of Gompers et al. (2003) state that; effective corporate governance practices will increase firm value, profitability and sales rates. In addition, the findings of Core et al. (2006) underline that; the inadequacies of governance mechanisms will affect the performance of the company in negative terms (Nasser-Abdallah & Ismail, 2017: 100). One of the important factors that increase the firm value is the ownership structure of the enterprise. The fact that managers primarily look after their own interests rather than the interests of the shareholders has led to the formation of proxy problems in the enterprises. The enterprises intending to deal with proxy problems try to improve the rights of the shareholders by observing the behaviors of the managers and this action contributes to the increase of firm value (Najjar & Najjar, 2017: 412).

Today, the studies indicate a relationship between firm value and corporate governance practices. Chen et al. (2010) emphasize that; corporate governance processes increase the performance by positively affecting the financial structure of the company. Gompers et al. (2003) explain that; corporate governance processes affect firm value in the positive direction (Najjar & Najjar, 2017: 411). It can be difficult to determine the relationship between long-term performance indicators of an enterprise and effective corporate

governance. Nevertheless, business managers and investors may evaluate if there is a positive relation between corporate governance recommendations of the enterprise and the financial yields arising from these recommendations in the short-term periods (Rose, 2016: 203). It is noteworthy that there are studies in the literature which investigate the effects of corporate governance practices on the economic development of countries and on the equity costs of the enterprises. In this context, research findings show that corporate governance practices affect the cost of equity in countries with higher economic development level adopting the Anglo-Saxon legal system (Gupta et al., 2018: 78). Corporate governance practices play an important role in determining economic growth by influencing capital markets and resource allocation in particular. The innovation of the globalization concept and the policies that encourage the growth have caused the developed and developing economies to attach importance on the concept of corporate governance. In addition, the existence of better corporate governance practices leads to; the enterprises having more funding possibilities and lower credit costs (Diallo, 2017: 28). According to many research studies conducted in recent years, it is observed that the relation between levels of borrowing and corporate governance practices are also investigated. Findings of the study conducted by Ashbaugh-Skaife, Collins, and LaFond (2006) indicate that borrowing costs of firms exhibiting higher quality of corporate governance are likely to decrease (Ghouma et al., 2018: 138).

2.5. Corporate Governance Rating Scores

Principles regarding rating activities on the capital market and the rating agencies were determined by the Capital Markets Board in accordance with the Communiqué Serial VIII. No: 51. dated 12/07/2007. According to this; rating the compliance to corporate governance principles is the assessment and classification of enterprises' compliance with the Corporate Governance Principles issued by the Board in an independent, impartial and fair manner by the rating agencies. In the activity of rating the compliance with corporate governance principles; scores ranging from 1 to 10 are given separately within the framework of compliance with all principles and main sections such as shareholders, public disclosure and transparency, stakeholders and board of directors as a whole. The communiqué in question has regulated that rating activities will be performed by rating agencies which are established in Turkey and authorized by the Board in order to carry out rating activities and international rating agencies which are approved by the Board for carrying out rating activities in Turkey (www.resmigazete.gov.tr). Rating agencies which are established in Turkey and authorized by the CMB in order to carry our rating activities are specified below (www.spk.gov.tr):

- Saha Kurumsal Yönetim ve Kredi Derecelendirme Hizmetleri A.Ş.
- Kobirate Uluslararası Kredi Derecelendirme ve Kurumsal Yönetim Hizmetleri A.Ş.
- JCR Avrasya Dercelendirme A.Ş.

Investors prefer making investment in well-managed companies in order to minimize investor risks during the periods in which the market fluctuation rates are higher. The corporate governance rating scores offer important information about the company to the investors. Thus, investors are able to make more accurate decisions about their investments in question. Today, many investors and shareholders are utilizing corporate governance practices in risk analysis of the enterprises (Louizi & Kammoun, 2016: 363-364).

2.6. Istanbul Stock Exchange Corporate Governance Index

The corporate governance index is expressed as an index that includes companies implementing the corporate governance principles. Istanbul Stock Exchange Corporate Governance Index aims to measure the price and return performance of companies which are traded on the markets of Istanbul Stock Exchange (excluding the Watchlist Companies Market and C List) and have the score of 7 out of 10 with regard to compliance with corporate governance principles and the scores of 6.5 for each main heading. The score for compliance with the Corporate Governance Principles can be given by the rating agencies designated by the CMB. Rating agencies evaluate and rate the companies wishing to take part in the index in consideration of the overall corporate governance principles of these companies. Companies wishing to be traded in the Corporate Governance Index receive "Corporate Governance Rating" assigned by the rating agencies that are licensed by the CMB and the companies report their scores to Istanbul Stock Exchange. Rating activities are evaluated within the framework of following four main headings (www.tkyd.org.tr).

- Shareholders (with 25% weight)
- Public disclosure and transparency (with 25% weight)
- Stakeholders (with 15% weight)
- Board of Directors (with 35% weight)

The enterprises that want to get higher scores in the corporate governance index place more importance to the activities of the board of directors. The board of directors helps prevent the occurrence of proxy problems by observing the behaviors of senior executives and rewarding their achievements in order to maximize the profits of shareholders. Many studies conducted in the literature have investigated the relationship between management characteristics such

as size and independence and the performance of the enterprise (Bozec & Bozec, 2012: 1983). The most important organ of institutional structures is the board of directors. The boards of directors directs the company, have the freedom not to approve the decisions that are not deemed appropriate and to make changes on the administrative staff when deemed necessary. If the boards of directors have the structure, processes and members that could perform the duties of directing and supervising, this will be important in the successful management of the organizations (Argüden, 2007: 10-11). Board of Directors is; is primarily responsible for providing strategic direction to the company and for ensuring continuity of the enterprise in the process of providing different and distinctive corporate identity among the competitors (Karpuzoğlu, 2010: 63). The primary goal of the board of the directors in both open joint stock companies and in non-public companies is; to manage the different expectations of all stakeholders who have rights in the company in line with the interests of the company (Gözüm, 2012: 11).

The high scores on the corporate governance index indicate the success of corporate governance practices (Najjar & Najjar, 2017: 414). If corporate governance dimensions are implemented in the enterprise as a whole, this will positively affect the management processes. Also, the studies conducted by Grove et al. (2011), Love and Rachinsky (2015) and Zagorchev and Gao (2015) in the literature favor this idea and they utilize the corporate governance index in order to assess the success of the corporate governance system in the banking sector (Tarchouna et al., 2017: 646). Many studies conducted in the literature indicate that there is a relationship between firm performance and corporate governance practices. These studies utilize the corporate governance index in order to measure the relationship between firm performance and corporate governance practices. In a study carried out by Gompers, Ishii, and Metrick (2003); the relationship between stakeholder rights and firm performance has been investigated. In this study, the corporate governance index was utilized in order to measure the power balance between shareholders and managers (Lai et al., 2016: 1200). The inclusion of companies in the corporate governance index indicates that these companies attach importance to corporate governance processes. In this regard, it is important that companies should be included in the corporate governance index in gaining the confidence of the investors and increasing the performance of the company.

3. RESEARCH CHAPTER

In this chapter, information about the objective, method, findings and evaluations of the research will be provided.

3.1. Objective of the Research

In the study, it is aimed to determine the corporate governance rating grades of the companies which are registered in Istanbul Stock Exchange corporate governance index, have the status of public joint stock company and operate in the service industry and to perform the sectoral analysis of these companies. The appreciation of the shares in the public joint stock companies will also lead to the growth of such companies in national and international markets. The joint stock companies should primarily gain the confidence of investors so that these companies could be successful in selling the stocks. The inclusion of the companies in the corporate governance index is an important criterion indicating that the companies comply with the corporate governance principles and have qualified managements. In this context, the conducted study will determine the sectors complying with the corporate governance principles and the corporate governance rating by company's areas of activity and make a comparison in this regard.

3.2. Methodology Of The Research

Research is of web based research type which is among qualitative research methods. In the study, the list of companies included in the corporate governance index is obtained from the Corporate Governance Index data of Turkish Corporate Governance Association and the sectoral information is obtained from Public Disclosure Platform (KAP) and the websites of the companies in question. As a result of study, it is determined that there are 50 companies which are registered in Istanbul Stock Exchange corporate governance index and have the status of public joint stock company and all these companies have been examined. In the study, the companies registered in corporate governance index are classified according to their activity areas in the production sector and service sector. Based on the data of 2017, corporate governance rating scores of the companies registered in the corporate governance index have been determined and evaluated in the study. Six companies which are nor publicly-held despite having corporate governance rating, one non-governmental organization and the companies which are not registered in Istanbul Stock Exchange corporate governance index but had corporate governance rating in the past, have not been included in the study.

3.3. Research Findings

The distribution of the companies in the production sector that are registered in the corporate governance index according to their areas of activity and rating scores of these companies are shown in Table 1.

Table 1: Companies in the Production Sector and Rating Scores for 2017

Sector/Field of Activity	Company Name	Score
Glass	Türkiye Şişe ve Cam Fabrikaları A.Ş.	94.83
Iron and Steel	Ereğli Demir ve Çelik Fabrikaları T.A.Ş.	92.20
Electronics	Arçelik A.Ş.	95.23
	Vestel Elektronik Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş.	94.86
	Aselsan Elektronik Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş.	92.04
Food	Pınar Entegre Et ve Un Sanayi A.Ş.	92.88
	Pınar Süt Mamulleri Sanayi A.Ş.	92.62
Beverage/Alcoholic Beverage Sector	Anadolu Efes Biracılık ve Malt Sanayi A.Ş.	95.77
	Pınar Su Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş.	94.60
	Coca Cola İçecek A.Ş.	94.52
Automotive/Defense	Doğuş Otomotiv Servis ve Ticaret A.Ş	96.30
	Otokar Otomotiv ve Savunma Sanayi A.Ş.	93.32
	Türk Traktör ve Ziraat Makineleri A.Ş.	92.13
	Tofaş Türk Otomobil Fabrikası A.Ş.	91.48
Petroleum Rubber and Plastic Products	Aygaz A.Ş.	93.64
Textile	Aksa Akrilik Kimya Sanayi A.Ş	96.32
Total	16 companies	

Source: www.kap.org.tr; www.tkyd.org.

According to Table 1, it is observed that the companies that are involved in the production sector and have corporate governance rating marks have been operating in eight sectors including glass, iron and steel, electronics, food, beverage, automotive, petroleum, rubber and plastic products and textile. Among the mentioned companies, it is determined that Aksa Akrilik Kimya Sanayi A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating score with 96.32 on the other hand Tofaş Türk Otomobil Fabrikaları A.Ş. has the lowest

corporate governance rating score with 91.48. When the classification of the sectors within themselves is examined; it is observed that Arçelik A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating in electronics sector (92.23); Pınar Entegre Et ve Un Sanayi A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating in food sector (92.88); Anadolu Efes Biracılık ve Malt Sanayi A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating in alcoholic beverage sector (95.77) and Doğuş Otomotiv has the highest corporate governance rating in automotive sector (96.30). In addition, it has been observed that only one enterprise is involved in glass, iron and steel, petroleum, rubber and plastic products and textile activities, and corporate governance rating scores of this enterprise have been determined. In this context, Türkiye Şişe ve Cam Fabrikaları A.Ş. (94.83), Ereğli Demir ve Çelik Fabrikaları T.A.Ş. (92.20) and Aygaz A.Ş. (96.32) have been identified as the leading companies in corporate governance practices in their relevant fields of activity.

The distribution of the companies in the service sector that are registered in the corporate governance index according to their areas of activity and rating scores of these companies are shown in Table 2.

Table 2: Companies in the Service Sector and Rating Scores for 2017

Sector/Field of Activity	Company Name	Score
Banking	Türkiye Sinai Kalkınma Bankası A.Ş.	95.37
	Türkiye Garanti Bankası A.Ş.	95.08
	Yapı ve Kredi Bankası A.Ş.	94.29
	Türkiye Halk Bankası A.Ş.	93.76
	Şekerbank T.A.Ş.	91.90
	Albaraka Türk Katılım Bankası A.Ş.	88.05
Information Sector	Logo Yazılım Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş.	90.83
Energy	Turcas Petrol A.Ş.	94.86
	Park Elektrik Üretim Madencilik Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş.	90.79
Finance Lease	Garanti Faktoring Hizmetleri A.Ş.	93.21
	Lider Faktoring A.Ş.	90.97
	Creditwest Factoring A.Ş.	85.26
Journalism	Hürriyet Gazetecilik ve Matbaacılık A.Ş.	91.27
Communication	Türk Telekominikasyon A.Ş.	91.75
Construction	ENKA İnşaat ve Sanayi A.Ş.	91.79
Manufacture of metal products, machinery and equipment	Türk Prysmian Kablo ve Sistemleri A.Ş.	91.13
	İhlas Ev Aletleri İmalat Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş.	81.99
Retail (Trade)	Migros Ticaret A.Ş.	95.77

Refining	Tüpraş Türkiye Petrol Rafinerileri A.Ş.	94.67
Insurance Business	Anadolu Sigorta	93.00
Transportation	Pegasus Hava Taşımacılığı A.Ş.	92.50
Insulation	İzocam Ticaret ve Sanayi A.Ş.	93.10
Investment Banking	İş Yatırım Menkul Değerler A.Ş.	93.82
Investment Partnership	Akiş Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş.	94.90
	Garanti Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş.	94.30
	İş Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş.	94.76
	Akmerkez Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş	93.74
	Halk Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş	92.35
	Doğuş Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş	91.70
Total	29 companies	

Source: www.kap.org.tr; www.tkyd.org.

According to Table 2, it is observed that the companies operating in the service sector and have corporate governance rating marks have been operating in fifteen sectors including banking, information, energy, financial leasing, journalism, communication, construction, metal goods, machinery and equipment construction, retail, refining, insurance, transportation, insulation, investment banking and investment partnership. Among the mentioned companies, it is determined that Migros has the highest corporate governance rating score with 95.77 on the other hand Crediwest Factoring A.Ş. has the lowest corporate governance rating score with 85.26. When the classification of the sectors within themselves is examined; it is observed that Türkiye Sınai Kalkınma Bankası A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating in banking sector (95.37); Turcas Petrol A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating in energy sector (94.86); Garanti Faktoring Hizmetleri A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating in financial leasing sector, Türk Prysmian Kablo ve Sistemleri has the highest corporate governance rating in metal goods, machinery and equipment construction sector (91.13) and Akiş Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating in investment partnership sector(94.90). In addition, it has been observed that only one enterprise is involved in information, journalism, communication, retail, refining, insurance, transport and insulation activities, and corporate governance rating scores of this enterprise have been determined. In this context, Logo Yazılım Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş. (90.83), Hürriyet (91.27), Türk Telekominikasyon A.Ş. (91.75), ENKA İnşaat ve Sanayi A.Ş. (91.79), Migros (95.77), Tüpraş Türkiye Petrol Rafinerileri A.Ş. (94.67), Anadolu Sigorta (93.00), Pegasus Hava Taşımacılığı A.Ş. (92.50), İzocam Ticaret ve Sanayi A.Ş. (93.10) and İş Yatırım Menkul Değerler A.Ş. (93.82) have been identified as the leading companies in corporate governance practices in their relevant fields of activity.

The distribution of the holding companies that are registered in the corporate governance index according to their areas of activity and rating scores of these companies are shown in Table 3.

Table 3: Holding Companies and Rating Scores for 2017

Name of Holding	**Areas of Activity**	**Score**
TAV Havalimanları Holding A.Ş.	Airport Terminal Business Management and Terminal Services	96.17
Doğan Şirketler Grubu Holding A.Ş.	Media, energy-retail-industry-tourism-real estate and motor vehicles marketing-financial services and other	94.06
Yazıcılar Holding A.Ş.	Beverage, retail, automotive, energy, real estate and other	92.01
Global Yatırım Holding A.Ş.	Investment Banking	90.52
İhlas Holding A.Ş.	Construction and Real Estate Project Development, Media and Communication, Production and trade, Health and education	81.45
Total	5 Companies	

Source: www.kap.org.tr; www.tkyd.org.

Table 3 shows the distribution of companies in the holding status according to their areas of activity and their corporate governance rating scores. In the study, holding companies have been examined under a separate heading since the holding companies have different areas of activity within their own structures and thus they could be involved in both the production and service sectors. According to Table 3; it is seen that TAV Havalimanları Holding A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating score with 96.17 on the other hand İhlas Holding has the lowest corporate governance rating score with 81.45.

CONCLUSION

Corporate governance rating scores are important for businesses seeking to be included in the corporate governance index. Corporate governance rating scores could have an influence on investors' decisions and may lead to an increase in the value of companies' stocks registered in the corporate governance index. In the study, the companies operating in the production and service sectors have classified according to their fields of activity and their corporate governance rating scores have been determined. Accordingly, it has been determined that Aksa Akrilik Kimya Sanayi A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating score among all companies operating the production sector. Enterprises in the production sector have also been classified and assessed according to their activity

areas. Accordingly, Arçelik A.Ş.,Pınar Entegre Et ve Un Sanayi A.Ş. ,Anadolu Efes Biracılık ve Malt Sanayi A.Ş. and Doğuş Otomotiv have been assessed as companies with the highest corporate governance rating. It has been determined that Migros A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating score among all companies operating the service sector. According to assessment conducted based on the sectors; it has been determined that Türkiye Sınai Kalkınma Bankası A.Ş., Turcas Petrol A.Ş., Garanti Faktoring Hizmetleri A.Ş., Türk Prysmian Kablo ve Sistemleri ve Akiş Gayrimenkul Yatırım Ortaklığı A.Ş. have the highest corporate governance rating scores. As a result of assessment conducted on the holding companies, it has been determined that TAV Havalimanları Holding A.Ş. has the highest corporate governance rating score. According to study, it has been observed that the number of companies registered in the corporate governance index is the largest in the service sector (29 companies). In the study, it has been found out that there is only one company operating in some sectors and their corporate governance rating scores have also been determined. In this context, Türkiye Şişe ve Cam Fabrikaları A.Ş. Ereğli Demir ve Çelik Fabrikaları T.A.Ş., Aygaz A.Ş., Aksa Akrilik Kimya Sanayi A.Ş., Logo Yazılım Sanayi ve Ticaret A.Ş., Hürriyet, Türk Telekominikasyon A.Ş., ENKA İnşaat ve Sanayi A.Ş., Migros, Tüpraş Türkiye Petrol Rafinerileri A.Ş., Anadolu Sigorta, Pegasus Hava Taşımacılığı A.Ş., İzocam Ticaret ve Sanayi A.Ş. and İş Yatırım Menkul Değerler A.Ş. have been identified as leading companies in their fields of activity.

The findings obtained from this study indicate that the number of companies registered in the corporate governance index is 50 in Turkey. These figures suggest that many institutionalized companies are not included in the corporate governance index today. Today, the role of corporate governance practices has importance in preventing corporate bankruptcies and increasing the quality of management activities in the companies. The corporate governance index constitutes one of the most important indicators in measuring and evaluating the success levels of companies in terms of corporate governance practices. If the companies registered in the corporate governance index increase their profits by gaining investor confidence, this could lead to their growth in national and international markets and will increase their reputation. Research findings indicate that corporate governance index is mostly considered important in the sectors such as automotive, investment partnership, electronics and banking. According to research findings; it is recommended that the number of companies registered in corporate governance index and operating in different sectors in Istanbul Stock Exchange should be increased and more attention should be attached to corporate governance practices in all sectors.

REFERENCES

AKBULUT, Emine, Ebru, (2000), "Etik Davranış Kuralları ve Türkiye Sermaye Piyasası Aracı Kuruluşları Birliği İçin Öneri", Sermaye Piyasası Kurulu Piyasa Gözetim ve Düzenleme Dairesi Yeterlik Etüdü, Ekim, Ankara.

ARGÜDEN, Yılmaz, (2007), *Yönetim Kurulu Sırları*, Rota Yayınları, İstanbul.

BOZEC, Richard; BOZEC, Yves, (2012), "The Use Of Governance Indexes in the Governance-Performance Relationship Literature: International Evidence", *Canadian Journal of Administrative Sciences*, Issue: 29, pp. 79-98.

ÇONKAR, M. Kemalettin, ELİTAŞ, Cemal, ATAR, Gökhan, (2011), "İMKB Kurumsal Yönetim Endeksi'ndeki Firmaların Finansal Performanslarının TOPSIS Yöntemi İle Ölçümü ve Kurumsal Yönetim Notu İle Analizi", *İstanbul Üniversitesi İktisat Fakültesi Mecmuası*, Cilt: 61, Sayı: 1, ss. 81-115.

DECKER, Sallyanne., (2004), "Corporate Social Responsibility And Structural Change In Financial Services", *Managerial Auditing Journal* , Vol:19, Issue: 6, pp. 712-728.

DEMİR, Faruk; KARABIYIK, Ayşegül; ERMİŞOĞLU, Emine; KÜÇÜK, Ayhan, (2008), "ABD Mortgage Krizi", Bankacılık Düzenleme ve Denetleme Kurumu Çalışma Tebliği, Sayı: 3, Ağustos, Ankara.

DIALLO, Boubacar (2017), "Corporate Governance, Bank Concentration And Economic Growth", *Emerging Markets Review*, Issue: 32, pp. 28-37.

DOĞAN, Mustafa, (2007), *Kurumsal Yönetim*, Siyasal Kitabevi, Ankara.

FEARNLEY, Stella, BEATTIE, Vivien, (2004), "The Reform of The UK's Auditor Independence Framework After the Enron Collapse: An Example Of Evidence-based Policy Making", *International Journal Of Auditing*, Issue: 8, pp. 117-138.

FREEMAN, R. Edward and REED, David, L., (1983), "Stockholders and Stakeholders: A New Perspective on Corporate Governance", *California Management Review*, Vol: 14, Issue: 3, Spring, pp. 88-106.

GAVRIDIS, Michael and FICARELLA, Nicola, (2004), "Enron And Parmalat Two Twıns Parables", European School Of Economics, Dissertation, Nottingham Trent University.

GEANAKOPLOS, John D. and KONIAK, Susan P. (2009), *Matters of principal*. The New York Times, March.

http://www.nytimes.com/2009/03/05/opinion/05geanokoplos.html.,Data Accessed: 10.01.2018

GHOUMA, Hatem; NASR, Hamdi Ben; YAN, Ruiqian, (2018), "Corporate Governance and Cost of Debt Financing: Emprical Evidence From Canada", *The Quarterly Review of Economics and Finance*, Issue: 67, pp. 138-148.

GÖZÜM, M. Sait (2012), *Yönetim Kurulu Üyesinin El Kitabı*, Deloitte Yayınları, Hümanist Yayıncılık, 1. Baskı, Nisan, İstanbul.

GUPTA, Kartick, KRISHNAMURTIA, Chandrasekhar, TOURANI-RAD, Alireza (2018), "Financial Development, Corporate Governance And Cost Of Equity Capital", *Journal of Contemporary Accounting & Economic*, Issue: 14, pp. 65-82.

JONES Peter, COMFORT Daphne ve HILLIER David, (2005), "Corporate Social Responsibility and The Uk's Top Ten Retailers", *International Journal of Retail & Distribution Management*, Vol: 33, Issue: 12, pp. 882-892.

KARPUZOĞLU, Ebru, (2010), *Kurumsal Yönetişimde Yönetim Kurulu*, İstanbul: Hayat Yayın Grubu.

KOÇEL, Tamer (2007), *İşletme Yöneticiliği*, Arıkan Yayıncılık, 11. Baskı, İstanbul.

KOTLER, Philip ve LEE, Nancy, (2008), *Kurumsal Sosyal Sorumluluk*, MediaCat yayınları, 2. Baskı, İstanbul, Çev: Sibel Kaçamak.

KUHN, J. Randel, SUTTON, Steve G., (2006), "Learning From Worldcom: Implications For Fraud Detection Through Continuous Assurance", *Journal Of Emergıng Technologıes In Accountıng*, Issue: 3, pp. 61-80.

LAI, Syouching; LI, Hungchih; LI, Bin, (2016), "Does Corporate Governance Still Affect Firm Performance After Controlling The Distress Factor?", *Applied Economics*, Vol: 48, Issue: 3, pp. 1197-1209.

LOUIZI, Amir; KAMMOUN, Radhouane, (2016). "Evaluation Of Corporate Governance Systems By Credit Rating Agencies", *Journal of Management & Governance*, Vol: 20, Issue: 2, pp. 363-385.

LOVETT, Benjamin, J., JORDAN, Alexander, H., (2005), "Moral Values, Moralism, and the 2004 Presidential Election", *Analyses of Social Issues and Public Policy*, Vol: 5, Issue: 1, pp. 165-175.

NAJJAR, Basil Al and NAJJAR, Dana Al, (2017), "The İmpact Of External Financing On Firm Value and A Corporate Governance İndex: Sme Evidence", *Journal of Small Business and Enterprise Development*, Vol: 24 Issue: 2, pp. 411-423.

NASSER-ABDALLAH, Abed Al; ISMAIL, Ahmad K., (2017), "Corporate Governance Practises, Ownership Structure, and Corporate Performance in the GCC Countries", *Journal of International Financial Markets, Institutions &Money*, Issue: 46, pp. 98-115.

OECD, (2015), *G20/OECD Principles of Corporate Governance*, September.

RHODES, Roderick Arthur William, (1996), "The New Governance: Governing Without Government", *Political Studies*, Vol: 44, Issue: 4, pp. 652-667

ROSE, Caspar, (2016), "Firm Performance and Comply or Explain Disclosure In Corporate Governance", *European Management Journal*, Issue: 34, pp. 202-222.

SABUNCUOĞLU, Zeyyat, (2008), *İşletmelerde Halkla İlişkiler*, Alfa Aktüel Yayınları, Bursa.

SAKLI, Ali, Rıza, (2012), Belediye İşletmelerinde Kurumsal Yönetişim, *Çağdaş Yerel Yönetimler*, Cilt: 21, Sayı: 4, ss. 47-62.

SHLEIFER, Andrei and VISHNY, Robert W., (1997), "A Survey Of Corporate Governence", *The Journal Of Finance*, Vol: 52, Issue: 2, pp. 737-783.

SIDANI, Yusuf Munır; GARDNER, William L. (2000), "Work Values Among Lebanese Worker", *The Journal of Social Psychology*, Vol: 140, Issue: 5, pp. 597-601.

TARCHOUNA, Ameni; JARRAYA, Bilel; BOURI, Abdelfettah (2017), "How To Explain Non-performing Loans By Many Corporate Governance Variables Simultaneously? A Corporate Governance Index is Built to Us Commercial Banks", *Research in International Business and Finance*, Issue: 42, pp. 645-657.

TKYD - Deloitte (2006), Nedir Bu Kurumsal Yönetim?, TKYD ve Deloitte Yayını.

Other References

http://www.yoikk.gov.tr/upload/komiteler/kurumsalyonetim/kurumsalturkiye uygulama.pdfK, Kurumsal Yönetimin SPK, BDDK ve TTK Düzenlemeleri Kapsamında Türkiye Uygulamaları, Data Accessed: 10.01.2018.

http://www.fortuneturkey.com/fotograf/worldcom-muhasebe-skandali-14710#popup, WorldCom Muhasebe Skandalı, Data Accessed: 10.01.2018.

http://www.spk.gov.tr/Sayfa/Index/6/10/1, Derecelendirme Faaliyetiyle Yetkili Kuruluşlar, SPK, Data Accessed: 11.01.2018

http://www.tkyd.org/tr/tkyd-kurumsal-yonetim-komisyonlar-calisma-gruplari-sermaye-piyasasi-calisma-grubu-ve-bist-kurumsal-yonetim-endeksi.html, BİST Kurumsal Yönetim Endeksi, Data Accessed: 11.01.2018.

http://www.tkyd.org/tr/tkyd-kurumsal-yonetim-komisyonlar-calisma-gruplari-sermaye-piyasasi-calisma-grubu-ve-bist-kurumsal-yonetim-endeksi.html, 2017, Türkiye Kurumsal Yönetim Derneği Sermaye Piyasası Çalışma Grubu İç Yönergesi, Data Accessed: 11.01.2018.

http://www.resmigazete.gov.tr/eskiler/2007/07/20070712-24.htm, 2007, Sermaye Piyasasında Derecelendirme Faaliyeti ve Derecelendirme Kuruluşlarına İlişkin Esaslar Tebliği, Seri: VIII, No: 51, Data Accessed: 11.01.2018.

https://www.kap.org.tr/tr/Endeksler, BİST Kurumsal Yönetim, Data Accessed: 11.01.2018.

CITY LOGISTICS AND LOGISTICS PERFORMANCE: A COMPARISON OF SUCCESSFUL COUNTRIES IN LOGISTIC PERFORMANCE INDEX

Ramazan ERTURGUT[1], Artuğ Eren COŞKUN[2],
Mustafa Özer ALPAR[3], Gönül ARAY[4]

ABSTRACT

The phenomenon of immigration, which is constantly nourished by industrial motivation and different social motivations, has further complicated the ever-growing cities of today. Concordantly, the concept of "city logistics" continues to be developed as a separate field of study in the logistics theory and applications that are symbolized as "flow". On the other hand, for the last 10 years "The World Bank Logistics Performance Index" (LPI) has become a generally accepted index that has evaluated and rated logistical performance of countries in six different dimensions. The primary purpose of this study is to compare the six basic evaluation criteria of the countries that are always in the forefront in the logistic performance index and their relation to city logistics.

Germany, Singapore and the Netherlands, the leading countries of the LPI, were selected as eligible countries to be studied. This choice was made by examining the country scores of the "infrastructure" criteria of the LPI that we thought were most relevant to our paper scope. A comparative qualitative case data analysis was determined as the research design of this study. Most of the data obtained is from primary and reliable sources, the reports of which are published by government entities in selected countries or private enterprises cooperating with government agencies. On the other side, literature review were conducted using databases such as Science Direct, Taylor & Francis, Emerald Insight, IEEE, Web of Science, and Wiley Online Library. The data provided in the literature review was relationally compared within itself and taking into account the relevant criteria of the LPI.

The results of the research indicate that the problems in infrastructure are at the lowest level in the big cities of countries with high logistical performance, built-in signaling applications are used, innovation-based applications and projects find a high level of application field, sustainable transport and transport systems are being supported and implemented and ultimately, logistics practices that are relatively different from their own geographical areas, are often seen in relation to green logistics.

Keywords: City Logistics, Logistics Performance, Logistics Performance Index

1 Assoc. Prof. Dr., Akdeniz University, rerturgut@akdeniz.edu.tr
2 Res. Asst., Akdeniz University, erencoskun@akdeniz.edu.tr
3 Assist. Prof.Dr., Akdeniz University, oalpar@akdeniz.edu.tr
4 PhD Student, Mehmet Akif Ersoy University gonul.aray@halkbank.com.tr

1. INTRODUCTION

In our century, cities are one of the important indicators of human civilization and they become the symbol of the civilization of the countries in which they are located. The transportation of products from one point to another has a great proposition for social and economic activities in urban areas. Cities are also structures where people shop, go to work and rest, where mail or goods deliveries are delivered to their homes, and garbage is easily removed from urban life (Benjelloun & Crainic, 2008). The increase in the population ratios and the number of vehicles in the cities and the growth in the geographical sense cause increase in the city traffic. This brings problems to the just-in-time understanding which is one of the main elements of logistics management. The excessive number of vehicles on the roads, causes traffic jam, accidents and injuries, congestion in bridges and road crossing, and the inability of passengers and shipments within the city to reach their final point in time. All these incidents which cause decrease in the quality of the logistic service eventually increase the logistic operation costs (Erdal, 2005: 21). Although there are very few products or activities that are not needed to be transported in cities, goods transport is one of the indispensable elements of cities. Transportation, however, is one of the major factors disturbing urban life. Freight vehicles filling cities as in the parking spaces, environmental pollution, CO2 emissions and noise, and many other similar reasons negatively threaten urban life (Benjelloun & Crainic, 2008).

City logistics, a constantly growing focus of logistics activities in the new millennium, aims to plan, manage and control freight movements in an integrated and coordinated manner within a logistics network in the metropolitan area. The logistics activities in this process include inventory management, collection and delivery of goods as well as transportation, handling and storage of goods. The basic optimization problem underlying the city logistics system is referred to as an enriched inventory-locating problem involving facility location features. Variables of these problems, which try to integrate traffic information with one another, are formulated as dynamic locating problems with time intervals and time-dependent transportation times. On the other hand, in many studies, the effect of cities on the environment was assessed, and models were developed to measure CO2 emissions and minimize emissions (Amaral & Aghezzaf, 2015).

The most important indicator for comprehending and comparing countries' logistical performance since 2007 is the Logistic Performance Index (LPI) published by the World Bank. It is an international index of empirical research done on the practical experience of logistics professionals. The fact it is difficult for researchers to reach some countries' market size,

number of existing firms, employment and income figures in the logistics sector makes LPI reliable for the investigation of local resources (Civelek et al., 2015: 368).

The main purpose of this study is to base on the logistics infrastructure and information technology practices, which are useful in city logistics, of Germany, Singapore and the Netherlands, which are always in the top rank in LPI, and to compare these countries by taking into account their LPI scores on the "infrastructure, tracking and tracing, and timeliness" criteria. Smart transportation and signaling systems that Germany, Singapore and the Netherlands use with a sustainable approach and the use of transportation and freight transport vehicles produced with the same sustainable logic are the main factors in the results of the study. This study is important for presenting a direct city logistical comparison between LPI countries.

2. MATERIALS AND METHODS

The research design of this study is determined as a comparative qualitative data analysis. Qualitative data analysis involves comparing quantitative data obtained from events that occur over a specific period of time or results from research (Sözbilir, 2009). Much of the data obtained is based on reports published by government entities of the relevant countries, which are primary and reliable sources, or by private entrepreneurs working in partnership with government agencies. In particular, information from the World Bank and the United Nations' official websites is widely used in the study. On the other hand, literature review was conducted using databases such as Science Direct, Taylor & Francis, Emerald Insight, IEEE, Web of Science, and Wiley Online Library. The data obtained from the publication pool was relationally compared within itself and taking into account the relevant criteria of LPI.

3. FINDINGS

3.1. City Logistics and Theoretical Framework

The concept of city logistics has emerged to emphasize the need for a systemic view of the issues related to freight movements in the urban areas. In other words, the term city logistics is a system that allows the loads of different customers and carriers are consolidated into the same vehicles and to be characterized by the coordination of intra-city freight transport activities (Benjelloun & Crainic, 2008). Taniguchi et al. (2001)

defined city logistics as "the process of optimizing the entire logistics and transportation activities of private companies located in urban areas, considering the environment in which traffic is located, traffic congestion and energy consumption in the context of market economy".

The negative impacts and inefficient activities related to urban freight areas are the main reasons for carrying out urban freight analyzes. The main questions that city logistics is interested in are how to make urban freight transport operations more efficient and how to reduce negative externalities. City logistics focuses on increasing the efficiency of urban freight transport while aiming to reduce traffic congestion and adverse environmental impacts. According to Ogden (1992), the main objective of city logistics is to reduce the total social costs of urban goods movements. In addition, Ogden has transformed the general objectives of city logistics into 6 specific objectives as "economic, efficiency, road safety, environment, infrastructure, infrastructure management, and urban structure". (Anand et al., 2012).

Hesse (1995) noted the difficulties and potential conflicts in new urban designs as the recreational habitats and the functional requirements of goods transport are carried out in close proximity in the city. On the other hand, they underlined that there is very little information on urban freight transport and how to manage it, which could lead to a conflict between stakeholders. Cherrett et al. (2012) emphasized that local traffic directorates should also assume responsibility for green logistics strategies such as city logistics. Stathopoulos et al. (2012) investigated the responses of stakeholders to a range of urban policies potentially implemented in Rome (Gammelgaard, 2015: 335-337).

3.1.1. City Logistics Implementations of Germany

Germany, which is the leading country in the Logistics Performance Index (LPI), also has practices that provide innovative contributions to the intense traffic of cities in a sustainable way, as well as many information and communication technologies that bring rational solutions to city logistics.

3.1.1.1. HERE Deutschland

HERE Deutschland, one of these technologies, is the most comprehensive cloud-based mapping service on the market today. By providing a set of core services for database applications, it enables rapid and cost-effective development of database-based applications. It is an information technology that provides current and highly reliable road information including road geometry, traffic signs, traffic flow and weather information (Bitkom, GTAI, Smart Data Forum, 2016).

3.1.1.2. Parkpocket

Parkpocket, another technology used by Germany, is an intelligent park data system that includes the actual occupancy rates and additional information qualities of parking lots. Customizable to customer needs by integrating into in-car digital devices and navigation systems, Parkpocket offers intelligent parking solutions to B2B customers and other users. This allows users to save time, money, stress, CO2 emissions and other adverse effects of unnecessary traffic congestion (Bitkom, GTAI, Smart Data Forum, 2016).

3.1.1.3. Excell

Being an innovative technology used in Germany, Excell provides algorithms to companies to route their existing city traffic to optimize their roots. This platform first creates a comprehensive scheme of the traffic condition simultaneously. Later, it relates such generalizations as the planned trips throughout the city to the customers and to the operational data related to mass-origin data. All partnering companies communicate their location using GPS in city traffic, providing the necessary information to calculate the most appropriate shipments and routes. Parkpocket system is seen in Figure 1 (Bitkom, GTAI, Smart Data Forum, 2016).



Figure 1. Operation of the parkpocket system

3.1.1.4. iTESA

An effective city logistics system is vital in order to arrange the urban traffic with the most appropriate routes during sudden events such as natural disasters, epidemics, terrorist attacks, political turmoil. Designed for this purpose, the iTESA system identifies the most effective travel

risks and develops alternative routes in real time as soon as a crisis in an emergency occurs. In order to realize this, iTESA makes use of public news sources, social networks, news articles, information from the public, and press bulletins (Bitkom, GTAI, Smart Data Forum, 2016).

On the other hand, Germany encourages the use of bicycles to reduce urban traffic and its adverse effects. A 100-kilometer "bike autobahn" is being built in Germany which started the construction in 2016 (IHS Global Inc, 2016: 34).

3.1.1.5. Smart Urban Services

The "Smart Urban Services" research project of the German Federal Ministry of Education and Research was implemented in the cities of Reutlingen and Chemnitz. Traffic congestion, fill rates of garbage cans, special sales campaigns of stores and many such services are detected by the sensors installed in the city and transmitted to the users via telephone application. Such innovative services to improve the quality of life are thought to greatly reduce urban traffic (http://www.smart-urban-services.de/; https://www.reutlingen.de).

3.1.1.6. One Stop City Berlin

One Stop City Berlin was established in 2012 with the foundation of the Smart Innovation Partnership on Smart Cities and Communities, which promotes smart city activities in Berlin. In 2013, the Berlin Senate has officially endorsed the One Stop City Berlin and City Berlin 2016 programs. Also, Berlin Smart City Strategy Document was created in 2015. Within the scope of One Stop City Berlin, E-Bus and Micro Smart Grid projects were developed, and the Berlin Energy Saving Partnership was established. Thanks to the E-Bus Project, Berlin became the first capital city to use eco-friendly buses with low CO2 emissions. In addition, the Micro Smart Grid is a project to install station networks where electric vehicles can be charged in a controlled manner. With the help of the Berlin Energy Saving Partnership, 1,400 buildings have been restored and CO2 emissions decreased by more than 70,000 tons (https://tr.linkedin.com).

3.1.2. City Logistics Implementations of Netherland

3.1.2.1. Motorcycle and Bike Use in Netherland

In 2016, the number of motorcycles in the Netherlands was 653 thousand. This figure shows that the number of motorcycles in the Netherlands has increased by 56% since 2012. According to the count in 2014, it showed that one of the 25 adults had a motorcycle (https://www.cbs.nl).

The Dutch Government has encouraged the public to use bicycles for years. The first application for the promotion of the use of bicycles was in 1968 with the application of 'White Bikes' in Amsterdam, the Netherlands. At that time ordinary bicycles were painted in white color and presented to the public (DeMaio, 2003: 9). Such incentives have led to the development of biking culture in the Netherlands, and despite the fact that the population density is very high, the traffic congestion and accidents in the cities have been largely prevented.

84% of the 17 million people living in the Netherlands have at least one bicycle. The number of bicycles in the Netherlands is much higher than the number of living people, which is 22.3 million (https://www.velo-city2017.com). In the Netherlands, 50% of bicycle owners regularly use bicycles. On average people living in the Netherlands are biking for at least 1 time a day (Rietveld, 2000).

3.1.2.2 Intelligent Transportation Systems in Netherland

The first application of Dutch intelligent transport systems (ITS) was to build traffic lights in cities like Eindhoven and Amsterdam in the 1930s. By the 1980s, Automatic Accident Detection Systems and Video Management Software (VMS) were used in cities. The traffic management program carried out by the Ministry of Transport, Public Works and Water Affairs in 1994 is seen as the first comprehensive project in this area. RDS and TMC (Radio Data System- Traffic Message Channel) technology and traffic control centers are significant parts of this project. As of 2012, AUS applications are in use on the 980km highway which makes up 41% of the motorways. There are more than 15,000 electronic speed limit signs and more than 200 VMS (Tufan, 2014).

In a research conducted in 2009, it was concluded that 13% of the time lost in the traffic is due to the accidents on the roads (Tufan, 2014). In Netherlands, which has started to use eCall application in terms of integration with the EU, people can call 112 Emergency center automatically or manually by means of the integrated system in case of an accident (https://ec.europa.eu).

3.1.2.3 Underground Freight Transport in Netherland

Underground freight transport (UFT) is referred as one of the possible solutions for transport related problems in the Netherlands. Due to the increased demand for transportation, problems arise in the distribution of freight transport, especially in densely populated areas. To overcome this problem, the Netherlands implements the OLS-ASH system which involves underground freight transport by rail systems and liquid and gas transports with underground pipelines (Pielage, 2001: 762).

3.1.3. City Logistics Implementations of Singapore

Singapore, one of the leading countries in logistics, also has advanced technology and practices in city logistics. "I-transport", which was established to organize the flow of traffic in a proper way throughout the country, serves uninterruptedly during the year. "I-transport" is also a platform that provides simultaneous communication of information on traffic lights signaling, highway and tunnel tracking systems, accident management, traffic monitoring, etc., and provides uninterrupted 24-hour service throughout the year. This platform incorporates many intelligent transportation systems. The following systems, such as EMAS and GLIDE, are part of the "i-transport" platform (Tufan, 2014).

3.1.3.1. EMAS

Expressway Monitoring Advisory System (EMAS) is a system that helps to determine events such as traffic accidents or vehicle malfunctions and turn traffic back to normal flow. EMAS, on the other hand, provides $40 million a year savings by shortening the lag time of tow trucks or ambulances that must arrive at the accident site, since it simultaneously shares accident locations (www.esci-ksp.org).

3.1.3.2. J-Eyes

"J-Eyes" follows traffic at major junctions and regulates traffic flow. With more than 320 cameras on the road, this system also enables detection of faulty parking or loading/unloading vehicles (www.esci-ksp.org).

3.1.3.3. GLIDE (Green Link Determining System)

GLIDE is a signaling system that controls all traffic lights in Singapore and allows the vehicles to stop and start at minimum by establishing a "green wave" connection between junctions that are connected to each other. With this system, it is determined which color of the traffic lights should be flashed based on the change in traffic intensity. In the area where the system lights are located, vehicles arriving at the lights are detected by means of the sensor located on the roads and the green light is flashed. When pedestrians need to cross the road, the traffic lights turn to red for vehicles after pedestrians press the button on the traffic light poles (Tufan, 2014).

3.1.3.4. Parking Guidance System

The Singapore Land Transport Authority established the Parking Guidance System in 2008 to reduce traffic in cities. The system collects data on the appropriate parking spaces in the city and it reflects this data on 30

different electronic panel located in various parts of the city. This system gives drivers real-time information about the parking space availability, allowing drivers to find parking spaces faster and minimize fuel costs (C40 Cities Simens, 2013). Thanks to the electronic signage located in the city center, the system can also transmit information about other systems in the I-Transport platform. This information can be transferred to the drivers via the portal called "One.Motoring" or with the mobile phone application "MyTransport.SG" (Tufan, 2014).

3.1.3.5. One.Motoring

ONE.MOTORING is a comprehensive web portal that serves all driver and vehicle owners in Singapore. On this web portal, citizens can access traffic information collected via GPS from surveillance cameras on the roads and from taxis. Thanks to the intelligent traffic system, road images taken every 5 minutes are transmitted to the users who use the portals. In addition to these, there are some features that are offered to the users of the parking information, such as road fees calculated in current exchange rates, road sections in maintenance, traffic news, time of travel, roads, maps, navigation (Lee et al., 2016).

3.1.3.6. MyTransport.SG

MyTransport.AG, a mobile phone application, sends passengers waiting for a bus real time information about the status and location of the buses. At the same time, MyTransport.AG has developed many applications that bring solutions to city logistics. One of the applications developed by My Transport Singapore, LTA provides information on more than 4,700 public transport buses on 360 routes and is constantly updated to provide passengers with the most accurate information on arrival of time of buses. Additionally, this application can simultaneously provide the passengers with the seat occupancy rate of the buses. On the application, the green color shows empty seats, the yellow color stands for free spaces, and the red color indicates that the free space to stand is limited. With this feature, the application helps passengers on which bus to travel more comfortably (Lee et al., 2016).

3.1.3.7. Green Man

The Green Man project, which was developed by the Singapore Land Transport Authority, elderly or disabled pedestrians who need longer time to cross from crossings are given the opportunity of having an extra of 13 seconds in the traffic lights. In this system, which operates at 256 pedestrian crossing points as of 2012, after scanning the citizenship card or "Green Man" card that is available for people aged 60 and those with disabilities in the traffic light, an extra of 3 to 13 seconds are given to these pedestrians depending on the flow in the cross-section (Tufan, 2014).

3.1.3.8. TrafficScan

TrafficScan application is aimed to transmit signals from GPS-equipped taxis and the real-time average flow rate of the traffic to the drivers who will use the relevant routes. Thanks to this system integrated with EMAS, GLIDE and other AUS applications, drivers have the opportunity to make a right decision on their driving routes by having traffic information about the main roads (Tufan, 2014).

3.2. Logistics Performance Index (LPI)

The logistics sector has an important place in the development of global trade. In this respect, the World Bank has determined the performance of countries' logistics based on certain criteria. In a study titled "Connecting to Compete - Trade in Global Economy" about the "Global Logistics Performance Index and Indicators" published by the World Bank, 6 different criteria were developed to measure the logistic performance of the countries and the states of the countries in the logistics were determined (Kara, et al., 2009:73). The LPI's 6 criteria are listed below (http://lpi.worldbank.org);

- The efficiency of customs and border management clearance ("Customs").
- The quality of trade and transport infrastructure (Infrastructure").
- The ease of arranging competitively priced shipments (Ease of arranging shipments").
- The competence and quality of logistics services—trucking, forwarding, and customs brokerage ("Quality of logistics services").
- The ability to track and trace consignments ("Tracking and tracing").
- The frequency with which shipments reach consignees within scheduled or expected delivery times ("Timeliness").

LPI is based on a worldwide survey conducted on companies responsible for the transport of goods and facilitating trade around the world. The survey was developed with the help of more than 800 professionals in different fields of activity in the logistics sector. Each participant in the survey was asked questions about the eight countries where they traded the most at the international level and more than 5000 evaluations were conducted for each country in the context of Logistics Performance Index (Martí et al., 2014: 7). LPI data from Germany, Singapore and the Netherlands evaluated in the scope of this study are shown in the following tables:

Table 1. Germany's logistics performance index

	LPI 2016		LPI 2014		LPI 2012		LPI 2010		LPI 2007	
	Score	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***
Customs	4,12	2	4,10	2	3,87	6	4,00	3	3,88	4
Infrastructure	4,44	1	4,32	1	4,26	1	4,34	1	4,19	3
International shipments	3,86	8	3,74	4	3,67	11	3,66	9	3,91	4
Quality of logistics services	4,28	1	4,12	3	4,09	4	4,14	4	4,21	3
Tracking and tracing	4,27	3	4,17	1	4,05	7	4,18	4	4,12	5
Timeliness	4,45	2	4,36	4	4,32	2	4,48	3	4,33	8
OVERALL LPI	**4,23**	**1**	**4,12**	**1**	**4,03**	**4**	**4,11**	**1**	**4,10**	**3**

Table 1. Germany's ranking in LPI (http://lpi.worldbank.org). While the focus of this study is mainly on the practices of city logistics, strong ports such as Bremen, Hamburg, Kiel, Rhine-Main Airport, Hamburg Logistics Center, Bremen Freight Village and many other logistical elements ensure that Germany is the leading country in LPI (Erturgut et al., 2017: 661).

Table 2. Singapore's logistics performance index

	LPI 2016		LPI 2014		LPI 2012		LPI 2010		LPI 2007	
	Score	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***
Customs	4,18	1	4,01	3	4,10	1	4,02	2	3,90	4
Infrastructure	4,20	6	4,28	2	4,15	2	4,22	4	4,27	2
International shipments	3,96	5	3,70	6	3,99	2	3,86	1	4,04	2
Quality of logistics services	4,09	5	3,97	8	4,07	6	4,12	4	4,21	2
Tracking and tracing	4,05	10	3,90	11	4,07	6	4,15	6	4,25	1
Timeliness	4,40	6	4,25	9	4,39	1	4,23	14	4,53	1
OVERALL LPI	**4,14**	**5**	**4,00**	**5**	**4,13**	**1**	**4,09**	**2**	**4,19**	**1**

Table 2 shows that Singapore's logistics performance has slightly fallen in recent years. Table 3 shows Netherlands's ranking in LPI (http://lpi.worldbank.org).

Table 3. Netherlands's logistics performance index

	LPI 2016		LPI 2014		LPI 2012		LPI 2010		LPI 2007	
	Score	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***	***Score***	***Rank***
Customs	4,12	3	3,96	4	3,85	8	3,98	4	3,99	1
Infrastructure	4,29	2	4,23	3	4,15	3	4,25	2	4,05	1
International shipments	3,94	6	3,64	11	3,86	3	3,61	11	4,05	1
Quality of logistics services	4,22	3	4,13	2	4,05	7	4,15	3	4,25	1
Tracking and tracing	4,17	6	4,07	6	4,12	2	4,12	9	4,14	4
Timeliness	4,41	5	4,34	6	4,15	12	4,41	6	4,38	5
OVERALL LPI	**4,19**	**4**	**4,05**	**2**	**4,02**	**5**	**4,07**	**4**	**4,18**	**2**

DISCUSSION AND CONCLUSIONS

In this study, thanks to the comprehensive literature review, practices of city logistics of Germany, Singapore and the Netherlands which are among the most successful countries in the Logistics Performance Index are researched in depth. Developing countries that have not received the expected score from LPI, especially including Turkey, it is thought that this study will serve as an example for all countries that want to better rise in LPI rankings and make progress in their city logistics activities. In future studies it could be beneficial to contribute to the literature by conducting a comparative qualitative data analysis of the countries that have achieved success in LPI and countries that have not yet achieved the expected success.

In this section, the data from the research findings are interpreted in an objective way, taking into account the LPI scores of these three countries.

Germany: When LPI is examined, in addition to the fact that Germany has been in the 1st place since 2010, it is clearly seen that the country's success mainly underlies in its strong infrastructure when comparing the other criteria with infrastructure criterion. Having advanced information and communication technologies, Germany has channeled to city logistics with cloud technologies and intelligent transport systems. Thanks to cloud technology, a lot of city information is instantly available to the users through mobile applications. On the other hand, Germany has a number of sustainable activities to reduce carbon emissions, such as the use of electric vehicles or restoration of old buildings.

Singapore: Although Singapore has many activities in the field of city logistics, it has lagged behind Germany and the Netherlands in terms of infrastructure. It seems that the criterion that contributed most to Singapore's success in LPI is "customs". However, this does not show that Singapore is in a bad condition in the infrastructure criterion. Many technologies that it possesses bring urban solutions and facilitate urban life. Applications such as electronic panels, mobile applications, and signaling systems not only reduce urban traffic and transportation costs, but also reduce CO2 rates, creating more environmentally friendly cities.

Netherlands: In general, Netherlands lagged behind Germany in the LPI except in 2007. Compared with Singapore, although it could not move ahead of Singapore in 2007, 2010 and 2012, but the country managed to get ahead in the years 2014 and 2016. The Netherlands's infrastructure criterion is better than the timeliness and tracking and tracing criteria. The fact that Netherlands is one of the countries with the highest population density in the world and that information technology is not as developed as Germany and Singapore have led to the emergence of this situation.

REFERENCES

A. Benjelloun, T. G. Crainic, "Trends, Challenges, and Perspectives in City Logistics," *Transportation and Land Use Interaction, Proceedings TRANSLU,* 8: 269-284, 2008.

B. Gammelgaard, "The Emergence of City Logistics: The Case of Copenhagen's Citylogistik-kbh," *International Journal of Physical Distribution & Logistics Management* , 45(4): 333-351, 2015.

B. J. Pielage, "Underground freight transportation. A New Development for Automated Freight Transportation Systems in the Netherlands," *Intelligent Transportation Systems,* 762-767, 2001.

Bitkom, GTAI, Smart Data Forum, *Germany - Excellence in Big Data.* Berlin, 2016.

C40 Cities Simens 2013. City Climate Leadership Awards, Singapore Climate Close-Up. http://www.c40.org/2013-close-up/singapore-closeup.pdf (Erişim Tarihi: 09.03.2018)

E. Taniguchi, R. G. Thompson, T. Yamada, R. van Duin, "City logistics: Network Modelling and Intelligent Transport Systems", ISBN: 0-08-043903-9, 2001.

ESCI-KSP 2018. Energy Smart Communities Initiative - Knowledge Sharing Platform, https://esci-ksp.org/project/intelligent-transport-systems-its-in-singapore/ (Erişim Tarihi: 05.03.2018)

Europe Commission 2018. https://ec.europa.eu/digital-single-market/en/news/ecall-motors-netherlands-joins-drive-automatic-emergency-call-system-cars (Erişim Tarihi: 09.03.2018)

H. Tufan, "Akıllı Ulaşım Sistemleri Uygulamaları ve Türkiye İçin Bir AUS Mimarisi Önerisi," Ulaştırma ve Haberleşme Uzmanlığı Tezi, Ulaştırma Denizcilik ve Haberleşme Bakanlığı, Ankara, 2014.

IHS Global Inc. 2016. Country Report - Germany. Germany Country Monitor.

L. Martí, R. Puertas, L. García, "Importance of the Logistics Performance Index in International Trade," Applied Economics, 1-11, 2014.

Linkedin. https://tr.linkedin.com/pulse/ak%C4%B1ll%C4%B1-%C5%9Fehirler-ve-uygulamalar%C4%B1-mert-sad%C4%B1kzade (Erişim Tarihi: 28.02.2018)

M. E. Civelek, N. Uca, M. Cemberci, "The Mediator Effect of Logistics Performance Index on the Relation Between Global Competitiveness Index and Gross Domestic Product," *European Scientific Journal*, 11(13): 368-375, 2015.

M. Erdal, Küresel Lojistik. Uluslararası Taşımacılık ve Lojistik Hizmet Üretenleri Derneği, 2005.

M. Kara, L. Tayfur, H. Basık, "Küresel Ticarette Lojistik Üslerin Önemi ve Türkiye/ The Importance of Logistics CentersiIn Global Trade And Turkey," *Mustafa Kemal Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi*, *6*(11): 69-84, 2009.

M. Sözbilir 2009. Nitel veri analizi, http://fenitay.files.wordpress.com/2009/02/1112-nitel-arac59ftc4b1rmada-veri analizi.pdf. (Erişim Tarihi: 03.03.2018)

N. Anand, H. Quak, R. van Duin, L. Tavasszy, "City Logistics Modeling Efforts: Trends and Gaps-A Review," *Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences,* 39: 101-115, 2012.

P. J. DeMaio, "Smart Bikes: Public Transportation for the 21st Century," *Transportation Quarterly*, 57(1): 9-11, 2003.

P. Rietveld, "Non-motorised Modes in Transport Systems: A Multimodal Chain Perspective for the Netherlands," *Transportation Research Part D: Transport and Environment*, *5*(1): 31-36, 2000.

R. Erturgut, A.E. Coşkun, G. Ağaoğlu, "Civilization and Logistics Performance: A Germany Reading," Researches On Science And Art in 21st Century Turkey, Gece Publishing, Chapter 72, 651-662, ISBN: 978-605-180-771-3, 2017.

R. R. Amaral, E. H. Aghezzaf, "City Logistics and Traffic Management: Modelling the Inner and Outer Urban Transport Flows in a Two-tiered System," *Transportation Research Procedia,* 6: 297-312, 2015.

S. K. Lee, H. R. Kwon, H. Cho, J. Kim, Lee, D. International Case Studies of Smart Cities: Singapore, *Republic of Singapore. Inter-American Development Bank*, 2016.

Smart Urban Services. http://www.smart-urban-services.de/ (Erişim Tarihi: 28.02.2018)

Stadt Reutlingen. https://www.reutlingen.de/smaRT (Erişim Tarihi: 28.02.2018)

The Netherlands Central Bureau for Statistics, https://www.cbs.nl/-/media/_pdf/2016/38/2016-transport-and-mobility.pdf (Erişim Tarihi: 08.03.2018)

The World Bank. http://lpi.worldbank.org (Erişim Tarihi: 08.03.2018)

Velo-City. https://www.velo-city2017.com/learn-more/why-the-netherlands/ (Erişim Tarihi: 08.03.2018)

EMPLOYEE'S HIDDEN FORCE: A CONCEPTUAL LOOK AT POSITIVE PSYCHOLOGICAL CAPITAL APPROACH

Olgun Irmak ÇETİN[1]

ABSTRACT

In the world of business where there is an increasing competition and a more globalized market, it is their human capital that keeps businesses standing. The fact that human power is able to feel the current rapid change and react to it have become one of the most important components that affects productivity in businesses. Tendency for businesses to downsize or outsource, increasing cost of living, less and less privacy and the effects of social, economic and political crisis build up pressure on employees. The idea of the probability of losing his or her job, burnoutness, low performance, conflict of roles and unpredictability, dissatisfaction, lack of motivation and stress in common and unhappiness reduce employee productivity. This case made the organizational science go for new searches that will increase employee motivation. Those searches led to the birth of the concept of positive psychological capital. The positive psychological capital has been developed for the purpose of efficient use of employee.

The positive psychological capital was put on the agenda in the 90s. First related scientific studies were conducted by Prof. Dr. M. Seligman et al. In addition, Luthans (2002) did studies about the application of positive psychological capital to organizations and his discovery that individual's psychological capacity could continuously develop was a turning point.

Positive psychological capital has become an approach that emphasizes strong sides of employees and focus on developing and managing their psychological profoundness. Positive psychological capital took the intellectual capital in the organization to a step ahead and aimed at reaching the positive feelings of the organization. Rejecting to be stable, positive psychological capital has developed independent of personality and self assessments.

This study bears a conceptual quality aiming to examine positive psychological capital approach and it also examines the birth of positive psychological capital approach, its historical process, dimensions, and related studies and its contribution to science and organizations.

Keywords: Positive Psychological Capital, Positive psychology, Positive organization school

1 Asst. Prof. Dr., Trakya Üniversitesi, olgun.cetin@hotmail.com

INTRODUCTION

Along with the appearance of the human-focused approaches in organizations, the individual was started to be assessed as the equity of the organization. However, positive psychological capital is a view in which the organization is regarded as a human being. Business resources, dependent on its functions, will have effects on different levels related to its gaining sustainable advantage of competitiveness. Individual's knowledge accumulation, skills and what he or she developed in his or her inner world make up his or her Psychological Capital. The critical task is up to the human resources of the business in winning over the sustainable advantage of competitiveness as human resource of an organization is unique and inimitable. For that reason, it has been recently agreed that benefitting from positive psychology in order to reach specified objectives will provide the organization with constructive ways.

Positive psychology promises the increase in quality in the life standards of the individual and regaining efficiency in times of deficiency and change in the meaningless cycles of life. Positive organizational behaviour trend underlies positive psychology. Positive organizational behaviour focuses on factors that make promises and purvey a message of optimism to the individual and increase his or her psychological strength in case of the decrease in job satisfaction and work peace of the individual

DEFINITION OF THE CONCEPT OF POSITIVE PSYCHOLOGICAL CAPITAL AND ITS HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT

Positive psychological capital, as a trend, came out after positive psychology had completed its development. The concept of positive psychological has been first introduced to the literature by Maslow (Wright, 2003: 437). Maslow (1954: 13), while developing positive psychology, also pointed out the need for new approaches in psychology, undefined concepts in humanist psychology, experience based on learnedness, value-creating psychology and holistic psychology as a basic element. In addition, Maslow stated that psychology spent too much time dealing with subjects like disorders in human behaviours and functional disorders (Baysal, 2016: 53).

Dönmez (2014: 48) expressed the process of the birth of positive psychology as follows: " In the first century of the science of psychology, there were many questions left unanswered or not even asked due to the fact that psycologists focused on aggressiveness rather than love, fear rather than courage, and illness rather than health." Myers (2000: 56), sharing the

obtained results after the review of the literature of psychological studies, stated that 8072 studies on anger, 57800 on anxiety, 70856 on depression; 851 on comfort, 2958 on happiness and 5701 on lifelong satisfaction were encountered since 1887.

Positive psychology should be regarded as a new point of view that uses different approaches and methods rather than being magic stick that saves people from their problems in modern times (Alex Linley, Joseph, Harrington, & Wood, 2006: 5). Viewed from that perpective, it would not be wrong to say that Positive Psychology is a science that aims at uncovering a person's potential, motivation and capacity (Sheldon & King, 2001: 216). In another definition, Positive Psychology focuses on individual's strong sides rather than weak ones (Yalcin, 2016: 76). It is a psychological approach in which the individual uses altruistic behaviours and ways to have fun in order to build a healthy family life (Gable & Haidt, 2005: 104). In a different definition, Positive Psychology is individual's focusing on his or her strong sides, achievements and whatever he or she possesses in order to reach optimal life standards (Harty, Gustafsson, Björkdahl, & Möller, 2016: 387).Again in a different definition, it was defined as a psychological development process that focuses on positive traits in oder for individuals, groups or organizatios to obtain a lifecycle that works well (Gable & Haidt, 2005: 103). Finally, Tösten and Özgan (2017: 868) stated that many studies done about psychology often examined human behaviours that can be regarded as negative such as failure, pathology, and burnout and helplessness, However, Positive Psychology emphasizes the opportunities that modern life provides to individuals and ways to reach a happy life.

Based on the above definitions, it is possible to say that Positive Psychology aims at helping the individual reach optimal life standards by making him or her become aware of his or her strong sides.

Aslan (2017: 16) citing Seligman and Csikszentmihalyi (2000) expressed the fields of study of Positive Psychology and related stages as follows: Positive Psychology concentrates on personal experiences, individual's positive sides and his or her ability to direct his or her behaviours.

1. Personal Experiences: It concentrates on individual experiences. It focuses on positive experience, contentment and satisfaction that the individual had in the past; hope he or she holds for the future and his or her current happiness and time flow.
2. Individual's positive sides: Behaviours such as love, occupational capability, courage, skills, emotionality, sensitivity, ambition, genuineness, donation, futurism, spirituality and sophistication are personal positive sides.

3. Orientations in individual's behaviours: That the individual has the self-awareness of responsibility for social relations and work ethics and he or she is self-learned, flexible and able to act moderately and measurably.

The development of Positive Psychology was realized by researcher psychologist Martin Seligman (Güler, 2016: 3). Seligman changed mainstream behaviour patterns in psychological practices and put forward that it is incorrect to focus on wrong behaviours and behaviour disorders in individuals and he gave priority to good and correct behaviors (Luthans, Luthans, & Luthans, 2004: 46). According to Seligman (2004) it is only through the display of positive feelings that an individual can cope with his or her current hardships.

Positive Psychology was assessed as a metaphysical view of psychology by some scientists (Alex Linley et al., 2006: 6). Emre Oruç (2015: 10), Studying the topic in his doctoral thesis, Emre Oruç (2015: 10) emphasized the metaphysical feature of Positive Psychology and he stated that "instead of physically treating bad things in life, it is focusing on positive things and remaining positive at the cost of being negative" With a metaphysical view, the effort to eliminate imbalance will be realized as a result of two stages. First of all, by increasing individual's life experience and then developing a common language related to those experiences and finally those two stages will have been completed. As the second world war is going on, three basic fields that psychological researches focused on developed (Figure 1).

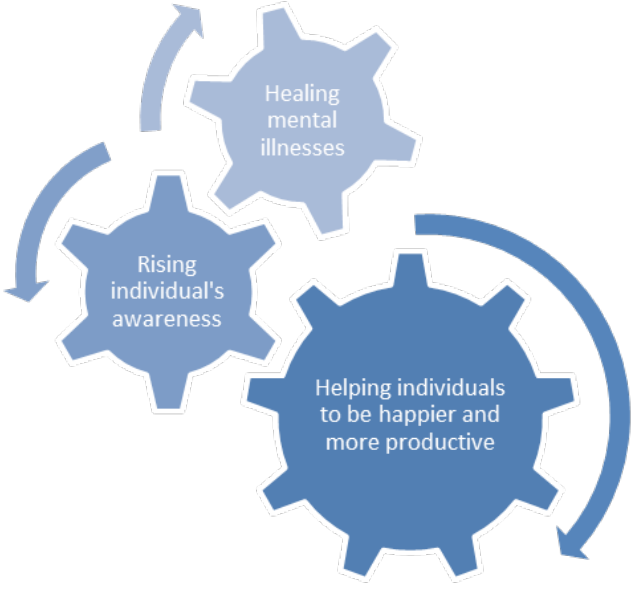


Figure 1 Psychological Researches

Efforts to raise awareness in individuals and help them become happier and more creative in the aftermath of the war were ignored. The reason for this is that the opportunities of practice in psychology were expanding more and more and the individual is pushed to loneliness each day (Akçay, 2011: 32). For that reason, psychology as a primary goal focused on the issue of rehabilitating mental disorders in order to treat depression and traumas experienced aftermath of the war (Barut, 2017: 17).

After the war, rehabilitating psychological researches and psychological weakness preventative researches were widely conducted (Luthans, Youssef, & Avolio, 2007: 8). As a result of the studies done, the need to view Positive Psychology with a scientific approach arose.

Stages of the development of Positive Psychology are shown below in Figure 2.

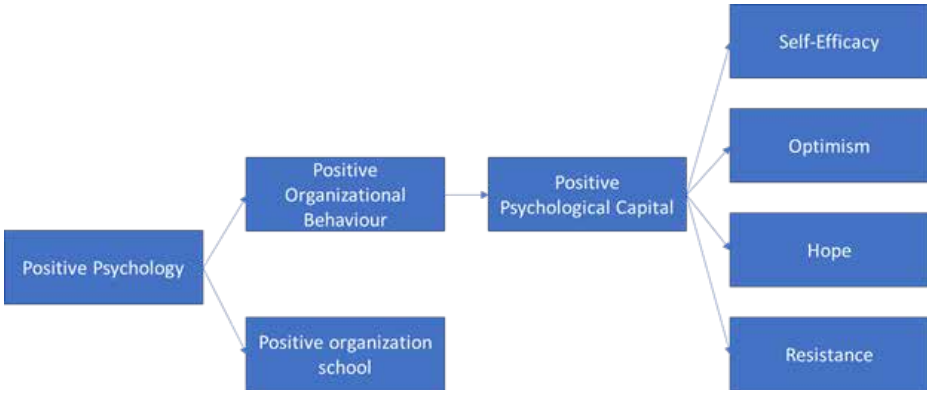


Figure 2 Development of Positive Psychology

Akdaş (2017: 6), in a study that seems to support all these developments stated that, at a point where psychology stands, goals such as treating mental illnesses, developing and improving people's lives and reseaching superior abilities and intelligence were not known by psychologists before World War 2. As a result of this, two basic trends took shape. Citing Luhans et al. (2007), Emre Oruç and Kutanis (2014: 147) stated that the first one of these trends is the school of positive organization put forward by the academics of the Michigan University and the second is the positive organizational behaviour trend developed by the Gallup Leader Institute of the Nebraska University

Positive organization school, taking the leader typology into account, determines leaderships traits. The pioneers of the trend are Kim Cameron, Jane Dutton and Bob Quinn. The school studies the strong sides of managers and employees in a way that it will help the organization.

However, it has not gained as much popularity as positive organizational behaviour trend. When the literature examined, it becomes apparent that no practical studies were done (Kumlu, 2017: 4). The positive organization school is not presented as a theory on its own, it rather focuses on dynamics defined by terms such as perfectionism, growth, abundance, resistance and virtue (Yıldız, 2015: 18). The positive organization school is practiced as it is outlined in Figure 3.



Figure 3 Operatioanal Chart of the Positive Organization School

According to Figure 3, input according to positive organization trend, business capacities, output, individual contributions and output as types of behaviour developed in the individual.

Uğurlu Kara (2014: 10) defined Positive organizational behaviour as follows: "It is bringing out and developing strong sides of individuals rather than weak and dysfunctional ones". Positive organizational behaviour shows some differences compared to positive psychology. Positive organizational behaviour focuses on state-like and trait-like behaviours. State like behaviours put emphasis on hope, optimisim psychological resistance and self-sufficiency. In addition, there is a need for research in the literature about the compatibility of positive psychological behaviours with positive organizational behaviours (Kelekçi, 2015: 16).

Aybas (2014: 61) pointed out the relationship between the two trends like this: "While Positive organizational school focuses on macro and organizational level, positive organizational behaviour focuses on micro and individual level"

POSITIVE PSYCHOLOGICAL CAPITAL

Positive Psychological Capital made the literature gain a different and a fresh outlook and approach in order to understand and orientate the human power that the organization possesses. Citing Nelson and Cooper (2007), Tösten (2015: 27) expressed that different outlook through basic features below.

- Psychological capital is more than human and social capital.
- Psychological capital is positively oriented
- Psychological capital is unique.
- Psychological capital is based on theory and research.
- Psychological capital is measurable.
- Psychological capital is state-like and for that reason, it can be developed.
- Psychological capital is influential on employee productivity.

Pointing out the use of the concept of capital in businesses, Çınar (2011: 7), citing Luthans (2004:46t) in his study, underlined those with differentiating questions such as "types of capital according to theoretical model "what you own (traditional financial-economic capital)", " what you know (human capital)", "who you know (social capital)", "who you are (positive psychological capital)". Making the defitinion of Psychological Capital, Akçay (2014: 125) stated that it is "individual's state of positive psychological development" and also added that stress is on "development" in the concept of "capital".

Positive Psychological Capital thus provides the human resources of businesses with the the opportunity to promote themselves instead of drawing a hopeful but a void table.

Citing Luthans, Avey, Avolio and Peterson (2010: 48), Çakmak and Arabacı (2017: 891) defined individual's Positive Psychological Capital accumulation as a power that activates him or her when he/she faced difficulties. From this point of view, citing (Luthans vd., 2007b:3, (Özer, Topaloglu, & Özmen, 2013: 438)) pointed out four basic components:

- To make enough efforts to achieve difficult tasks and to be confident to take responsibilities (Self-efficacy)
- To develop a positive attribution to success now or in the future (Optimism)
- To show determination towards goals and when necessary and find new ways to those goals to be successful(Hope)
- To pull oneself together to be successful when surrounded by problems and difficulties and resist this (Psychological Resistance)

DIMENSIONS PSYCHOLOGICAL CAPITAL

While defining Positive Psychological Capital, it is necessary to talk about four components that are basic foundations of psychological capital (Büyükgöze & Kavak, 2017: 4). These four foundations make up the dimensions of Positive Psychological Capital and they consist of Self-efficacy, Hope, Optimism and Resistance (Kaya, 2016: 7). In addition, it was pointed out in the related studies that components such as contentment, self-declaration, extrovertness, conscience, peace, nevrotisizm, explicitness, self-respect, self-awareness, confidence, determination, discipline and belonging can be added to four subgroups (Sarıcı, 2015: 20).

Self-Efficacy

It is one of the mostly emphasized and researched dimensions of Positive Psychological Capital. It was developed on the basis of Social Conceptual Theory that belongs to Bandura's self-regulation (Bożek, 2015: 24). Self-efficacy is the confidence that an individual has in carrying out his or her tasks and responsibilities (Aliyev & Karakus, 2015: 70). In another definition, it is individual's confidence through which he or she fulfils tasks and responsibilities with due effort (Cascio & Luthans, 2014: 56). Rita (2016: 47), with a different point of view, defines it as the faith that an individual has in overcoming a problem when he or she faced unexpectedly

Optimism

Optimism is the ability to look at things from positive perspectives and have positive thoughts about being successful now and in the future (Luthans, Avolio, Avey, & Norman, 2007: 542). Citing Carver and Scheier (2002), Avey, Reichard, Luthans, and Mhatre (2011: 130) defined the optimism dimension as an optimistic future expectation about the possible developments that can be encountered in life. Citing Seligman (1998), Avey, Luthans, Smith, and Palmer (2010: 20) defined optimism as a way of making positive explanations about the events that an individual experienced. Luthans, Avey, Avolio, and Peterson (2010: 45) explained the optimistic dimension of the Positive Psychological Capital by making inferences to the fact that optimist people could look at current developments positively, however, pessimist people are obsessed with negative evaluation of the events that they experienced.

Hope

It is individual's perseverance towards his or her goals to be successful (Toor & Ofori, 2009: 342). It is a positive motivational thought that an individual has about his or her goal- oriented energy that may overlap with the plans that will bring success (Story, Youssef, Luthans, Barbuto,

& Bovaird, 2013: 2536). Clapp-Smith, Vogelgesang, and Avey (2009: 230) stated that the hope dimension of Positive Psychological Capital was affected by two factors. They are will power and pathways. Will power is the effort that the individual made for getting success; pahtways is acquiring necessary psychological resources by finding alternative and multiple ways to reach desired goals. Hope, in fact, is desires that is directed by the expectation that the individual encounters while using his or her potential (Envick, 2005: 45). In another definition, Hope is regarded as an effort by the individual to keep himself or herself in positive motivational state to be successful (Little, Gooty, & Nelson, 2007: 15).

Resistance

It is when the individual orientitates himself or herself towards positive thoughts and overcome problems despite being under negative situtations and some risk (Şen, Mert, & Aydın, 2017: 170). Resistance, in other words, is defined as the individual's ability to face difficulties with a leap after a loss or withdrawal (Luthans, Avey, & Patera, 2008: 211). Assesed from a different perspective, resistance can be described as a case in which the individual pulls himself /herself together with a resistancde to even positive developments that may be experienced after big changes like the increase in his or her area of responsibility (Harty et al., 2016: 388).

Below is the Table prepared by Korucu (2016: 38) in his thesis study summarising the development that may be maintained in the lower dimensions of Positive Psychological Capital.

Table 1 Methods to be followed about the Development of Positive Psychological Capital

Dimensions of Positive Psychlogical Capital	Development
Self Sufficiency	Experience of Success Observational Learning /role modelling Social Persuasion Positive Feedback Psychological and Physiological excitement
Optimism	Setting a goal Setting sub-targets Particioation to the process Managers' confidence in employees Readiness Planning against unexpected events Mental rehearsal Settting new goals

Hope	Admitting the past Feeling glad about the current situation Future opportunites Realistic approaches Flexible approaches
Resistance	Entity-focused strategies Risk-focused strategies Process- focused strategies

According to Table 1, some methods need to be developed for employees in order to create a positive change in the Positive Psychological Capital of the business. Those methods are as follows:

Promoting Self-Sufficiency in the individual: The first method to be used about this content is employee's complete proof and experience of success. It is much easier for the employee to reach goals definable by him or her as concrete and short term. For that reason, by assigning certain targets, employees can be given the chance to experience success. The existence of a successful and realistic model will develop employee's self-sufficiency.

Promoting Optimism in the Individual: Optimism that is displayed by the employee need to be moderate and realistic. In this case, it would be a realistic optimism to expect from employees to take part in the decision-making mechanism and put repose trust in them. Employees should be able to forget about the past and move to the future by setting new and attainable targets.

Promoting Hope in the Individual: The fact that employees can subgroup their measaruble goals into manageable ones will foster individual's hope. It is necessary to maintain the transfer of authorization to the employee and make sure that he or she will take responsibility. He or she must also be asked to be planned against unexpected situations.

Promoting Resistance in the Individual: Risks that are likely to occur in unexpected situations need to be reduced to a minimum in order for the employee to become resistant.

STUDIES DONE ON POSITIVE PSYCHOLOGICAL CAPITAL

Before studying the articles about positive psychological capital, results obtained from text search as "positive psychological capital" on Google Scholar's web (Google, 2018) search box were sorted by more than 100 citetations.

Table 2 Number of Citations about the subject of Positive Psychological Capital

Title of the Study	Author	Year	Number of Citations
Positive psychological capital: Measurement and relationship with performance and satisfaction	F Luthans, BJ Avolio, JB Avey S Norman	2007	2172
Human, social, and now positive psychological capital management: Investing in people for competitive advantage	F Luthans, CM Youssef	2004	1465
Positive psychological capital: Beyond human and social capital	F Luthans, KW Luthans, BC Luthans	2004	1143
Can positive employees help positive organizational change? Impact of psychological capital and emotions on relevant attitudes and behaviors	JB Avey, TS Wernsing	2008	857
Meta-analysis of the impact of positive psychological capital on employee attitudes, behaviors, and performance	JB Avey, RJ Reichard, F Luthans	2011	751
Psychological capital: A positive resource for combating employee stress and turnover	JB Avey, F Luthans, SM Jensen	2009	687
Experimental analysis of a web-based training intervention to develop positive psychological capital	F Luthans, JB Avey, JL Patera	2008	607
Impact of positive psychological capital on employee well-being over time.	JB Avey, F Luthans, RM Smith	2010	606
The development and resulting performance impact of positive psychological capital	F Luthans, JB Avey, BJ Avolio	2010	567
The additive value of positive psychological capital in predicting work attitudes and behaviors	JB Avey, F Luthans, CM Youssef	2010	532
The implications of positive psychological capital on employee absenteeism	JB Avey, JL Patera, BJ West	2006	407
Authentic leadership and positive psychological capital: The mediating role of trust at the group level of analysis	R Clapp-Smith, GR Vogelgesang	2009	405
In the eyes of the beholder: Transformational leadership, positive psychological capital, and performance	J Gooty, M Gavin, PD Johnson	2009	277
Impact of authentic leadership on performance: Role of followers' positive psychological capital and relational processes	H Wang, Y Sui, F Luthans, D Wang	2014	167
The power of positive psychology: Psychological capital and work engagement	D Sweetman, F Luthans	2010	161
Relationship between positive psychological capital and creative performance	D Sweetman, F Luthans, JB Avey	2011	155
Authentic leadership and follower development: Psychological capital, positive work climate, and gender	L Woolley, A Caza, L Levy	2011	134

Two field studies examining the association between positive psychological capital and employee performance	JB Avey, JL Nimnicht	2010	132
Psychological capital: Investing and developing positive organizational behavior	F Luthans, CM Youssef, BJ Avolio	2007	128

According to Table 2, it is observed that F. Luthans, C. M. Youssef and J. B. Avey did intensive studies on positive psychological capital and they attracted a lot of attention.

An elaborate examination related to those mostly cited studies is given below.

In the study titled "Positive Psychological Capital: Measurement and Relationship With Performance And Satisfaction" by Fred Luthans, Bruce J. Avolio, James B. Avey and Steven M. Norman (2007), the relationship between the components of Positive Psychological Capital such as Self-efficacy, Hope, Optimism, Resistance and work performance and satisfaction was studied. In that respect, two researches were conducted. The first one was realized through the participation of 174 Management Department students. The universe of the second of the research consisted of 144 participants like engineers, technicians and insurence agents. The research is important as it is meant to prove the validity and reability of the components of under 4 lower dimensions. One of the most important results obtained as a result of the research is that the relationship between Positive Psychological Capital and work performance and satisfaction was found more significant than the relationship between lower dimensions such as Self-efficacy, Hope, Optimism, Resistance and work performance and satisfaction

The study titled "Human, Social, And Now Positive Psychological Capital Management: Investing İn People For Competitive Advantage" by Fred Luthans and Carolyn M. Youssef (2004) paved the way for many of its successors. Page 3 of the study was assigned to types of capital used in businesses. This Table primarily sets the differences between traditional capital, human capital and the components of Positive Psychological Capital. Detailed conceptual information was given about the advantage of competition that human capital provided to businesses and about the components of Self-efficacy, Hope, Optimism and Resistance.

In their study titled "Positive Psychological Capital: Beyond Human And Social Capital" by Fred Luthans, Kyle W. Luthans and Brett C. Luthans (2004), detailed information related to the components of capital in businesses was provided. In addition, to be able to realize Positive Psychological Capital in businesses, a guide with seven steps and four suggestions to develop Positive Psychological Capital were put forward.

In their study titled "Can Positive Employees Help Positive Organizational Change? Impact Of Psychological Capital And Emotions On Relevant Attitudes And Behaviours", James Avey, Tara S. Wernsing and Fred Luthans (2008) studied whether Positive Psychological Capital that businesses own is influential in making an organizational change. In their study of 132 employees, it was found that four positive organizational change are likely to be experienced According to the results obtained, positive emotions has a mediating effect between a Positive Psychological Capital and attitudes and behaviours. Results also showed that the effect on attitudes was observed about the subjects of cynicism and engagement; the effect on behaviours was on citizenship and deviance. Furthermore, Positive Psychological Capital has a direct and positive effect on employee work outcomes.

In their study titled "Meta-Analysis of the Impact of Positive Psychological Capital on Employee Attitudes, Behaviors, and Performance", James B. Avey, Rebecca J. Reichard, Fred Luthans and Ketan H. Mhatre (2011) studied the effect of Positive Psychological Capital on employee attitude, behaviour and performance. In the study of 51 employees, attitudes that Positive Psychological Capital positively affected were found to be job satisfaction, organizational commitment and psychological well-being. The behaviour that Positive Psychological Capital positively affected was found to be citizenship. Attitudes that were in negative relationship were found to be cynicism, turnover intentions, job stress and anxiety; behaviour was obtained as deviance.

In their study titled "Psychological Capital: A Positive Resource For Combating Employee Stress And Turnover" , James B Avey, Fred Luthans and Susan M Jensen (2009) studied the effects of Positive Psychological Capital on job stress and turnover. Within the study, 416 employees were assessed through a questionnaire with a six-point Likert scale. In the analysis section of the study, the Positive Psychological Capital scale with 24 statements developed by Luthans, Youssef, et al., (2007); "Turnover intentions scale" and "job seeking behaviour scale" by Crossley et al., (2007); Depression, anxiety and stress scale by Lovibond (1995) were used. Results showed that Positive Psychological Capital has a negative effect on "Turnover intentions scale" and "job seeking behaviour" and "stress; Stress symptoms" were found to have a positive effect on "Turnover intentions scale" and " job seeking behaviour".

In a study titled "Experimental Analysis of a Web-Based Training Intervention to Develop Positive Psychological Capital Fred" by Luthans, James B. Avey and Jaime L. Patera (2008), it was tested whether Positive Psychological Capital could be developed by a two-hour intensive web-based training. The study was conducted through 187 participants from the

experimental group and 177 from the control group. Acquired result is that a web-based training programme to be applied is believed to be effective in employees' development of Positive Psychological Capital

In their study titled "Impact of Positive Psychological Capital on Employee Well-Being Over Time", James B. Avey, Fred Luthans, Ronda M. Smith and Noel F. Palmer (Avey, Luthans, Smith, et al., 2010) researched the effect of Positive Psychological Capital on attitude, behaviour and performance. The study of 280 employees resulted in Positive Psychological Capital having a positive effect on employee welfare and his or her feeling important.

Using an experimental group of 153 employees and control group of 89, the study titled "The Development and Resulting Performance Impact of Positive Psychological Capital" by Fred Luthans, James B. Avey, Bruce J. Avolio and Suzanne Peterson (2010) aimed at developing Positive Psychological Capital through a two-stage training programme. As a result of the training, it was found that participants could develop their Psychological Capital and make positive changes in job performance.

In the study "The Additive Value of Positive Psychological Capital in Predicting Work Attitudes and behaviours" by James B. Avey, Fred Luthans and Carolyn M. Youssef (2010),the effect of Value-added Positive Psychological Capital with on attitude and behaviours was researched. In a study of 336 employees, it was found that Positive Psychological Capital is directly proportional with organizational citizenship behaviour; inversely proportional with organizational cynicism, turnover intentions and counterproductive work behaviours.

In the study titled "The Implications of Positive Psychological Capital on Employee Absenteeism" by James B. Avey, Jaime L. Patera and Bradley J. West (2006), the positive effect of Positive Psychological Capital on willing or unwilling absenteeism was researched. The study was done on 105 engineers. According to the acquired results, Positive Psychological Capital is more influential on unwilling absenteeism behaviour than job satisfaction and organizational commitment. A positive relationship was found between willing absenteeism behaviour and Positive Psychological Capital. On the other hand, it was found that Positive Psychological Capital was more successful at clarifying unwilling absenteeism behaviour.

Rachel Clapp-Smith, Gretchen Vogelgesang and James Avey (2009) conducted a study titled "Authentic Leadership and Positive Psychological Capital: The Mediating Role of Trust at the Group Level of Analysis". The relationship between Authentic leadership, Trust, Positive Psychological Capital Positive and performance was researched in the study. Following results were obtained by the surveys conducted through 89 participants: Positive Psychological Capital has a positive effect on trust in managers with authentic leadership trait.

In the study "In the Eyes of the Beholder Transformational Leadership, Positive Psychological Capital, and Performance" by Janaki Gooty, Mark Gavin, Paul D. Johnson, M. Lance Frazier and D. Bradley Snow (2009), the relationship between Positive Psychological Capital from the eyes of a transformative leadership playing the role of an audience and performance was analysed. 253 employees were surveyed within the study. 22 statements prepared by Podsakoff et al. (1996) to test transformative leadership; 24 statements by Luthans and et al. (2008) to test Positive Psychological Capital and 21 statements by Williams and Anderson (1991) to test performance were used. Taking acquired results into account, the study made significant contributions to the literature. According to the Transformational Leader, Positive Psychological Capital of employees affect their in-role performance, OCBI = organizational citizenship behavior directed toward individuals and (OCBO = organizational citizenship behavior directed toward the organization.

In their study "Impact Of Authentic Leadership On Performance: Role Of Followers' Positive Psychological Capital And Relational Processes", Hui Wang, Yang Sui, Fred Luthans, Danni Wang ve Yanhong Wu (2014) researched the mediating effect of leader–member exchange and moderating effect of Positive Psychological Capital in the relationship between authentic leadership and performance. 794 participants were involved in the study. To measure authentic leadership, 16 statements developed by Walumbwa et. al. (2008,); to measue leader-member exchange, 16 statements developed by Liden and Maslyn (1998) and arranged by Wang et al. (2005); to measure Positive Psychological Capital, 24 statements prepared by Luthans, Avolio, Avey, & Norman (2007); to measure performance, 4 statements prepared by Farh and Cheng (1997) were directed at the participants. According to the results obtained. It was proved that Positive Psychological Capital has a moderating effect in the relationships between authentic leadership and performance and there is a positive relationship between authentic leadership and leader-member exchange. The mediating effect of leader-member exchange was left to be evaluated in another study.

In the study "The power of positive psychology: Psychological capital and work engagement" by D Sweetmacy, Hope, Optimisman and Luthans (2010), conceptual information related to Positive Psychological Capital adn job commitment was provided. Studied in detail, the subject is of significance to be the first in the literature.

In the study "Relationship Between Positive Psychological Capital and Creative Performance" by David S. Sweetman, Fred Luthans, James B. Avey and Brett C. Luthans (2011), the relationship between Positive Psychological Capital and creative performance was studied, which had not been studied until then. 899 employees, within the study, were surveyed. According to

the results acquired, a positive relationship was found between the four lower dimensions of positive psychological capital such as Self-efficacy, Hope, Optimism, and Resistance and creative performance.

In the study "Authentic Leadership and Follower Development: Psychological Capital, Positive Work Climate, and Gender" by Lydia Woolley, Arran Caza and Lester Levy (2011), the relationship between Positive Psychological Capital and and authentic leadership was studied. The study was conducted with 828 employees in New Zealand. To measure Positive Psychological Capital, 12 statements compiled from the studies that Luthans did in varios years; to measure authentic leadership behaviour, 16 statements developed by Walumbwa et al. (2008) were directed at the participants through a six-point likert scale. According to the obtained results, a positive relationship was found between Positive Psychological Capital and authentic leadership.

In the study "Two field studies examining the association between positive psychological capital and employee performance" by James B. Avey, James L. Nimnicht and Nancy Graber Pigeon (2010), the relationship between Positive Psychological Capital and its lower dimensions such as Self-efficacy, Hope, Optimism, Resistance and employee performance was studied. Done in Australia, two different sample groups were used in the study. The first sample group involved 336 bank employees in Melbourne and the second consisted of 109 sales employees. To measure the positive psychological capital movement, 24 statements developed by Luthans et al. (2007b); to measure extrovertnes performance, 10 statements developed by Goldberg et al. (2006) were used. According to the results obtained, a positive relationship was found between Positive Psychological Capital and its lower dimensions such as Self-efficacy, Hope, Optimism, Resistance and employee performance.

Luthans, Fred, Youssef, Carolyn M ve Avolio, Bruce tarafından yapılan "Positive Organizational Behavior" adlı kitap Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye alanında yayınlanmış ilk kitap olma özelliğini taşımaktadır.

The book titled "Positive Organizational Behavior" by Luthans, Fred, Youssef, Carolyn M and Avolio, Bruce is to known to be the first book about Positive Psychological Capital.

CONCLUSION

In modern management theories, the employee is no longer perceived as the most important cost factor. Assessing the employee as the most important capital of a business led to the arrival of intellectual capital. Managers who wanted to maintain the motivation of the intellectual capital resorted to Positive Psychological Capital as a new trend of psychology.

Emphasizing the strong traits of the individual, positive psychology makes it possible for individuals to improve and rehabilitate their weaknesses.

Bu çalışma, Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye alan yazınında kavramsal araştırma boşluğunu doldurmak için gerçekleştirilmiştir. Bu amaçla, öncelikli olarak Pozitif Psikolojinin tanım ve kapsamı verilmiş, tarihçesi üzerine durulmuştur. Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye kavramı açıklanmış ve boyutları verilmiştir. Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye alanında yazılmış çalışmalar bir tablo halinde sunulmuştur. Tabloda araştırmacılar tarafından en çok atıf yapılan Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye alan yazın çalışmalarına ağırlık verilmiştir. Çalışmalar, en çok atıf alan çalışmadan aşağı doğru sıralanarak 100 atıfa kadar incelenmiştir. Son olarak en çok atıf alan 19 adet çalışma kapsamlı bir şekilde incelenmeye alınmıştır. İnceleme esnasında, çalışmaların amacı, örneklem sayısı, seçilen ölçek özellikleri ve araştırma sonucu ayrıntılı olarak ele alınmıştır.

This study was realized to fill the conceptual gap in the related literature of Positive Psychological Capital. To serve his purpose, firstly, the definition and scope of Positive Psychology were provided, and its historical background was emphasized. The concept of Positive Psychological Capital was defined, and its dimensions were outlined. Studies published in the field of Positive Psychological Capital were given as a Table. Mostly cited studies about Positive Psychological Capital in the related literature were given in the Table. Starting with the mostly cited one, 100 studies were numbered downwards and examined. Finallly, 19 mostly cited studies were comprehensively analysed. During the analysis, the aim of the studies, number of the sample, and the properties of the the scale chosen and the result of the study were examined in detail.

REFERENCES

Akçay, V. H. (2011). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayenin Kişisel Değerler Bakımından İş Tatminine Etkisi.* (Doktora Tezi), İstanbul Üniversitesi, İstanbul.

Akçay, V. H. (2014). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayenin İş Tatmini ile İlişkisi*: Kahramanmaraş Sütçü İmam Üniversitesi.

Akdaş, K. (2017). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye, İş Stresi ve İşten Ayrılma Niyeti İlişkisi.* Atatürk Üniversitesi, Erzurum.

Alex Linley, P., Joseph, S., Harrington, S., & Wood, A. M. (2006). Positive Psychology: Past, Present, and (Possible) Future. *The Journal of Positive Psychology, 1*(1), 3-16.

Aliyev, R., & Karakus, M. (2015). The Effects of Positive Psychological Capital and Negative Feelings on Students' Violence Tendency. *Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences, 190*, 69-76. doi:10.1016/j.sbspro.2015.04.918

Aslan, İ. (2017). *Öğretmenlerin Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye Algıları ile Örgütsel Bağlılıkları Arasındaki İlişkinin İncelenmesi* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Siirt Üniversitesi, Siirt.

Avey, J. B., Luthans, F., & Jensen, S. M. (2009). Psychological Capital: A Positive Resource for Combating Employee Stress and Turnover. *Human resource management, 48*(5), 677-693.

Avey, J. B., Luthans, F., Smith, R. M., & Palmer, N. F. (2010). Impact of Positive Psychological Capital on Employee Well-being Over Time. *Journal of occupational health psychology, 15*(1), 17.

Avey, J. B., Luthans, F., & Youssef, C. M. (2010). The Additive Value of Positive Psychological Capital in Predicting Work Attitudes and Behaviors. *Journal of Management, 36*(2), 430-452.

Avey, J. B., Nimnicht, J. L., & Graber Pigeon, N. (2010). Two Field Studies Examining the Association between Positive Psychological Capital and Employee Performance. *Leadership and Organization Development Journal, 31*(5), 384-401.

Avey, J. B., Patera, J. L., & West, B. J. (2006). The Implications of Positive Psychological Capital on Employee Absenteeism. *Journal of Leadership and Organizational Studies, 13*(2), 42-60.

Avey, J. B., Reichard, R. J., Luthans, F., & Mhatre, K. H. (2011). Meta-analysis of the Impact of Positive Psychological Capital on Employee Attitudes, Behaviors, and Performance. *Human Resource Development Quarterly, 22*(2), 127-152.

Avey, J. B., Wernsing, T. S., & Luthans, F. (2008). Can Positive Employees Help Positive Organizational Change? Impact of Psychological Capital and Emotions on Relevant Attitudes and Behaviors. *The journal of applied behavioral science, 44*(1), 48-70.

Aybas, M. (2014). *İnsan Kaynakları Uygulamalarının Çalışanların İşe Adanmışlığı Üzerindeki Etkisi ve Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayenin Aracı Rolü.* (doktora tezi), İstanbul Üniversitesi, İstanbul.

Barut, A. (2017). *Öğretmenlerin İşyeri Ruhsallığı ile Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye Algıları Arasındaki İlişkinin İncelenmesi* Gaziantep Üniversitesi, Gaziantep.

Baysal, S. (2016). *İş-Aile Çatışmasının Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayeye Etkisi.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Dokuz Eylül Üniversitesi, İzmir.

Bożek, A. (2015). Positive Psychological Capital Concept: A Critical Analysis in the Context of Participatory Management. *Management and Business Administration. Central Europe*(3), 19.

Büyükgöze, H., & Kavak, Y. (2017). Algılanan Örgütsel Destek ve Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye İlişkisi: Lise Öğretmenleri Örnekleminde Bir İnceleme. *23*(1), 1.

Çakmak, M. S., & Arabacı, İ. B. (2017). Öğretmenlerin Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye Algılarının İş Doyumları ve Örgütsel Bağlılıkları Üzerindeki Etkisi *16*(62), 890-909.

Cascio, W. F., & Luthans, F. (2014). Reflections on the Metamorphosis at Robben Island: The Role of Institutional Work and Positive Psychological Capital. *JOURNAL OF MANAGEMENT INQUIRY, 23*(1), 51-67.

Çınar, E. (2011). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayenin Örgütsel Bağlılıkla İlişkisi.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Dokuz Eylül Üniversitesi, İzmir.

Clapp-Smith, R., Vogelgesang, G. R., & Avey, J. B. (2009). Authentic Leadership and Positive Psychological Capital: The Mediating Role of Trust at the Group Level of Analysis. *Journal of Leadership and Organizational Studies, 15*(3), 227-240.

Dönmez, B. (2014). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye ile İşe İlişkin Duygusal İyilik Algısı, İş Doyumu, İşgören Performansı ve Yaşam Doyumu İlişkilerinin Seyahat Acentası Çalışanları Örnekleminde İncelenmesi* (Doktora Tezi), Mersin Üniversitesi, Mersin

Envick, B. R. (2005). Beyond Human and Social Capital: The Importance of Positive Psychological Capital for Entrepreneurial Success. *The Entrepreneurial Executive, 10*, 41.

Gable, S. L., & Haidt, J. (2005). What (and Why) is Positive Psychology? *Review of general psychology, 9*(2), 103.

Google. (2018). Google Scholar.

Gooty, J., Gavin, M., Johnson, P. D., Frazier, M. L., & Snow, D. B. (2009). In the Eyes of the Beholder: Transformational Leadership, Positive Psychological Capital, and Performance. *Journal of Leadership and Organizational Studies, 15*(4), 353-367.

Güler, G. (2016). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye ile Örgütsel Bağlılık İlişkisi.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Toros Üniversitesi, Mersin.

Harty, B., Gustafsson, J.-A., Björkdahl, A., & Möller, A. (2016). Group Intervention: A Way to Improve Working Teams' Positive Psychological Capital. *Work, 53*(2), 387-398.

Kaya, E. (2016). *İş Talepleri ve İş Kaynaklarının İşe Tutkunluğa Etkisinde Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayenin Aracılık Rolünün İncelenmesi.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Maltepe Üniversitesi, İstanbul.

Kelekçi, H. (2015). *Öğretmenlerin Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayeleri ile Yeterlik İnançları Arasındaki İlişki.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Dumlupınar Üniversitesi, Kütahya.

Korucu, G. (2016). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye Bağlamında Hizmet Sektörlerinde Kadın İşgücünün İş Tatminini Etkileyen Faktörler.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Çanakkale Onsekiz Mart Üniversitesi, Çanakkale.

Kumlu, T. (2017). *Otel İşletmesi Çalışanlarının Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye Düzeyleri ile Örgütsel Vatandaşlık Davranışları Arasındaki İlişki.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Çanakkale Onsekiz Mart Üniversitesi, Çanakkale.

Little, L. M., Gooty, J., & Nelson, D. L. (2007). Positive Psychological Capital: Has Positivity Clouded Measurement Rigor. *Positive organizational behavior*, 191-209.

Luthans, F., Avey, J. B., Avolio, B. J., & Peterson, S. J. (2010). The Development and Resulting Performance Impact of Positive Psychological Capital. *Human Resource Development Quarterly, 21*(1), 41-67.

Luthans, F., Avey, J. B., & Patera, J. L. (2008). Experimental Analysis of a Web-based Training Intervention to Develop Positive Psychological Capital. *Academy of Management Learning and Education, 7*(2), 209-221.

Luthans, F., Avolio, B. J., Avey, J. B., & Norman, S. M. (2007). Positive Psychological Capital: Measurement and Relationship with Performance and Satisfaction. *Personnel psychology, 60*(3), 541-572.

Luthans, F., Luthans, K. W., & Luthans, B. C. (2004). Positive Psychological Capital: Beyond Human and Social Capital. *Business Horizons, 47*(1), 45-50.

Luthans, F., & Youssef, C. M. (2004). Human, Social, and Now Positive Psychological Capital Management: Investing in People for Competitive Advantage.

Luthans, F., Youssef, C. M., & Avolio, B. J. (2007). *Psychological Capital: Developing the Human Competitive Edge*: Oxford University Press Oxford.

Maslow, A. H. (1954). *Motivation and Personality*: Harper and Row,Publishers, Inc.

Myers, D. G. (2000). The Funds, Friends, and Faith of Happy People. *American psychologist, 55*(1), 56.

Oruç, E. (2015). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayenin Politik Davranışlara Etkisi.* (Doktora Tezi), Sakarya Üniversitesi, Sakarya.

Oruç, E., & Kutanis, R. Ö. (2014). Pozitif Örgütsel Davranış ve Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye Üzerine Kavramsal bir Inceleme. *The Journal of Happiness and Well-Being, 2*(2), 145-159.

Özer, P. S., Topaloglu, T., & Özmen, Ö. N. T. (2013). Destekleyici Örgüt İkliminin, Psikolojik Sermaye ile İş Doyumu İlişkisinde Düzenleyici Etkisi. *Ege Akademik Bakis, 13*(4), 437.

Rita, K. (2016). Positive Psychological Capital and Parenting Styles among Adolescents: Khasi and Non-Khasi Scenario. *Romanian Journal of Applied Psychology, 18*(2), 47-52.

Sarıcı, D. (2015). *Öğretmenlerin İş Doyumu ile Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye Düzeylerine Yönelik Görüşleri.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Abant İzzet Baysal Üniversitesi, Bolu.

Seligman, M. E. (2004). *Authentic Happiness: Using the New Positive Psychology to Realize Your Potential for Lasting Fulfillment*: Simon and Schuster.

Şen, C., Mert, İ. S., & Aydın, O. (2017). The Effects of Positive Psychological Capital on Employee's Job Satisfaction, Organizational Commitment, and Ability Coping with Stress *Journal of Academic Research in Economics, 9*(2).

Sheldon, K. M., & King, L. (2001). Why Positive Psychology is Necessary. *American psychologist, 56*(3), 216.

Story, J. S., Youssef, C. M., Luthans, F., Barbuto, J. E., & Bovaird, J. (2013). Contagion Effect of Global Leaders' Positive Psychological Capital on Followers: Does Distance and Quality of Relationship Matter? *The International Journal of Human Resource Management, 24*(13), 2534-2553.

Sweetman, D., & Luthans, F. (2010). The Power of Positive Psychology: Psychological Capital and Work Engagement. *Work engagement: A handbook of essential theory and research*, 54-68.

Sweetman, D., Luthans, F., Avey, J. B., & Luthans, B. C. (2011). Relationship between Positive Psychological Capital and Creative Performance. *Canadian Journal of Administrative Sciences/Revue Canadienne des Sciences de l'Administration, 28*(1), 4-13.

Toor, S.-u.-R., & Ofori, G. (2009). Positive Psychological Capital as a Source of Sustainable Competitive Advantage for Organizations. *Journal of Construction Engineering and Management, 136*(3), 341-352.

Tösten, R. (2015). *Öğretmenlerin Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayelerine İlişkinin Algılarının İncelenmesi.* (Doktora Tezi), Gaziantep Üniversitesi, Gaziantep.

Tösten, R., & Özgan, H. (2017). Öğretmenlerin Pozitif Psikolojik Sermayelerine İlişkin Algılarının İncelenmesi *Electronic Journal of Social Sciences, 16*(62), 867-889.

Uğurlu Kara, A. (2014). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye ile Bireysel Performans İlişkisi.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Gazi Üniversitesi, Ankara.

Wang, H., Sui, Y., Luthans, F., Wang, D., & Wu, Y. (2014). Impact of Authentic Leadership on Performance: Role of Followers' Positive Psychological Capital and Relational Processes. *Journal of Organizational Behavior, 35*(1), 5-21.

Woolley, L., Caza, A., & Levy, L. (2011). Authentic Leadership and Follower Development: Psychological Capital, Positive Work Climate, and Gender. *Journal of Leadership and Organizational Studies, 18*(4), 438-448.

Wright, T. A. (2003). Positive Organizational Behavior: An Idea Whose Time has Truly Come. *Journal of Organizational Behavior, 24*(4), 437-442.

Yalcin, S. (2016). Analyzing the Relationship between Positive Psychological Capital and Organizational Commitment of the Teachers. *International Education Studies, 9*(8), 75-83.

Yıldız, H. (2015). *Pozitif Psikolojik Sermaye, Örgütsel Güven ve Örgütsel Vatandaşlık Davranışı Arasındaki İlişkinin İncelenmesi.* (Doktora Tezi), Balıkesir Üniversitesi, Balıkesir.

THE ROLE OF ORGANIZATIONAL CLIMATE AND CONTEXTUAL PERFORMANCE ABOUT THE EFFECTS OF PERSONALITY TRAITS ON THE INTENTION OF ORGANIZATIONAL REVENGE[1]

Olgun Irmak ÇETİN[2], İlknur KUMKALE[3]

ABSTRACT

The personality traits of the individual are shaped by factors such as environment condition and family structure has grown. With personality traits owned by individuals, they will bring meaning to his work life environment. Negative meanings of the individuals added to the negative climate in the organization; positive meanings that trigger the formation of a positive climate are added. Employees are faced with in ever-increasing production, workload and performance pressures in work life. Being unsuccessful to manage these pressures psychologically will increase the individual's stress level. With the result of weakness in the personality traits, employee will approach with the intention of revenge against the person or organization that is regarded as responsible for negative situations.

This study bears a conceptual quality aiming to examine about the effects of personality traits on the intention of organizational revenge, and it also examines the the role of organizational climate and contextual performance to the Effects of Personal Traits on Organizational Revenge Intention.

Keywords: Organizational Climate, Contextual Performance, Personality Traits, Intention of Organizational Revenge

PERSONALITY TRAITS

Personality, meaning "persona" in Latin was transferred from its root to English as "personality"As the belief has it, the intention was to point out the distinct differences between"persona" masks and individuals in the classic roman theatre (Tekin, 2012, p. 20). John and Srivastava (1999, p. 3) citing Allport and Odbert (1936), described the concept of "personality" as an integrity of behaviours that distinguishes an individual from the other.

1 This study was produced from the author's doctoral thesis

2 Asst. Prof. Dr., Trakya Üniversitesi, olgun.cetin@hotmail.com

3 Asoc. Prof. Dr., Trakya Üniversitesi, ilknurkumkale@gmail.com

Factors that Form Personality

Tomrukçu (2008, p. 14) pointed it out that personality displays its own charactersitics as a result of the interaction of biological, psychological and sociological factors. She also added that environment and participation are highly important in the formation of personality. Factors that affect formation of personality were stated by Tekin (2012, p. 92) as follows:

- Participation and Physical Structure Factors
- Family Factor
- Social and Cultural Factors
- Geographical and Physical Factors
- Situational Factors

Factors of Participation and Physical Structure Factors

Nielsen and Knardahl (2015, p. 5) define personality traits as innate differences and they also stated that factors that cause these differences are duty to the features of characteristic behavioural traits embedded in the genetic codes of human.

Family Factor

Citing Gergen and Morse (1967), Messina (1993, p. 17) emphasized that situations underlain by ill-fated and unfortunate events that a person experienced due to estrangement are oriented by family factors and family problems directed people towards estrangement. The importance of work in human life is shaped by the effect of family, friends, religion and culture (Perry, 2003, p. 25).

Geographical and Physical Factors

Work ethics is a result of a person's socializition (Perry, 2003, p. 25). In his doctoral thesis, Perry (2003, p. 25) tested the subjects of Protestant work ethics and workaholism on young academics. According to the results obtained, work ethics and workaholism are variants that instrumentally affect each other, and they are the results of socilizaiton of an individual.

Geographical and Physical Factors

It is known that geographical factors have influences on the formation of personality since old times. As an example, personality trait with emotianal balance is more observable in the Southern Hemisphere than the North (Allik & McCrae, 2004, p. 13). Environmental climate, natural conditions

and physical environmental factors are influential on the formation of personality traits (Yıldız & Özsoy, 2013, p. 7).

Situational Factors

A behaviour observed in some cases is not related to the type of personality he/she has but it's rather related to the type of situation he/she faces. In this regard, behavioural integrity that an individual display in different situations affects his/her personality (Bozkaya, 2013, p. 26).

Theoretical Approaches to Personality

Sigmund Freud, Alfred Adler, Karen Horney, Carl Gustav Jung, Erich Fromm, Hans Jurgen Eysenck and Otto Rank who put a lot of emphasis on organizational behavioural discipline put forward important theroies on the subject of personality that is important for the related literature. These theories are as follows:

- Freud's Psycho-analytic Theory
- Adler's Theory of Striving for Speriority
- Horney's Personality Theory
- Jung's Analytical Psychology Theory
- Fromm's Escape from Freedom Theory
- Eysenck's Factor Analytic Theory
- Rank's Personality Theory

Personality theory that is mostly benefited in the literature is the model developed with five-factor personality traits (FFPT).

Five-Factor Personality Traits (FFPT)

There are two reasons underlying the studies related to personality. These are based on estimation of human behaviours and understanding the causes of these behaviours (Cullen & Sackett, 2003). FFPT is one of the most successful models used today in determining human behaviour. The biggest contribution to the studies on personality comes from the studies related to the classification of personalities (Humbyrd, 2010). FFPT presents a common explanation to researhers about personality traits (Jia, 2008, p. 37). Named as The Big Five, FFPT is defined as five personality traits that are relatively independent of each other (Humbyrd, 2010). These traits are as follows (Aydoğmuş, 2011, p. 40):

- Extrovertness / Introvertness
- Conscientiousness/ Aimlessness

- Agreeableness/Disagreeableness
- Neuroticism/ Emotional Balance
- Openness to experience/ Closed to experience

Personality Trait of Extrovertness

Individuals who have extrovert personality trait are sociable, talkative and assertive people who enjoy interacting with others. If there are two words to define extrovert individuals, they are willingness and entrepreneurial (Raja, 2004). According to Bozkaya (2013), extrovert individuals enjoy active surrondings and they like expressing themselves in a happy and optimistic mood. They display comfortable attitudes in the crowd making others think that they are happy thus they are entertaining people.

Personality Trait of Conscientiousness

Personality trait of conscientiousness is mostly studied subject in the Five-Factor Personality Traits Model. Conscientious people are organized, attentive and scrupulous (Osatuyi, 2015, p. 12). Individuals who display a high conscientious personality are attentive, determined, and persistent and disciplined (Erol, 2013, p. 42). Individuals with low Conscientiousness are defined as lazy (Bozkaya, 2013, p. 39).

Personality Trait of Agreeableness

Individuals who display agreeable personality trait are friendly, helpful, donating, affectionate sympathetic with high social adaptation (John & Srivastava, 1999, p. 17). Fitch (2004, p. 9) citing Barrick ve Mount (1991), stated that agreeable people are not good at task performance. In addition, individuals with agreeable personality traits are reported to have lower exam nervousness.

Personality Trait of Openness to Experience

Openness to experience is being interested in original experiences, ideas, people and activities (Bozkaya, 2013, p. 40). Individuals with high openness personality trait are inquisitive and innovative and they are also interested in art. Individuals with low personality trait have stereotype life style and they like uniformity (Erol, 2013, p. 42).

Personality Trait of Neuroticism

Neuroticism is defined as a neurotic, uncomfortable and anxious mood that an individual develops in the situations he/she faces in which he/she doesn't like to take an action (Tomrukçu, 2008, p. 41). Individuals with

high neurotic personality trait develop negative behavioural pattern as they make negative and different comments about daily events compared to other personality traits (Tatlılıoğlu, 2014, p. 7).

INTENTION OF ORGANIZATIONAL REVENGE

Citing Stuckless and Goranson (1992), Bradfield and Aquino (1999, p. 3) define revenge as the strongest motivation that affects social behaviour and basic human instinct. Revenge can be expressed as a common and probably unpreventable response to injustice. It is also incited by desires to reestablish justice as a punishing and damaging reaction to the wrong doing perceived as a concept. Aquino, Tripp, and Bies (2006, p. 2) describe revenge as a physical or moral harm, injury, uncomforting situation or feeling to react aroused in the victim.

Causes of Revengeful Feelings

Sense of injustice is the main reason for the revengeful feeling as accepted by researchers such as Skarlicki and Folger (1997) ; Barber, Maltby, and Macaskill (2005); Bushman (2002); Extremera and Fernandez-Berrocal (2006) (Ogungbamila & Udegbe, 2014, p. 4). According to another study, revenge is a process and emotional integrity plays an important role in this process. On the other hand, Akın, Özdevecioğlu, and Ünlü (2012, p. 3) state that revenge results from the concepts of anger and antagonism.

Taking Revenge or Forgiveness

Kashdan (2014, p. 2) did a comprehensive research about the causes of revenge and he stated that there are three reasons that direct an individual to forgive instead of taking revenge. These are:

- To emphatise: If the individual replaces himself/herself with the offender as a victim, the feeling of forgiveness may probably look like a reasonable solution
- To feel secure: the individual who thinks he/she is going to feel more secure after forgiving may prefere to forgive instead of taking revenge.
- Future benefits: the victim by thinking what he or she will obtain (some benefits sush as peaceful working environment, reward, merits etc). by forgiving the offender may give up taking revenge (some benefits sush as comfortable working environment, reward, merits etc).

Kim (2009) stated that the irresistible search for revenge in the individual is actually not a solution-based behaviour considering all the consequences, in his studies, Kim points out that resentment after taking revenge can reach ambearable limits beyond the feeling of punishment. Search for revenge becomes a kind of feeling that leaves the individual all along with his/her past sufferings by redirecting the individual from his/her goals. Instead of living with this feeling, Goldsmith (2013) analyses the possible changes in individual with forgiveness as follows:

- As a result of forgiveness, the feeling of revenge formed in individual's mind leaves it to creative, constructive and energetic new positive feelings.
- Forgetting about the past sufferings will help the individual get rid of the thoughts that hurt him as he/she remembers about the past.
- Getting away from the revengeful feeling will make the individual feel that he/she achieved a difficult task and as a result, he/she will feel stronger.

Feeling of Revenge and Seeking Justice Relationship

The concepts of revenge and justice have often been used interchangeable and this usage has brought together big mistakep. Seltzer (2014) pointed out the differences between revenge and justice as follows:

- Revenge is emotional, justice is reasonable
- Revenge is egocentric, justice is we-centric
- Revenge is vengeful, justice is not
- Revenge is cyclic, justice is result
- Revenge is retaliatory, justice is for keeping the balance

The Intention of Organizational Revenge

As a result of behavioural and actual attitude of employees in the organization, organizatoanl revenge intention may come out as wrong behaviour patherns such as interpersonal violence or revengeful instinct (Ogungbamila & Udegbe, 2014, p. 3). The employee who is explosed to an unfair situation in the organization may consequently develop revengeful thoughts or he/she may tend to forgive or may ask for the compansation of the harm imposed on him/her (Akın et al., 2012, p. 3). On the other hand, his/her taking revenge may secure a peaceful environment but this may not be a type of behaviour that is (Özer, Sonğur, Kar, Top, & Erigüç, 2014, p. 2).

Types of the Intention of Organizational Revenge

Types of the Intention of Organizational Revenge are counterproductive work behaviours, employee theft and gossip.

Counterproductive Work Behaviours

Counterproductive Work Behaviours (CWBs) are a systematic revenge form that develops in the employee as a result of the feeling of injustice. In most common terms, it can be defined as intentional behaviours of the organizational member that are against the legal interests of the organization. CWBSs are negatively effective motivation instrument that may harm the organization or its members (Cohen, 2016, p. 1).

Employee Theft

Employee theft can be described as the abuse of the time that is supposed to be spent inside the organization and exploitation of the sources and assets belonging to the work place (Dierking, 1991, p. 12). In other words, it is taking out the money or equivelant assets outside the organization without permission and authorization (Kopko, 2008, p. 23).

Sabotage

The act of sabotage in the workplace is meant to damage organizational productivity, slow down, delay and also disrupt and harm work princibles. Between %33 and %75 of the employees display an act of sabotage against their organizations (Cohen, 2016, p. 2). Bradfield and Aquino (1999, p. 2) regards motivation as a cause of industrial sabotage.

Gossip

Gossip is a very common and also affective phenomenon on employees in the workplace (Kakar, 2013, p. 2). According to another definition, it is defined as valued but informal conversations about an organization member in his/her absence) (Ellwardt, Labianca, & Wittek, 2012, p. 1). In short, it is talks about the third parties (Young, 2001, p. 18).

ORGANIZATIONAL CLIMATE

Organizational climate is the personality of the organization; it is the total of intangible moral perceptions; it is a point of view of the members about the group they belong to (San Giacomo, 2011, p. 11); and it is the pscychological environment that individual behaviours are transferred (H. Doğan & Üngören, 2012, p. 28); and they are common perceptions of f the organization by employees (Yılmaz & Altınkurt, 2013, p. 2).

Dimensions of the Organizational Climate

Many dimensions of organizational climate that bear smilariteis have been specified in the literature. According to Zammuto and Krackover, Koys and Decotils, Kopelman, Goleman and Muchinsky, these are organizational climate dimensions. The most widely used organizational climate today are the ones specified by Litwin and Stringer.

Organizational Climate According to Litwin and Stringer

Litwin and Stringer (1968) are the first scientists to define the dimesions of organizational climate. In their studies in 1966, while Litwin and Stringer pointed out that organizational climate can be studied under 6 dimesions, in another study by them in 1968, they stated that those dimensions needed to be limited to 9. In some related studies, dimensions of sincerity and support were combined, and the number of dimensions was reduced to 8. While Litwin and Stringer explained the dimensions of organizational climate, McClelland benefited from the theory of needs.

Organizational Structure

It is a degree of control of individual behaviours by the organization (Secrist, Paden, & McNee, 1983, p. 11). The question that is needed to be asked by the leader is "How much rule, arrangement and bureauracy do organization members think exist in the organization?"

Responsibility

It is about how responsible are empolyees about the standards and expectations that they set about themselves related to past achievement performances, previous responsibilities and the outcome of the work. For that reason, the more an individual loses control of his or her own success, the more the motivation of task fulfillment decreases in the public eye (Arı, 2011, p. 20).

Rewarding

It is an effort towards maintaining an environment in which establishing communication with employees whether or not share the same ideas with them, explaining their actions to them, making it possible for the employees to make decisions, helping them solve problems about work, rewarding good work and often avoiding imposing control on employees' performance are essential (Küçüksarı, 2012, p. 35).

Risk

People who work in situations with uncertainty need to take some certain risks. This is a result of change. It is stated that quality, cooperation, risk

taking and an organizational climate that support confidence are necessary in motivating towards discovery and obtaining high performance climate (Ç. Doğan, 2009, p. 18).

Warmth

This dimension covers the feeling of love and affection that group members have for employees belonging to a group, perception of close and warm feelings, feelings of help and support and friendship and companionship. Perceived support that directors and other group members give will affect organizational climate in a way that supports solidarity (Dinçer, 2013, p. 29).

Support

A a result of the studies conducted on social support and organizational support, it was found that when employees display a high level of perception of organizational support, their commitment to both work and the organization becomes higher and their performance and intentions of organizational revenge are positively affected (Tutar & Altınöz, 2010).

Conflict

It is a degree of completion and cooperation with other employees to finish the work inside the organization and use of the resources belonging to the organization. If there is a discrimination of power, goals and belief in the organization and if this creates conflict and disagreement among individuals, this shows a high level of conflict in the organization. If there is a harmony in goals and beliefs and if this creates a cooperative spirit among individuals, the conflict level is found low in that organization (Özsoy, 2012, p. 49).

Standart

It is a level at which difficulties and explicitness of the goals are understandable and work/performance rate is reasonable and acceptable (Secrist et al., 1983, p. 11). The leader must answer this question," Are there clear standards for success and failure?" (H. Doğan & Üngören, 2009, p. 4).

Identity

It is a feeling that employees have in an organization as a part and valuable member of the organization (Ötken & Cenkci, 2015, p. 6). (Ötken & Cenkci, 2015, p. 6)(Ötken & Cenkci, 2015, p. 6)The problem that the leader needs to clarify should be "whether there are any effforts to make employees in the organization feel as a part/member of the organization?"

Type of Organizational Climate

The fact that organizational climate is affected by many variants and the difficulty to measure it led many researchers to make differential classifications related to the types of organizational climate (Akyüz, 2000, p. 49).

Open Climate

Croft and Halpin stated that open climate is the most efficient (San Giacomo, 2011, p. 32) and desired type of climate (Phillips & Todd, 1969, p. 24). Open climate, in some definitons, may read as "positive climate" (Willett, 2009, p. 89). Positive climate is defined as" cooperation and respect among organization members" (Vaux, 2015, p. 34).

Independent Climate

Employees should not be forced for high performance and the expression that "one needs to work hard" must be avoided. Employees work on their own (Mercan, 2007, p. 84). It is a kind of climate which attaches more importance to socialization and where pressure should be considered as no barrier to work (Yahşi, 2014, p. 20).

Controlled Climate

In controlled climate, the manager accepts only what he or she says as a truth. It is a kind of climate where strict written rules are dominant, and the work morale is respectively low and instaibility is observed (Kahraman, 2011: p.7).

Sincere Climate

Citing Peker (1993), Eryılmaz (2014, p. 10) stated that the friendly environment that is supposed to exist in the sincere climate will be established by both employees and managers. The factor with the first priority is to meet social needs. The morale of the employees is on average. The manager always strives to reflect an image on employees that he or she has a good family life.

Paternalist Climate

Özdemir (2006, p. 47), (Eryılmaz (2014) stated that although managers focus on controlling his or her subordinates in this kind of climate, they are not efficient enough in meeting the social needs of his or her employees. Employees break into various groups among themselves and they work unefficiently.

Closed Climate

It is an official organizational climate where managers are not effective in directing employees and there is no cooperation and group success is at its minimum level. In closed climate, managers are not interested in the richness of their employees (Küçüksarı, 2012, p. 30).

CONTEXTUAL PERFORMANCE

Performance is "the fulfillment of obligations of an employee that has been predetermined with related rules and it is a display of certain behaviours that are expected of him or her" and "set of behaviours that contribute to the goal and targets of the organization" (Bağcı, 2014, p. 4).

Types of Performance

Citing Shields and Hanser, (1990), Aktaş and Şimşek (2014, p. 8) state that related to the types of performance, factors of (can do) and (will do) can be taken into consideration. While the (can do) classification is concerned with employee's skills and capacities, (will do) is concerned with employee's willingness about his or her work. However, Borman and Mottowidlo (1993) made a "task" and "contextual performance" classification. Apart from this, the number of classifications related to performance is quite a lot and there is no negotiated classification.

Task Performance and Contextual Performance

Citing Jawahar and Carr (2007, p. 331) and Borman and Motowidlo (1997, p. 99), Bağcı (2014, p. 4) stated that the concept of performance has two dimensions as task performance and contextual performance. Task performance, as described by Y. Doğan (2005, p. 61), is a set of behaviours that consists of activities that provide indirect support to the production of service and products or the basic technical processes of the organization. Contextual performance includes cases where employees adapt current rules and procedures and obey and follow them without exceptions, make commitments to the task to be fulfilled, attach importance to individuals and treat them helpfully (Motowildo, 1997, p.82; Befort ve Hattrup, 2003, p.20; Mirap, 2008, p.143).

Factors Affecting Contextual Performance

As contextual performance is a set of all off-duty behaviours and efforts displayed by the employee resulting from psychological and environmental effects spread throughout the organization (Decuir, 1999, p. 33), factors that affect contextual performance in employees need to be examined carefully.

In their article, Shalley and Gilson (2004, p. 3) studied the factors that affect contextual performance in detail. Factors that were studied under four headings are as follows:

Personal Factors: Woodman, Sawyer, and Griffin (1993, p. 7) stated that personal factors that influence contextual performance might include these: Personal traits, contextual and creative traits, education level and expertise.

Work Factors: They are the factors that affect contextual performance of the employee in relation to his or her work. These can be grouped as charactersitics of the work, organizational goals, sufficiency of the resources, rewarding and organizational support (Shalley & Gilson, 2004, p. 5).

Team Factors: The relationship that the employee established with other members and the organization itself will be effective on contextual performance. Shalley and Gilson (2004, p. 10) studied team factors under two headings as differences between social environment and members,

Organizational Factors: Shalley and Gilson (2004, p. 12) studied organizational factors under two headings as human resources and organizational climate.

Dimensions of Contextual Performance

Citing Borman and Motowildo (1993), McClamb (2015, p. 39), Avis (2001, p. 31), Bish and Kabanoff (2014, p. 2), Solomonson (1999, p. 2), Impelman (2007, p. 101), Vey (2003, p. 38), outlined the dimensions of contextual performance as voluntariness, self-assertion, helpfulness, obedience to rules and being supportive of the organization.

Contextual Performance Dimensions According to Aryee, Sun, Chen, Debrah, Abod and Hunthausen

Citing Masterson, Lewis, Goldman and Taylor (2000), Aryee, Sun, Chen, and Debrah (2008, p. 4), Abod (2001, p. 114), Hunthausen (2000, p. 151) pointed out the dimensions of contextual performance commitment to work and interpersonal facilitation. Jawahar and Carr (2007, p. 2) stated that contextual performance needs to consist of at least two dimensions. The first one is commitment to work and interpersonal interaction

Contextual Performance Dimensions According to Coleman and Borman

Venetta I. Coleman and Borman (2000, p. 32) developed a different approach related to the sizing of contextual performance. They grouped 27 contextual performance behaviours under 4 factors that they developed from organizational citizenship and organizational commitment and rich

literature review. These are helping others and cooperating with them, supporting organizational outcome, obeying rules and carrying out task performance sucessfully.

THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN PERSONALITY TRAITS AND ORGANIZATIONAL REVENGE

The common belief about the types of organizational revenge is the classification as counterproductive work behaviours, employee theft and gossip.

The Relationship between Personality Traits and Counterproductive Work Behaviours

Citing Roberts, Harms, Caspi, ve Moffitt (2007), Phipps, Prieto, and Deis (2015, p. 12), in his theoretical study, stated that statistically there is a siginificant and positive relationship between Neuroticism and CWBs. It was found that while employees who have Agreeableness personality trait display CWBs towards organization members, employees with the personality trait of Conscientiousness were exposed to CWBs by the organization.

In his study of 932 employees, in a way that supports his own literature, Resuloğlu Bağırzade (2014, p. 8) found that employees with the personality traits of Agreeableness ($r=-0,32$, $p<0,01$) and Neuroticism trait ($r=-0,37$, $p<0,01$) display CWBs towards organization members. Bağırzade found that compared to employees with low Agreeableness personality trait, employees with high Agreeableness personality trait are more inclined to show CWBs towards organization memberp.

In their study of 234 employees, Bolton, Becker, and Barber (2010, p. 4) stated that employees who display Conscientiousness ($\beta=-0,18$, $p<0,05$) and Agreeableness ($\beta=-0,15$, $p<0,05$) personality trait are more inclined to show anti-objective behaviours.

Bowling and Eschleman (2010, p. 7) conducted successful studies with a sample group of 80.000 people within" The Study Response Project". As a result, they found a negative relationship between CWBs towards individuals and Conscientiousness ($\beta=-0,11$, $p<0,01$) and Agreeableness ($\beta=-0,14$, $p<0,01$)

In their study with 203 employees in South Italy, Chirumbolo (2015, p. 12) found a negative relationship between CWBs and Openness to experience personality trait ($\beta=-0,10$, $p<0,05$). In this case, people who are open to experience tend to show less CWBs as their personality traits increase.

In their study of 131 employees in Australia, Flaherty and Moss (2007, p. 14) researched the moderator effect of personality traits in the relationship between distributional justice and CWBs. According to the obtained results, no moderator effect of the personality traits of Openness to experience, Extrovertness, Conscientiousness was found on the relationship between distributional justice and CWBs. The moderator effect was observed in the personality traits of Agreeableness and Neuroticism.

In his literature studies conducted in the West and compatably in another study of 612 employees in his native country Taiwan, Smithikrai (2008, p. 7) stated there is a negative relationship between CWBs and Responsiblity (β=-0,49, p<0,01) and Agreeableness (β=-0,42, p<0,01). In addition, as Conscientiousness personality trait increases, CWBs decrease.

In their study of 915 undergradaute students in the United States of America, Spector and Zhou (2014) found a negative relationship between CWBs and personality traits of Responsibility (β=-0,51, p<0,05) and Agreeableness(β=-0,50, p<0,05) and Neuroticism(β=-0,31, p<0,01). According to the results, as the Agreeableness personality trait in male and female rises, CWBs towards the organization decrease.

In their compilation of the articles published between 1861 and 2013, Grijalva and Newman (2015, p. 25) found a negative relationship between CWBs and the personality traits of Neuroticism. (β=-0,23, p<0,01), Agreeableness (β=-0,35, p<0,01) and Conscientiousness (β=-0,31, p<0,01).

In their study of 517 participants from England, Holland, Turkey and Greece,) Jensen and Patel (2011, p. 1) stated that there is a strong relationship between the personal traits of Conscientiousness, Agreeableness and Neuroticism and CWBS but a weak relationship between CWBs and the personal traits of Extrovertness and Openness to experience.

In their study of 193 students at Midwestern university, Scherer, Baysinger, Zolynsky, and LeBreton (2013, p. 3) pointed out that there is a strong and negative relationship between CWBS and the personality traits of Agreeableness and Conscientiousness, which is in parallel with the results in literature.

Spector and Zhou (2014, p. 1) stated that there is a negative relationship between CWBs towards the organization and the Agreeableness personality trait, a positive relationship between the personal traits of Neuroticism and Openness to experience, a negative relationship between CWBSs towards individuals and the personality traits of Extrovertness and Agreeableness, a positive relationship between the personality traits of Neuroticism and Openness to experience.

In their literature study, Mount, Ilies, and Johnson (2006, p. 7) stated that there is a negative relationship between the personality traits of

Conscientiousness, Agreeableness and Emotional balance and CWBS. As result of the study done with 141 restaurant employees from 10 different fastfood restaurants, while CWBstowards organization members displayed the highest degree of relationship with Agreeableness personality trait, CWBs towards organization showed the highest degree of relationship with personality traits of Conscientiousness and Emotional balance.

In parallel with previously mentioned authors, Zhou, Meier, and Spector (2014) stated that as there is a negative relationship between the personality traits of Conscientiousness and CWBs and there is no relationship between the personality traits of Extrovertness and Openness to experience and CWBs. As result of the study conducted with 932 university students, they found findings that are similar to the ones in the literature.

Similar to the results in the literature, Oh and Matsuoka (2015, p. 11) found a negative relationship between the Agreeableness personality trait and CWBs towards organization members, and the personality traits of Conscientiousness, and CWBs towards the organization. Buck (2011, p. 112) found a negative relationship between Agreeableness personality trait and CWBs.

Relationship between Personality Traits and Employee Theft

In their studies, Bolton et al. (2010, p. 4) found a negative relationship (β=-0,14, $p<0,05$) between extrovertness personality trait and employee theft

In his literature study Kolz (1999, p. 1) stated that individuals who show the personality traits of Conscientiousness, Agreeableness and Neuroticism may show a tendency to employee theft. In his study of 218 sales staff, Kolz pointed out that the highest level of relationship with employee theft is first found with Agreeableness personality trait which is followed by Conscientiousness and finally Neuroticism personality traits.

Relationship between Personality Traits and Sabotage

In their studies, Bolton et al. (2010, p. 4) found a negative (β=-0,25, $p<0,001$) relationship between Conscientiousness personality trait and sabotage but a positive (β=0,19, $p<0,05$) relationship between neuroticism personality trait and sabotage.

The studies of Chi, Tsai, and Tseng (2013) play an important role in terms of their contribution to the literature, where the role of personality in the relationship between the negative behaviours of the customers and the sabotage behaviours of the service staff is researched. According to the obtained results, there is a negative relationship between extrovertness personality trait and sabotage but a positive relationship between

Neuroticism personality trait and sabotage.

Altıntaş (2009, p. 11) found significant and positive relationship between Neuroticism personality trait and violence sabotage (β=0,275, p <0.01), Agreeableness personality trait and information sabotage (β=0,319, p <0.01), rude personality trait and task sabotage (β=0,322, p <0.01), careful personality trait and task sabotage (β=0,231, p <0.01)

Relationship Between Personality Traits and Gossip

The relationship between gossip and personality traits was researched by Randall Curtis Young as a doctoral thesis. Young (2001, p. 30) found a strong and positive relationship between the personality traits of Machiavellism, Social appeal and Agreeableness.

ORGANIZATIONAL CLIMATE AND THE INTENTION OF ORGANIZATIONAL REVENGE RELATIONSHIP

In their study of 120 employees in Israel, Chernyak-Hai and Tziner (2014, p. 2) found a negative strong relationship between organizational climate and CWBs (β=-0,42, p<0,001).

Cox (2008, p. 6) did a research on 429 teachers about measuring the effect of supportive climate in organizations on forgiveness tendency that results from the intention of revenge. According to this, supportive climate has a significant and positive effect on the forgiveness tendency (β=0,26, p<0,001).

In their literature review, Kanten and Ulker (2013, p. 6) stated that providing social support to employees resulted in decrease in CWBs due to the trust put in them. In their study of 204 employees, Kanten and Ülker reached following results: there is a negative relationship between CWBs and Sincerity (β=-0,308), Support (β=-0,253) and Standards (β=-0,177) that are one of the lower dimensions of the organizational climate. No relationship was found between CWBs and Rewarding, and lower dimension of Structure and Risk factors.

In their study of 420 empolyees and 30 managers in 32 hotels, Kao, Cheng, Kuo, and Huang (2014, p. 8) studied stress, sabotage and climate issues in the context of moderator effect. A negative relationship was found between organizational climate and sabotage (r=-0,42, p<0,01). In addion, in the case of low organizational climate, it was observed that the probability of sabotage increases so does the manager-oriented stress; however, in the case of high organizational climate, the probability of sabotage decreases as the manager-oriented stress increases.

According to their study of 849 employees working at 19 supermarkets, Kulas, McInnerney, DeMuth, and Jadwinski (2007, p. 4) found a positive and significant relationship between employee theft (r=0,25, p<0,01) and employee time theft (r=0,25, p<0,01) and organizational climate.

Examining the relationship between ethical climate in organizations and CWBs, S. Doğan and Kılıç (2013, p. 12) realized their study in a public institution with 659 employees., According to the results obtained, a negative relationship was found between ethical climate and CWBs (β=-0,184, p<0,004).

In their theoretical study, Litzky, Eddleston, and Kidder (2006, p. 10) found that destructive behaviours against the organization will be diminished as a result of the creation of an ethical climate by managers.

Alias, Mohd Rasdi, Ismail, and Abu Samah (2013, p. 12) pointed out that low ethical climate will cause employees to develop negative work behaviours.

In their study of 670 employees, Fagbohungbe, Akinbode, and Ayodeji (2012, p. 6) studied the possible causes of the behaviours that may lead to revenge in the employee. According to this, among leading primary factors that cause employees to display aggressive behavours are anxiety about career (β=0,225, p<0,05), business identity (β=-0,195, p<0,05), managerial behaviour (β=-0,185, p<0,05) and job difficulty (β=-0,165, p<0,059)

In their study of 160 university students, Tarkan and Tepeci (2006, p. 6) found there is a significant and negative relationship between employee theft and interactional justice.

In their study of 122 supermarket employees in Chicago and 132 university students, Kamp and Brooks (1991, p. 3) studied the relationship between dissatisfaction and employee theft. According to the results obtained, a significant and positive relationship was found between job dissatisfaction and employee theft both in supermarket employees (β=0,16, p<0,05) and job dissatisfaction both in supermarket employees (β=0,16, p<0,05) and university students (β=0,36, p<0,05).

PERSONALITY TRAITS AND PERFORMANCE RELATIONSHIP

In their literature study, Antonioni and Park (2001, p. 5) found a positive relationship between Agreeableness personality trait and performance.

In their literature review, Beaty Jr, Cleveland, and Murphy (2001, p. 3) stated that all personality traits are related to contextual performance. In their study of 58 employees, the researchrers reached the following results:

there is a negative relationship between weak contextual performance and Neuroticism (r=-0,48, p<0,10); a positive relationship between high contextual performance and personality traits of Agreeableness (r=0,37, p<0,05), Conscientiousness (r=0,27, p<0,10), Openness to experience (r=0,23, p<0,10)

In their study of 79 employees done in a public cooperation Gellatly and Irving (2001, p. 7) found that Ethere is a positive and significant relationship between extrovertness personality trait and contextual performance (r=0,200, p<0,05.). No relationship was found between the personality traits of Agreeableness and Conscientiousness in the study.

In their study of 222 employees in 5 different businesses Greenidge, Devonish, and Alleyne (2014, p. 11) reached the following results: a positive and significant relationship was found between contextual performance and the personality traits of Agreeableness (r=0,240, p<0,10), Conscientiousness (r=0,300, p<0,10) and Neuroticism (r=0,210, p<0,10). Similar results were also obtained in regression analyses. A positive and significant relationship was found between contextual performance and the personality traits of Agreeableness (β=0,15, p<0,001), Conscientiousness (β=0,28, p<0,001) and Neuroticism (β=0,13, p<0,05).

In their study of 92 office workers, Hogan, Rybicki, and Borman (1998, p. 10) found a positive relationship between contextual performance and personality traits of Agreeableness (r=-0,17, p<0,05) and Cautiousness (r=0,19, p<0,05).

In their study of 505 employees in 17 companies in Thailand, Lee, Yang, Wan, and Chen (2010, p. 8) reached following results: there is a positive relationship between contextual performance and the personality traits of Conscientiousness,

In their study of 298 teachers, Lev and Koslowsky (2012, p. 15) found a positive and significant relationship between contextual performance and Conscientiousness personality trait (r=0,23, p<0,05).

In their study of 85 employees in Spain, Moscoso and Salgado (2004, p. 5) Moscoso and Salgado (2004, p. 5) obtained the following results: there is a negative relationship between contextual performance and narcissitic (r=-0,22, p<0,05), paranoid (r=-0,32, p<0,01), shy (r=-0,27, p<0,05), depressive (r=-0,27, p<0,05), aggressive (r=-0,34, p<0,01), defensive (r=-0,27, p<0,01) ve schizotypal (r=-0,43, p<0,01) personality traits.

In their study of 176 employees and 92 managers in China, Wang, Begley, Hui, and Lee (2012, p. 182) found a positive and siginificant (r=0,31, p<0,01) relationship between creative performance and personality trait of Conscientiousness

In their study of 227 employees, Berry, Kim, Wang, Thompson, and Mobley (2013, p. 21) found a positive and significant relationship between contextual performance and personality trait of extrovertness (β=0,10, p<0,05).

In his thesis study of 251 participants, Grojean (2003, p. 89) found a positive and siginificant relationship between contextual performance and personality trait of Conscientiousness (r=0,19, p<0,05). He found no relationship between contextual performance and other personality traits.

In his doctoral thesis, Pedooem (2007, p. 134) found a positive correlation relationship between contextual performance and personality traits of honesty (r=0,50, p<0,01), Extroverness (r=0,22, p<0,05), Agreeableness (r=0,37, p<0,01), Conscientiousness (r=0,55, p<0,01), Openness to experience (r=0,42, p<0,01).

In his doctoral thesis done on 233 employees at airline companies, Salomon (2000, p. 97) found a positive relationship between contextual performance dimension, work commitment and personality trait of Conscientiousness (r=0,22, p<0,01).

CONCLUSION

This study is derived from the conceptual part of the doctoral thesis that the author has done with the same name. The theoretical part of the study includes definitions and detailed explanations of personality traits, organizational revenge intention, organizational climate and contextual performance. In the study the conceptual definitions were examined together with their sub-dimensions; development processes of concepts and their relations with each other are discussed.

For this purpose, 21 study related to explaining the relationship between personality traits and organizational revenge intention, 10 study related to explaining the relationship between organizational climate and organizational revenge intention, and 13 study related to explaining the relationship between personality traits and performance were examined. These studies were examined through sample volume, measurement tools and numerical data related to them, and the results of the studies were included as well.

In future studies, organizational justice perception can be tested instead of organizational revenge intent, and the results can be compared with the results of this study. Thus, the managerial effects of injustice perceptions and revengeful behaviors in the workplace can be examined. The intention of organizational revenge can be considered as a cause, not a result. Thus, the effect of organizational revenge intention on the intention to leave

the occupation can be examined. Thus, in organizations, the intention of the individual to leave the occupation with the revenge feelings will be determined and necessary precautions will be taken.

From the conceptual information obtained in this study, the following suggestions can be made so that the managers can direct the relationship between the personality traits and the intention of organizational revenge to the benefit of the organization:

- Personality traits should be determined by carefully reviewing recurring behaviors of the employee's and general attitudes towards events.,
- Work should be done to prevent the occurrence of organizational climate, which may lead to negative emotions in the workplace.
- Any dispute that may arise as a consequence of the perception of injustice among the employees should be eliminated or reduced by observing and timely intervention.
- In addition to task performance in employees, contextual performance is also to be explored.

REFERENCES

Abod, E. T. (2001). *Interpersonal Characteristics and Citizenship Climate as Predictors of Contextual Performance in Organizations.* (3000903 Ph.D.), George Mason University, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/230807728?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Akın, M., Özdevecioğlu, M., & Ünlü, O. (2012). Örgütlerde İntikam Niyeti ve Affetme Eğiliminin Çalışanların Ruh Sağlıkları ile İlişkisi. *Amme İdaresi Dergisi, 45*(1), 77-97.

Aktaş, H., & Şimşek, E. (2014). Örgütsel Sessizlik ile Algılanan Bireysel Performans, Örgüt Kültürü ve Demografik Değişkenler Arasındaki Etkileşim. *The Interactions of Organizational Silence with Perceived Individual Performance, Organizational Culture and Demographic Variables, 14*(28), 24-52.

Akyüz, M. (2000). Okul Öncesi Eğitim Kurumlarında Örgüt İklimi ve İş Doyumu. *Ege Üniversitesi Eğitim Fakültesi Yayınları.*

Alias, M., Mohd Rasdi, R., Ismail, M., & Abu Samah, B. (2013). Predictors of Workplace Deviant Behaviour: HRD Agenda for Malaysian Support Personnel. *European Journal of Training and Development, 37*(2), 161-182.

Allik, J., & McCrae, R. R. (2004). Toward a Geography of Personality Traits: Patterns of Profiles Across 36 Cultures. *Journal of Cross-Cultural Psychology*(1), 13.

Altıntaş, F. Ç. (2009). Kişiliğin Algılanan Örgütsel Sabotaj Davranışları Üzerindeki Etkisi *Hacettepe Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi*, 95.

Antonioni, D., & Park, H. (2001). The Effects of Personality Similarity on Peer Ratings of Contextual Work Behaviors. *Personnel Psychology, 54*(2), 331-360.

Aquino, K., Tripp, T. M., & Bies, R. J. (2006). Getting Even or Moving on? Power, Procedural Justice, and Types of Offense as Predictors of Revenge, Forgiveness, Reconciliation, and Avoidance in Organizations. *Journal of applied psychology, 91*(3), 653.

Arı, S. (2011). *Örgüt İkliminin İşle Bütünleşme Üzerine Etkisi ve Bir Uygulama.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), İstanbul Üniversitesi, İstanbul. (15)

Aryee, S., Sun, L.-Y., Chen, Z. X. G., & Debrah, Y. A. (2008). Abusive Supervision and Contextual Performance: The Mediating Role of Emotional Exhaustion and the Moderating Role of Work Unit Structure. *Management and Organization Review*(3), 393. doi:10.1111/j.1740-8784.2008.00118.x

Avis, J. M. (2001). *An Examination of the Prediction of Overall, Task, and Contextual Performance Using Three Selection Measures for a Service-Type Occupation.* (3038671 Ph.D.), The University of Southern Mississippi, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/251008840?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Aydoğmuş, C. (2011). *Kişilik Özellikleri ile İş Tatmini İlişkisi Üzerinde Psikolojik Güçlendirme ve Dönüşümcü Liderlik Algısının Etkileri.* (Ph.D), Hacettepe Üniversitesi, Ankara.

Bağcı, Z. (2014). Çalışanların İş Doyumunun Görev ve Bağlamsal Performansları Üzerindeki Etkisi. *The Effect of Job Satisfaction of Employee on Task and Contextual Performance*(24), 58.

Beaty Jr, J. C., Cleveland, J. N., & Murphy, K. R. (2001). The Relation between Personality and Contextual Performance in "Strong" versus "Weak" Situations. *Human Performance, 14*(2), 125-148.

Berry, C. M., Kim, A., Wang, Y., Thompson, R., & Mobley, W. H. (2013). Five-Factor Model Personality Measures and Sex-Based Differential Prediction of Performance. *Applied Psychology, 62*(1), 13-43.

Bish, A. J., & Kabanoff, B. (2014). Star Performers: Task and Contextual Performance are Components, but are They Enough? *Asia Pacific Journal of Human Resources, 52*(1), 110-127. doi:10.1111/1744-7941.12017

Bolton, L. R., Becker, L. K., & Barber, L. K. (2010). Big Five Trait Predictors of Differential Counterproductive Work Behavior Dimensions. *Personality and Individual Differences, 49*(5), 537-541.

Bowling, N. A., & Eschleman, K. J. (2010). Employee Personality as a Moderator of the Relationships between Work Stressors and Counterproductive Work Behavior. *Journal of occupational health psychology, 15*(1), 91.

Bozkaya, E. (2013). *Örgüt Çalışanlarının Kişilik Özellikleri ile Örgütsel Bağlılıkları Arasındaki İlişkinin İncelenmesi: Hiyerarşik Yapısı Yüksek Bir Kurumda Uygulama.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Balıkesir Üniversitesi, Balıkesir.

Bradfield, M., & Aquino, K. (1999). The Effects of Blame Attributions and Offender Likableness on Forgiveness and Revenge in the Workplace. *Journal of Management, 25*(5), 607-631.

Chernyak-Hai, L., & Tziner, A. (2014). Relationships between Counterproductive Work Behavior, Perceived Justice and Climate, Occupational Status, and Leader-Member Exchange. *Revista de Psicología del Trabajo y de las Organizaciones, 30*(1), 1-12.

Chi, N.-W., Tsai, W.-C., & Tseng, S.-M. (2013). Customer Negative Events and Employee Service Sabotage: The Roles of Employee Hostility, Personality and Group Affective Tone. *Work and Stress, 27*(3), 298-319.

Chirumbolo, A. (2015). The Impact of Job Insecurity on Counterproductive Work Behaviors: The Moderating Role of Honesty–Humility Personality Trait. *Journal of Psychology, 149*(6), 554-569. doi:10.1080/00223980.2014.916250

Cohen, A. (2016). Are They among Us? A Conceptual Framework of the Relationship between the Dark Triad Personality and Counterproductive Work Behaviors (CWBs). *Human Resource Management Review, 26*(1), 69-85.

Cox, S. (2008). *A Forgiving Workplace: An Investigation of Forgiveness Climate, Individual Differences and Workplace Outcomes*: Louisiana Tech University.

Cullen, M. J., & Sackett, P. R. (2003). *Personality and Work: Reconsidering the Role of Personality in Organizations*. San Francisco: Jossey-Bass.

Decuir, A. D. (1999). *Satisfaction and Performance: The Explanatory Role of the Task vs. Contextual Performance Distinction.* (9957412 Ph.D.), Texas A and M University, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304563063?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Dierking, L. J. (1991). *Employee Theft in the Retail Industry.* (1344379 M.A.), California State University, Long Beach, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/303976435?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Dinçer, E. (2013). *Örgüt İklimi ve Örgütsel Vatandaşlık Davranışı Arasındaki İlişki: Bir Kamu Kurumunda Araştırma.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Gazi Üniversitesi, Ankara.

Doğan, Ç. (2009). *Örgüt İkliminin İş Tatmini Üzerine Etkisi: Bir Uygulama.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Marmara Üniversitesi, İstanbul. (17)

Doğan, H., & Üngören, E. (2009). Farklı Meslek Gruplarındaki Çalışanların Örgüt İklimi Algılamaları ve Alanya Başkent Hastanesi'nde Bir Araştırma. *Gazi Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi, 11*(2), 41-58.

Doğan, H., & Üngören, E. (2012). Örgüt İklimi ve İş Tatmini İlişkisi: Hemşirelere Yönelik Karşılaştırmalı Bir Analiz Çalışması. *International Journal of Economic and Administrative Studies, 4*(8).

Doğan, S., & Kılıç, S. (2013). Algılanan Örgütsel Etik İklim ve Üretkenlik Karşıtı İş Davranışları Arasındaki İlişkilerin İncelenmesi.

Ellwardt, L., Labianca, G., & Wittek, R. (2012). Who are the Objects of Positive and Negative Gossip at Work? A Social Network Perspective on Workplace Gossip. *Social Networks, 34*, 193-205. doi:10.1016/j.socnet.2011.11.003

Erol, E. (2013). *Bireylerin Kişilik Tipleri ve Demografik Özelliklerinin Kariyer Tercihlerindeki Rolüne İlişkin Bir Araştırma.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Sakarya Üniversitesi, Sakarya.

Eryılmaz, İ. (2014). *Örgüt İkliminin Algılanan Örgütsel Politika Üzerine Etkisi: Kamu Sektöründe Bir Araştırma.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Celal Bayar Üniversitesi, Manisa. (7)

Fagbohungbe, B. O., Akinbode, G. A., & Ayodeji, F. (2012). Organizational Determinants of Workplace Deviant Behaviours: An Empirical Analysis in Nigeria. *International Journal of Business and Management, 7*(5), 207.

Fitch, B. D. (2004). *A Test of the Relationship between Personality Traits and Test Anxiety.* (Ph.D), Fıeldıng Graduate Instıtute,

Flaherty, S., & Moss, S. A. (2007). The Impact of Personality and Team Context on the Relationship between Workplace Injustice and Counterproductive Work Behavior. *Journal of Applied Social Psychology, 37*(11), 2549-2575.

Gellatly, I. R., & Irving, P. G. (2001). Personality, Autonomy, and Contextual Performance of Managers. *Human Performance, 14*(3), 231-245.

Goldsmith, B. (2013). Is Revenge Worth the Effort? Retrieved from https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/emotional-fitness/201307/is-revenge-worth-the-effort

Greenidge, D., Devonish, D., & Alleyne, P. (2014). The Relationship between Ability-based Emotional Intelligence and Contextual Performance and Counterproductive Work Behaviors: A Test of the Mediating Effects of Job Satisfaction. *Human Performance, 27*(3), 225-242.

Grijalva, E., & Newman, D. A. (2015). Narcissism and Counterproductive Work Behavior (CWB): Meta-analysis and Consideration of Collectivist Culture, Big Five Personality, and Narcissism's Facet Structure. *Applied Psychology, 64*(1), 93-126.

Grojean, M. W. (2003). Characteristic Adaptation as a Mediator between Personality and Contextual Performance: A Partial Test of the McCrae and Costa (1996) Model (Robert R. McCrae, Paul T. Costa).

Hogan, J., Rybicki, S. L., & Borman, W. C. (1998). Relations between Contextual Performance, Personality, and Occupational Advancement. *Human Performance, 11*(2-3), 189-207.

Humbyrd, M. (2010). *The Relationship of Personality Traits to Satisfaction with the Team: A Study of Interdisciplinary Teacher Teams in Rhode Island Middle Schools.* (Ph.D), Johnson and Wales University,

Hunthausen, J. M. (2000). *Predictors of Task and Contextual Performance: Frame-of-Reference Effects and Applicant Reaction Effects on Selection System Validity.* (9961790 Ph.D.), Portland State University, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304615529?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Impelman, K. (2007). *How does Personality Relate to Contextual Performance, Turnover, and Customer Service?* (3300955 Ph.D.), University of North Texas, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304830603?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Jawahar, I., & Carr, D. (2007). Conscientiousness and Contextual Performance: The Compensatory Effects of Perceived Organizational Support and Leader-Member Exchange. *Journal of Managerial Psychology, 22*(4), 330-349.

Jensen, J. M., & Patel, P. C. (2011). Predicting Counterproductive Work Behavior from the Interaction of Personality Traits. *Personality and Individual Differences, 51*(4), 466-471.

Jia, H. H. (2008). *Relationships between The Big Five Personality Dimensions and Cyberloafing Behavior.* (3320314 Ph.D.), Southern Illinois University at Carbondale, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304474715?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

John, O., & Srivastava, S. (1999). The Big Five Trait Taxonomy: History, Measurement, and Theoretical Perspectives. In L. Pervin & O. John (Eds.), *Handbook of Personality: Theory and Research* (pp. 102-138): Guilford Press.

Kakar, U. M. (2013). *Workplace Gossip as a Way of Coping with Occupational Stress.* (3555175 Ph.D.), State University of New York at Albany, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/1318673293?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Kamp, J., & Brooks, P. (1991). Perceived Organizational Climate and Employee Counterproductivity. *Journal of Business and Psychology, 5*(4), 447-458.

Kanten, P., & Ulker, F. E. (2013). The Effect of Organizational Climate on Counterproductive Behaviors: An Empirical Study on the Employees of Manufacturing Enterprises. *The Macrotheme Review, 2*(4), 144-160.

Kao, F. H., Cheng, B. S., Kuo, C. C., & Huang, M. P. (2014). Stressors, Withdrawal, and Sabotage in Frontline Employees: The Moderating Effects of Caring and Service Climates. *Journal of occupational and organizational psychology, 87*(4), 755-780.

Kashdan, T. B. (2014). Three Reasons Why Revenge is Okay and Forgiveness is Easy. Retrieved from https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/curious/201408/three-reasons-why-revenge-is-okay-and-forgiveness-is-easy

Kim, J. (2009). Why Getting Revenge isn't Worth It. Retrieved from https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/brainstorm/200911/why-getting-revenge-isnt-worth-it

Kolz, A. P. (1999). Personality Predictors of Retail Employee Theft and Counterproductive Behavior. *Journal of Professional Services Marketing, 19*(2), 107.

Kopko, V. P. (2008). *Exploring Employee Theft in a Small Business: A Case Study.* (3327497 D.B.A.), Northcentral University, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304828126?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Küçüksarı, Ş. (2012). *Örgüt İklimi ile Stres Arasındaki İlişkinin Belirlenmesine Yönelik Bir Araştırma.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Dumlupınar Üniversitesi, Kütahya. (3)

Kulas, J. T., McInnerney, J. E., DeMuth, R. F., & Jadwinski, V. (2007). Employee Satisfaction and Theft: Testing Climate Perceptions as a Mediator. *The Journal of Psychology, 141*(4), 389-402.

Lee, Y.-H., Yang, L.-S., Wan, K. M., & Chen, G.-H. (2010). Interactive Effects of Personality and Friendship Networks on Contextual Performance. *Social Behavior and Personality: an international journal, 38*(2), 197-208.

Lev, S., & Koslowsky, M. (2012). On-the-Job Embeddedness as a Mediator between Conscientiousness and School Teachers' Contextual Performance. *European Journal of Work and Organizational Psychology, 21*(1), 57-83.

Litwin, G. H., & Stringer, R. A. (1968). Motivation and Organizational Climate.

Litzky, B. E., Eddleston, K. A., & Kidder, D. L. (2006). The Good, the Bad, and the Misguided: How Managers Inadvertently Encourage Deviant Behaviors. *The Academy of Management Perspectives, 20*(1), 91-103.

McClamb, S. L. H. (2015). *An Examination of Relationships between Components of Contextual Performance and Overall Job Performance of It Professionals Working on Enterprise Architecture Teams.* (3688049 Ph.D.), Capella University, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/1672950316?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Mercan, N. (2007). *Örgütlerde Mobbing'in Örgüt İklimiyle İlişkisine Yönelik Bir Araştırma.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Dumlupınar Üniversitesi, Kütahya.

Messina, R. M. (1993). *The Relationship Between Organizational Climate and Personality Hardiness of Staff Nurses on Medical-Surgical Units in Southern Connecticut Hospitals.* (9323967 Ed.D.), University of Bridgeport, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304070095?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Moscoso, S., & Salgado, J. F. (2004). "Dark Side" Personality Styles as Predictors of Task, Contextual, and Job Performance. *International Journal of Selection and Assessment, 12*(4), 356-362.

Mount, M., Ilies, R., & Johnson, E. (2006). Relationship of Personality Traits and Counterproductive Work Behaviors: The Mediating Effects of Job Satisfaction. *Personnel Psychology, 59*(3), 591-622.

Nielsen, M. B., & Knardahl, S. (2015). Is Workplace Bullying Related to the Personality Traits of Victims? A Two-Year Prospective Study. *Work and Stress, 29*(2), 128-149. doi:10.1080/02678373.2015.1032383

Ogungbamila, B., & Udegbe, I. B. (2014). Gender Differences in the Effects of Perception of Organizational Injustice on Workplace Reactivity. *Europe's Journal of Psychology, 10*(1), 150-167. doi:10.5964/ejop.v10i1.575

Oh, C., & Matsuoka, S. (2015). The Position of the Low Carbon Growth Partnership (LCGP): At the End of Japan's Navigation between the Kyoto Protocol and the APP. *International Environmental Agreements: Politics, Law and Economics, 15*(2), 125-140. doi:10.1007/s10784-013-9219-0

Osatuyi, B. (2015). Personality Traits and Information Privacy Concern on Social Media Platforms. *Journal of Computer Information Systems, 55*(4), 11-19.

Ötken, A. B., & Cenkci, T. (2015). Big Five Personality Traits and Organizational Dissent: The Moderating Role of Organizational Climate. *Business and Economics Research Journal, 6*(2), 1.

Özdemir, F. (2006). *Örgütsel İklimin İş Tatmin Düzeyine Etkisi: Tekstil Sektöründe Bir Araştırma.* (Ph.D), Çukurova Üniversitesi, Adana. (1)

Özer, Ö., Sonğur, C., Kar, A., Top, M., & Erigüç, G. (2014). Organizational Stress, Organizational Cynicism, Organizational Revenge, Intention to Quit: A Study on Research Assistants. *Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences Department of Health Administration, 3*(8).

Özsoy, İ. (2012). *Örgüt İklimi, Öz Liderlik ve İş Tatmininin Ar-Ge Performansına Etkisi: Savunma Sanayiinde Bir Araştırma.* (Ph.D), Kara Harp Okulu, Ankara.

Pedooem, R. (2007). *Relationship between HEXACO Personality Factors and Task and Contextual Performance: Moderating Effect of Career Advancement Opportunity*. Los Angeles: Alliant International University.

Perry, S. R. (2003). *Big Five Personality Traits and Work Drive as Predictors of Adolescent Academic Performance.* (3107676 Ph.D.), The University of Tennessee, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/305294764?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Phillips, J. L., & Todd, D. (1969). The Relationship of Principals' Leadership Training and Personality to the Organizational Climate of Schools. *University of Southern California*.

Phipps, S. T. A., Prieto, L. C., & Deis, M. H. (2015). The Role of Personality in Organizational Citizenship Behavior: Introducing Counterproductive Work Behavior and Integrating Impression Management as a Moderating Factor. *Journal of Organizational Culture, Communications and Conflict, 19*(1), 176-196.

Raja, U. (2004). *The Relationship of The Big Five Personality Dimensions to Personal and Organizational Outcomes: Answering the Questions Who? And When?* (NQ96967 Ph.D.), Concordia University Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/305132506?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Salomon, L. M. (2000). *The Impact of Personality Variables on Different Facets of Contextual Performance.* ProQuest Information and Learning,

San Giacomo, R.-M. C. (2011). *An Analysis of the Relationship between Select Organizational Climate Factors and Job Satisfaction Factors as Reported by Community College Personnel.* (3472473 Ed.D.), University of Florida, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/885433966?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Scherer, K. T., Baysinger, M., Zolynsky, D., & LeBreton, J. M. (2013). Predicting Counterproductive Work Behaviors with Sub-clinical Psychopathy: Beyond the Five Factor Model of Personality. *Personality and Individual Differences, 55*(3), 300-305.

Secrist, G. E., Paden, V. L., & McNee, R. C. (1983). Organizational-Climate Dimensions: A Conceptual and Judgmental Analysis. In: 1983-08.

Seltzer, L. F. (2014). Don't Confuse Revenge with Justice: Five Key Differences. Retrieved from https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/evolution-the-self/201402/don-t-confuse-revenge-justice-five-key-differences

Shalley, C. E., & Gilson, L. L. (2004). What Leaders Need to Know: A Review of Social and Contextual Factors that can Foster or Hinder Creativity. *The Leadership Quarterly, 15*(1), 33-53.

Smithikrai, C. (2008). Moderating Effect of Situational Strength on the Relationship between Personality Traits and Counterproductive Work Behaviour. *Asian Journal of Social Psychology, 11*(4), 253-263.

Solomonson, A. L. (1999). *Development and Evaluation of a Construct-Oriented Biodata Measure for Predicting Positive and Negative Contextual Performance.* (9975177 Ph.D.), University of Georgia, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304501352?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Spector, P. E., & Zhou, Z. E. (2014). The Moderating Role of Gender in Relationships of Stressors and Personality with Counterproductive Work Behavior. *Journal of Business and Psychology, 29*(4), 669-681.

Tarkan, G., & Tepeci, M. (2006). Örgütsel Adalet ve Yönetimde Merkezileşmenin Çalışan Hırsızlığına Etkileri: Mersin Üniversitesi Turizm İşletmeciliği ve Otelcilik Yüksekokulu Öğrenci Algılamaları Üzerine Bir Araştırma. *Anatolia: Turizm Araştırmaları Dergisi, 17*(2), 137-152.

Tatlılıoğlu, K. (2014). Üniversite Öğrencilerinin Beş Faktör Kişilik Kuramı'na Göre Kişilik Özellikleri Alt Boyutlarının Bazı Değişkenlere Göre İncelenmesi. *Journal of History School, 7*(XVII), 939-939. doi:10.14225/Joh400

Tekin, Ö. (2012). *Yabancılaşma ve Beş Faktör Kişilik Özellikleri Arasındaki İlişkiler: Antalya Kemer'deki Beş Yıldızlı Otel İşletmeleri Çalışanları Üzerinde Bir Uygulama.* (Ph.D), Akdeniz Üniversitesi, Antalya.

Tomrukçu, B. (2008). *Beş Faktör Kişilik Özellikleri ile İş Değerleri Arasındaki İlişki Üzerine Bir İnceleme.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Eskişehir Osmangazi Üniversitesi, Eskişehir.

Tutar, H., & Altınöz, M. (2010). Örgütsel İklimin İşgören Performansı Üzerine Etkisi: Ostim İmalât İşletmeleri Çalışanları Üzerine Bir Araştırma. *Ankara Üniversitesi Siyasal Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi, 65*(2), 196-218.

Vaux, N. D. (2015). *Academic Optimism and Organizational Climate as Predictors of Academic Achievement and School Effectiveness.* (Ph.D), The University of Alabama,

Vey, M. A. (2003). *Motives and Rewards of Effective Contextual and Task Performance.* (3087796 Ph.D.), University of Minnesota, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/305307868?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Wang, H., Begley, T., Hui, C., & Lee, C. (2012). Are the Effects of Conscientiousness on Contextual and Innovative Performance Context Specific? Organizational Culture as a Moderator. *The International Journal of Human Resource Management, 23*(1), 174-189.

Woodman, R. W., Sawyer, J. E., & Griffin, R. W. (1993). Toward a Theory of Organizational Creativity. *Academy of Management Review, 18*(2), 293-321.

Yahşi, Ü. (2014). *Gençlik ve Spor Bakanlığı Personelinin Örgüt İklimi Algıları ile Örgütsel Yaratıcılık Düzeyi.* (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Ankara Üniversitesi, Ankara. (8)

Yıldız, G., & Özsoy, E. (2013). Kişilik Kavramının Örgütler Açısından Önemi: Bir Literatür Taraması. *İşletme Bilimi Dergisi, Cilt:1*(Sayı:2).

Yılmaz, K., & Altınkurt, Y. (2013). Örgütsel İklim Ölçeğinin Türkçe'ye Uyarlanması: Geçerlik ve Güvenirlik Çalışması. *Trakya Üniversitesi Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi, 3*(1), 1-11.

Young, R. C. (2001). *There is Nothing Idle about It: Deference and Dominance in Gossip as a Function of Role, Personality, and Social Context.* (3044747 Ph.D.), University of California, Berkeley, Ann Arbor. Retrieved from http://search.proquest.com/docview/304684181?accountid=17170 ProQuest Dissertations & Theses Global database.

Zhou, Z. E., Meier, L. L., & Spector, P. E. (2014). The Role of Personality and Job Stressors in Predicting Counterproductive Work Behavior: A Three-way Interaction. *International Journal of Selection and Assessment, 22*(3), 286-296.

THE ROLE OF EXTERNAL GOVERNANCE MECHANISMS IN CORPORATE GOVERNANCE: AN ANALYSIS IN THE CONTEXT OF CULTURAL AND LEGAL DIMENSIONS

Sena ERDEN AYHÜN[1]

ABSTRACT

The cultural characteristics possessed by the communities and the legal regulations implemented by them are affecting the success of corporate governance practices. The cultural characteristics handed down from generation to generation by the communities have importance in employee behaviors working in an organization. The effectiveness of legal regulations in the social structure helps prevent the irregularities that could be realized within the organization and increases the success in administrative processes.

The findings obtained from the study indicate that the rates of power distance, tendency to avoid ambiguity, femininenes and collectivism are higher on the other hand the rates of long-term orientation are lower in Turkey. With regard to these dimensions; having higher rates for power distance, femininenes and tendency to avoid ambiguity and having lower rates for long-term orientation have negative influence on the efficiency of corporate governance practices in organizational processes. In addition, the phenomenon of solidarity accompanied by collectivist value judgments increases the success of corporate governance practices in organizational processes.

It is also explained that the legal systems adopted by the countries have importance in corporate governance practices. The source of legal regulations implemented in Turkey is constituted by the Civil Law. When considered in terms of corporate governance practices; it is observed that the Common Law, which is expressed as legal systems, and Civil Law have both positive and negative aspects. In this context, it is important to consider the cultural characteristics and legal systems that countries have in order to evaluate the success of corporate governance practices.

Keywords: Culture, organizational culture, corporate governance, management, Turkey.

1 Assist. Prof. Dr., Çanakkale Onsekiz Mart University, Çanakkale Vocational School of Social Sciences, Management and Organization Department, senaerden@comu.edu.tr

INTRODUCTION

The behaviors that are shared and handed down to other generations in a society are expressed as culture. Individuals primarily learn value judgments about the concept of culture from their parents, and then they learn these judgments from their immediate surroundings. As individuals, who learn that certain codes of conduct are right, start to work in an organization, they also continue to display their behaviors in the institutions they are working with. In this context, it is possible to state that the social culture affects the behavior of the individuals working within the organization.

The level of sanctions imposed by legal regulations that are adopted by the communities is also important in the behavior of employees and affects the success of corporate governance processes. The source of legal regulations implemented in the countries is constituted by the Common Law or Civil Law. Studies conducted in the literature emphasize that both legal systems may have their own specific positive or negative aspects. The Common Law, which is considered as a successful system, has faced criticisms in particular by the company scandals that have occurred in the United Kingdom and the United States since 2000, and it is thought that this legal system contains legal gaps that do not protect investor interests. In addition, it could be seen that the enterprises operating in these countries are also very successful. Decisions in Civil Law are made only in consideration of existing laws. Research studies conducted in the literature; reveal that Civil Law system could also be successful in managerial processes provided that the preventing the infringement of investors' right are explicitly specified in the laws.

The cultural and legal dimensions that influence corporate governance processes and that are named as external governance mechanisms are explained in the study. The relationship between culture and organizational culture has been explained and the importance of cultural characteristics on the employee behaviors has been pointed out. In addition, information has been provided on legal regulations that are effective in the success of corporate governance. Also, the legal arrangements which are developed for the success of corporate governance in the World and Turkey have also been specified in the study.

The Concept of Culture

It is accepted that the concept of culture is derived from Latin Word "Colere or Culture" which means to care and cultivate. Throughout the ages, culture has been defined in social sciences as a concept related to people and society by being attributed with various meanings. In the mentioned definitions, culture is expressed as a concept related to an individual or a

group (Şişman, 2002: 1). The culture is explained as information that a group learns in a time frame while it helps this group to solve vital problems in the external environment and integration problems faced within that group. It is known that such a learning phenomenon is an uninterrupted, behavioral, perceptional and emotional process. The deepest level of culture is the idea that it could be the key causative determinant of intuitions, language, thinking processes, feelings, attitudes, adopted values and public attitudes shared by a group (Schein, 2002: 6-7). The concept of culture is the whole of traditions, customs and habits that have been continuing in a society. One of the first definitions made regarding the concept of culture belongs to Edward B. Tylor. According to Tylor, Culture is; the cumulative of habits, skills, traditions, spiritual values, rules, beliefs and artistic products that individuals earn as a member of society (Hofstede et al., 1990: 311). Other definitions made regarding the concept of culture are as follows (Şişman, 2002: 1):

- Culture is a society's form of living,
- Culture is a social heritage derived by the individual from the group in which the individual lives,
- Culture is the individuals' form of thinking, feeling and believing,
- Culture is the whole of learned behaviors,
- Culture is a normative system that regulates individual behaviors,
- Culture is everything people have created in response to what exists in the nature.

There are two different aspects of culture including material and spiritual. While material aspect of the culture is; related to elements such as science and technique etc. the spiritual aspect is; related to elements of each society that are directly shaped according to their own structure such as language, religion, morality, law, philosophy, literature, art, education, customs and traditions and value judgments (Demirci, 2011: 21).

The Concept of Organizational Culture

The introduction of organizational culture into academic literature is based on the article entitled "Studies on Organizational Culture" which was written by Pettigrew in 1979 in the journal of Administrative Science Quarterly (Hofstede et al., 1990: 286). In the literature, it is observed that different definitions are made on the organizational culture. Pettigrew (1979: 574) described the organizational culture; as a set of common values shared by a group, and explained the elements of organization culture as symbols, used language, beliefs, rituals, myths and systems of thought

(ideologies). Organizational culture; consists of beliefs and value judgments that are organizationally related and mutually understood, and that must be observed by the organization's employees. Organizational culture; proposes what is needed and what is desired, what objectives need to be followed and how to follow these objectives (Can et al., 2006: 428). The form of performing the works, the strategies adopted, the preferred leadership behaviors, the form of employees' interaction and norms within the organization provides information about the personality of the organization (Tınaz, 2005: 114-115). According to Schein (1983: 14), organizational culture is; the whole of the assumptions about the perception, thinking, and feeling of the items invented, discovered or developed by the organization's employees by the new employees of the organization so that a certain group could cope with the problems of internal integration and external adaptation.

The behaviors that are put forward by the organizational culture are related to the factors that the social cultures attach importance to. The important value judgments that are out forward by the social culture influence all the employees working in the organization and allow the organization to develop a belief system in this direction (Schein, 1999: 48). It is well known that a cultural system shared by a group has a significant effect on formal structures, strategies, policies, management processes, authority, control mechanisms, rewarding and motivation tools, and educational elements (Allaire & Firsirotu, 1984: 213).

Interaction of Social Culture and Organizational Culture

Culture stands out as a concept that has a guiding and formative effect on individual behaviors according to the characteristics of the environment in which the culture is adopted. Organizations are social structures that are built in order to meet the needs of individuals in a society with a certain cultural structure and to maintain their existence. The fact that organizations maintain their activities in a certain society, leads to that these organizations are affected by the culture of the society in question (Demirci, 2011: 20). Today's prominent opinions imply that social culture and organizational culture are interdependent, and that the profound effect of social culture may reflect on the organizational culture of the nation (Smith 2006: 915). Hofsetede and Hofstede (2005: 6); state that much of the cultural values that societies possess are inevitably reflected in the organizations they have in their structures and that relative differences in the cultural values of the societies are important for bringing the differences regarding the governance structures of various countries to the agenda. Trompenaars and Woolliams have stated that the cultural values of societies have an impact on the management levels, working hours, levels of interaction with other employees, methods of consultancy offered by the managers

to the employees in the organizations operating in the society in question (Trompenaars & Woolliams, 2003: 101). Another theory about culture was developed by Schwarts and this theory it was suggested that social values could affect the working values (Ros et al., 1999: 50). Also, the results of research study conducted by Venkataraman and MacMillan (1995) suggest that the tendency to avoid the ambiguity, power distance and individualism behaviors of communities would influence the behaviors preferred by the employees of organizations operating in these communities (Dickson et al., 2004: 76).

According to conducted studies, it is observed that many approaches and theories have been developed in order to determine the relationship between social culture and organizational culture. Information regarding open system approach, condition-dependency theory, organizational population-ecology theory and institutional theory which are expressing the relationship between cultural environment and organizational culture are given below.

Open System Approach; In the literature, the opinions expressing the relationship between culture and organizational culture are addressed in two dimensions as macro and micro opinions. From a macro perspective, organizations influence national culture and they are influenced by national culture. This perspective means that the socio-cultural components of the culture have an impact on organizational structure and functioning. Taking into account the system approach, the macro perspective focuses on the behavior of individuals engaged in any organization, the idea that the organization's culture is influenced by the national culture when traces of the cultural environment are visible. This perspective regards the organizations as a sub-system of the environment they are found in and as structures that are interacting with the environment (Smircich, 1983: 343-344). According to the system approach, the fact that culture creates both interaction and is exposed to interaction causes the culture to undergo change as a result of external environmental elements. Changes experienced in the systems over time, have influence on the behavior of the individuals, and lead to the differentiations in the cultural items that are handed down from generation to generation (Kitayama, 2002: 92).

Condition-Dependency Theory; Condition-dependency theory emphasizes the importance of mechanical and organic structures within the context of the situational approach in order to determine that different organizational structures would operate more effectively in different environmental conditions (Sargut, 2001: 113-114). It is an important requirement for organizations to comply with the requirements of the conditions in which they operate by determining their organizational structures according to the field and country in which they operate the

nature of the workforce they employ and the level of technology they implement. The basic condition for organizations to be successful in global competitive environment is; flexibility, environmental awareness and paying attention to harmonization principles (Ataman, 2001: 183).

Organizational Population-Ecology Approach; The organizational population-ecology approach indicates that the organizational population is changing because of participating in new organizations. The state of continuous change in the organizational population is explained by a three-stage approach of diversification, selection and protection. The concept of diversification accounts for the increase in the number of enterprises with the development of today's information and communication technologies. The selection is expressed as; the situation in which the enterprises that have not thrived in today's competitive world have terminated their activities. Protection; is an approach stating that the enterprises whose products, services and technologies gain value in environmental conditions will gain superiority over other competitors and will be institutionalized after a certain period of time (Daft, 2004: 184-186).

Institutional Theory; Institutional theory stands out as a theory that expresses the legitimacy of rules, practices, symbols and beliefs in the organizations (Dickson et al., 2004: 81). Institutional theory; was developed with the aim of determining the impact of the environmental factor becoming important with the system approach on the organizations and the harmonization processes of the organizations in the face of constant change (Ataman, 2001: 194). Institutional theory states that organizations will act in accordance with the rules set by the social culture. This theory suggests a structure for predicting and interpreting the value judgments possessed by the social culture in the adoption of organizational behavior rules (Dickson et al., 2004: 84).

The Reflection of Social Cultural on Administrative Processes

It is inevitable that most of the cultural values that the societies possess are reflected in the administrative processes of the organizations the societies have within their own structures. Relative differences in the cultural values of societies have importance when differences in the governance of various countries become prominent (Hofstede & Hofstede, 2005: 6). In the literature, the impact of differences for the cultural values adopted by the societies on organizational cultures is classified as; power distance, individualism and collectivism, masculinity and femininity, avoiding the ambiguity and long and short term orientation (Hofstede & Hofstede, 2005: 31). Social culture dimensions were investigated with the participation of 170 researchers from 62 countries within the scope of GLOBE research project (House et al., 2001: 491).Below, the impacts of cultural dimensions

on social and organization structure is explained and cultural dimensions of Turkey is analyzed within the framework of GLOBE projects.

Power Distance: Power distance refers to; the distribution of unequal power that individuals encounter in the society they live in and their the tendency to accept inequities. It is stated that there are higher different social class statues, the unequal distribution of power among the individuals, and the tendency to accept hierarchical structures in the societies with higher power distance tendency. In addition, in societies where power distance tendency is low; the tendency to accept the hierarchical structures and social class differences are observed to be low (Ügeöz, 2003: 44). Power distance in organizations refers to the extent of importance attached to the hierarchy and position power (Oudenhoven, 2001: 91). It is observed that the employees accept the requests of leaders unconditionally and they continue to work by concentrating all their strengths on the leaders' discourses in the organizations operating in societies with higher levels of power distance (Minkov & Blagoev, 2012: 32). It is also seen that in organizations with lower power distance levels, the hierarchy is low, the decentralized management has become prominent, the wage gap between the upper and lower tiers is at a low level, and no importance has been attached to concessions and status symbols. The averages of the power distances in social structures are given in Table 1.

Table 1: Power Distance Averages

	World Average	**Turkey Average/Rank**	**Country with the Highest Average**	**Country with the Lowest Average**
Power Distance	5.17	5.57 (10)	Morocco 5.80	Denmark 3.89

Source: Carl et al., 2004: 539-540

According to the research findings of the GLOBE project provided in Table 1; Turkey ranks in the 10th place among 62 countries and is placed above the world average in terms of present power distance dimension.

Individualism and Collectivism: In collectivist cultures, dependencies are found in relations that are established between individuals, whereas in individualist cultures decisions could be made by individuals, and the concept of independence comes to the forefront. Collectivist cultures focus on group objective on the other hand individualist cultures focus on individual goals. In collectivist cultures, the fulfillment of duties and responsibilities implies the determination of social behaviors on the

other hand focusing on beliefs, values, perceived rights and individual requirements in individualistic cultures implies the determination of social behavior (Gelfand et al., 2004: 443). Considered in terms of organization; it is noteworthy that the employee-employer relations are more duty-oriented, while the individuals living in the societies with higher individuality ratios are evaluated according to the individuals' achievement and productivity performances. In collectivist societies; ethical values become prominent in relations between employer and employer, and values such as loyalty, commitment and compliance seem to be important (Ügeöz, 2003: 47). While employment contracts are important in employee-employer relations in individualized organizations; in collectivist organizations employee-employer relations attach importance to moral values as in the family relations. In individualized organizations, duties take precedence of relations, while in collectivist organizations relations take precedence of duties (Hofstede & Hofstede, 2005: 104). Averages of the collectivism in the social structures are given in Table 2.

Table 2: Averages of Collectivism

	World Average	**Turkey Average/Rank**	**Country with the Highest Average**	**Country with the Lowest Average**
The Dimension of Collectivism	5.13	5.88 (5)	Philippines 6.36	Denmark 3.53

Source: Gelfand et al., 2004: 467-471.

According to the research findings of the GLOBE project provided in Table 2; Turkey's average of collectivism ranks 5th among 62 countries and is placed over the world average.

Masculinity and Femininity: Masculinity examines; cultures in which gender-based roles are distinctly separated, men are determined, strict, and material-oriented, while women are modest, sensitive and attach importance their quality of life on the other hand femininity examines cultures in which gender based roles are intertwined and both women and men are modest, sensitive and attach importance to quality of life (Kartarı, 2001: 82). In the masculine societies, gender roles are observed to be different, males are primarily expected to be confident, strong and successful and females are expected to be modest, sensitive and compassionate. In the feminine societies, social roles between males and females overlap and both females and males are expected to be modest, sensitive and compassionate (Ügeöz,

2003: 49-50). In feminine organizations, conflicts are resolved by agreement and negotiation. In the conflicts experienced in masculine organizations the stronger ones always win. There are rational relationships among employees in masculine organizations, while hot, sincere relationships are present among employees in feminine organizations (Hofstede & Hofstede, 2005: 147). The averages of the masculinity in social structures are provided in Table 3.

Table 3: Average of Masculinity

	World Average	**Turkey Average/Rank**	**Country with the Highest Average**	**Country with the Lowest Average**
Masculinity Dimension	4.10	3.83 (45)	Switzerland 4.94	Greece 3.20

Source: Javidan, 2004: 248-251

Research data of the GLOBE project provided in Table 3 referred to masculinity dimension as oriented to performance and stated that Turkey's masculinity dimension ranked 45th among 52 countries and was placed lower than the world average in this regard.

Tendency to Avoid Ambiguity: The tendency to avoid uncertainty implies; that societies perceive indefinite and uncertain situations as threat and danger (Hofstede, 2001: 146). It is noteworthy that in societies with a higher tendency to avoid ambiguity, individuals are more emotional and more anxious. On the other hand, in societies with a lower tendency to avoid ambiguity, it is observed that people are more tolerant against different ideas and perspectives. These societies; like to be based on less rules and principles, act on the basis of logic rather than feelings, like to spend a lot of time on the issues and refrain from expressing their feelings to the environment (Munley, 2011: 17-18). In organizations with higher tendency to avoid ambiguity; unexpected situations that may arise are not welcomed. In these organizations it is believed that job definitions are required to be made in detail. In addition, managers give detailed instructions to their subordinates rather than liberating their subordinates in order to reach the objectives. In organizations with lower tendency to avoid ambiguity, adherence to the rules is negligible. In these organizations there is no need to made detailed job descriptions and the unexpected situations that may arise are welcomed. Also, managers liberate their subordinates regarding their works (Hanges, 2006: 6, www.bsos.umd.edu). The averages of tendency to avoid ambiguity in social structures are given in Table 4.

Table 4: Averages of Tendency to Avoid Ambiguity

	World Average	Turkey Average/Rank	Country with the Highest Average	Country with the Lowest Average
Tendency to Avoid Ambiguity	4.16	3.63 (49)	Switzerland 5.37	Russia 2.88

Source: Luque & Javidan, 2004: 622-623.

According to research data of the GLOBE project provided in Table 4; Turkey ranks 49th among 62 countries and is placed below the world average in terms of present tendency to avoid ambiguity.

Short and Long Term Orientation: The concept of long and short term orientation; covers individual's thoughts on family relationships, work and social life. The economic conditions of the countries also have an impact on the perspectives of societies regarding short and long term orientation. The elements placed importance by short-term perspective is comprised of; being able to show continuity, being respectful to traditions, and being able to achieve results in a short time (Hofstede, 2001: 351). In communities with characteristics of short-term orientation, it is important to achieve results in a short period of time. It is noteworthy that these social structures tend to spend. In the societies with a long-term orientation, people are striving to achieve results slowly. In these societies, economizing of the resources is recommended (Hofstede & Hofstede, 2005: 212). Considered in terms of management practices; employment of the employees could be long-lasting in societies with long-term orientation, in addition, it is observed that it is observed that the time allocated for solving organizational problems are extended to longer period and people in these societies refrain from making sudden decisions. In organizations with short-term orientation; employment duration are lasting for shorter periods, problems could be solved quickly and sudden decisions could be made (Newman & Nollen, 1996: 759). Averages of long-term orientation in the social structures are given in Table 5.

Table 5: Averages of Long Term Orientation Trends

	World Average	Turkey Average/Rank	Country with the Highest Average	Country with the Lowest Average
Long Term Orientation	3.85	3.74 (36)	Singapore 5.07	Russia 2.88

Source: Ashkanasy et al., 2004: 303-306

According to research data of the GLOBE project provided in Table 5; Turkey ranks 36th among 62 countries and is placed below the world average in terms of present long-term orientation tendency.

The Role of Cultural Dimension in Corporate Governance Process

Corporate governance is important for enterprises to achieve the desired profitability and to be strong in terms of resources. Corporate governance sets out legal rules on how enterprises should act with regard to their commercial activities (Licht et al., 2005: 234). Many studies conducted in the literature explain the effect of social cultures on institutional governance mechanisms (Duong et al., 2016: 67). Findings of the research study conducted by Li and Harrison (2008) indicate that the tendency to avoid ambiguity is low however the general manager, who is a member of the board of directors, has higher power distance, individualism and masculinity levels (Duong et al., 2016: 73). The fact that general manager working in the company is also a member of the board of directors will bring the desire to make profit to the extent of shares owned by the such board member and may cause the tendency to avoid uncertainty to decrease. Organizations with a higher tendency to avoid ambiguity regard the activity of entering into international markets as highly risky. Conducted research studies emphasize that there is a strong negative relation between high levels of avoiding ambiguity and performing activity in international markets (Frijins et al., 2013: 2458). The masculine and feminine behaviors of the employees working in organizations are of great importance in corporate governance. Accordingly, employees with masculine characteristics will be able to display bold, productive and ambitious behavior in organizations and increase the institution's performance (Rafiee and Sarabdeen, 2012: 4). Findings of the research conducted by David A. Waldman et al. (2006) in the literature; suggest that managers attach importance to corporate social responsibility activities in organizations with lower power distance low and higher collectivist value judgments. The importance attached to collectivist value judgments in organizations that attach importance to corporate social responsibility activities leads to the adoption of stakeholder model rather than shareholders (Lubetsky, 2008: 210). Ringov and Zollo (2007: 481); emphasize that organizational performance in organizations with higher power distance and feminine characteristics is at a lower level and these dimensions affect the quality of management in the negative direction. Short-term oriented organizations seem to adopt short-term objectives such as one-year profitability. Nonetheless, long-term oriented organizations are already able to envisage their ten-year profits and to display vision-oriented behaviors (Hofstede & Hofstede, 2005: 225). These elements indicate that long-term oriented organizations could be more successful in management practices.

The Role of Legal Dimension in the Process of Corporate Governance

The legal arrangements that countries have define the boundaries of the functions carried out by the enterprises operating within these countries. In order to perform the principles of accountability, transparency, equality and responsibility, which are referred as the principles of corporate governance, in effective and efficient manner, legal and sanction powers, i.e., the effectiveness of the rules of law are required to be implemented. The commercial laws adopted by the countries in general are Anglo-Saxon law (Common Law) and Civil Law. The Anglo-Saxon Law is of British origin, while Civil Law is derived from Roman law.

Anglo-Saxon law is called a legal system based on traditions and developed by judges. It is mainly based on case law (precedent decisions) established by the high court, and it is partly based on codified laws. Therefore, the absence of a systematic legal order; led to the emergence of a legal technique based on the jurisprudence and event (case) groups of the court. In this direction, the disputes are carefully discussed in detail and assessed by being considered within the context of a concrete and historical perspective (Güveyi, 2017: 102). In the Anglo-Saxon legal tradition, assessments are made according to precedent resolutions in the respective disputes between investment and investors. In this assessment, it is considered whether investor rights are exploited by controlling shareholders or managers and it is also interpreted in the context of reliability. The decision process in this assessment; is managed by demonstrating the precedent cases similar to the case and if there is no precedent resolution the process is managed on the basis of interpretation. Focusing on the judiciary power to explain the protection of the investor would not be adequate in this legal system (Porta et al., 2000:10). This system largely focuses on internal structure and decision making processes of the companies and makes management-oriented arrangements with the manager. In the Anglo-American system, company managers have less direct contact with the shareholders and the managers have more power. The individualistic understanding in the Anglo-Saxon culture is reflected in the business life as well. In the Anglo-Saxon system, the purpose of the companies is described as gaining profit, meeting the expectations of the shareholders and contributing to the increase of welfare. The reason why the Anglo-Saxon system is named as "shareholder model" is due to great importance attached to the shareholders (Doğan, 2007: 85).

In the Civil Law, the powers of judges are limited only by existing laws. If the activities that aim to violate the rights of investors are not prescribed clearly in the law, it is becoming difficult to protect the rights of the investors and to relieve the unjust treatments in this setting (Menteş, 2009: 109). This

system is also referred to as the shareholders model because protecting the rights of other stakeholders is also important in Civil Law system as well as distributing the profits to the shareholders. In this system, taking into account the interests of all shareholders as well as company shareholders, has aimed to protect the rights of all interest groups (internal and external stakeholders) within the framework of economic, ethical, legal and voluntary obligations of enterprises in their corporate social responsibility activities (Doğan, 2007: 86-87) .

Although it is stated that both systems are effective in terms of ensuring institutionalization in the corporate governance process, it is noteworthy that the most effective and advanced capital markets are only observed in states such as the United States and the United Kingdom, which have adopted the Anglo-Saxon legal system (Şehirli, 1999: 2). However, company scandals experienced in the countries where the Anglo-Saxon legal system has been adopted also explain that the system in question is insufficient. The bankruptcy of Enron, a company operating in United States, in 2002 and the financial crisis process in 2008 have shown that corporate governance practices are ineffective (Duong, 2016: 69). In addition, the increasing numbers of corporate bankruptcies resulting from corruption, accounting irregularities and the misappropriation of managerial powers experienced after the 2000s in the countries that have adopted the Anglo-Saxon legal system have caused the questioning of the Anglo-Saxon legal system.

Considering that the arrangements regarding the corporate governance have been launched with the Cadbury Report issued in England; it may be possible to state that the countries that have adopted the Anglo-Saxon system require a corporate governance system more than other countries (Doğan, 2007: 84). Cadbury report dated 1992, describes the responsibilities for the board of directors and suggests that the structure of governance should be reviewed. The report describes the duties and responsibilities of the inspectors and makes some explanations about the accounting activities that are being carried out in the enterprises. This report provides the following explanations regarding the concept of governance (Cadbury, 1992: 14-15):

- It has been deemed appropriate to consider the concepts of transparency, honesty and responsibility together in this system.
- On the axis of accountability, the board of directors should act responsibly towards its shareholders. The boards of directors should offer the correct information to fulfill their responsibilities to the shareholders.
- If board of directors offer clear information on their activities, this could contribute to their achievements in the business strategies projected by the boards of directors.

Legal Regulations Regarding Corporate Governance in the World

It is seen that the studies conducted in the field of corporate governance started in 1999 and these studies became prominent along with the Sarbanes Oxley Act enacted in United States in 2002 as well as the OECD principles revised in 2004. Below, information is given regarding the above-mentioned matters.

Principles of Organization of Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD)

The corporate governance principles prepared by the OECD for the first time in 1999 were updated in 2004 with the aim of providing guidance for governments, regulatory authorities and stock exchange and important arrangements were made on these principles. The reviewing of corporate governance principles was carried out within the OECD Corporate Governance Committee, where all G20 countries were invited to participate equally with OECD member countries. These principles were determined by taking the opinions of experts in the major international organizations including Basel Committee, Financial Stability Board and World Bank Group as well as the opinion of public through internet. The followings are the explanations for the principles in question (OECD, 2015: 4-6):

Ensuring the basis for effective corporate governance framework; in this section, the importance of the principle for promoting transparent and fair markets in companies and effectively distributing resources is addressed. Also, distribution of tasks, audit and investment quality were focused. In addition, such principles brought up the extent of the flexibility of the legal systems to be arranged by the companies traded in the stock exchange in accordance with the conditions in their respective countries.

Rights and fair treatment for shareholders and basic partnership functions; this section describes the basic partnership rights, including access to information and participation in important company decisions through the general assembly of shareholders. In addition, the principles in question also stated the public disclosure on the control structures of companies such as different voting rights.

Corporate investors, share certificate markets and other intermediaries; this section focuses on the need for healthy incentives which are made in the investment chain by means of placing a special emphasis on corporate investors that are acting as proxy. In addition, the relevant section has underlined the necessity to describe and minimize the conflicts of interest that may harm the goodwill of companies offering vote consultancy services, analysts, intermediary institutions, rating agencies and other companies offering analysis and advice to investors.

The role of stakeholders; in this section, the effective cooperation between companies and stakeholders is encouraged, and the rights of the beneficiary and the laws and mutual agreements are emphasized. In addition, this section suggests that the stakeholders should regularly access to information in a timely manner and the losses of rights should be compensated.

Public disclosure and transparency; this section addresses remuneration, stakeholder relationships, risk planning, and public disclosures regarding the behaviors of the boards of directors. In addition, the relevant section describes that the companies, apart from their financial reports, should voluntarily disclose their non-financial information that may be included in the management reports to the public.

Responsibilities of the board of directors; in this section, information has been provided on the subjects such as determination of business strategies, election and remuneration policies of senior management, the integrity of companies in accounting and financial reporting systems. In addition, the relevant section describes the risk planning, tax planning and internal audit roles of the board of directors.

Sarbanes Oxley Act

Having developed capital markets around the world, the United States has faced very large corporate scandals and bankruptcies, such as Enron and Worldcom companies, despite the legal structure that effectively enforces the investor rights. Such bankruptcies have brought about the shortcomings of coporate governance practices and the need for more effective legal arrangements (Menteş, 2009: 65). The "Public Company Accounting Reform and Investor Protection Act", also known as the Sarbanes & Oxley Act, entered into force on July 30, 2002, in order to ensure improve on the mistrust of shareholders for accounting and company disclosures which were experienced as a result of large corporate scandals in USA such as Enron and Worldcom. This Act aiming to improve the controls over the financial reporting of companies and supports the effective corporate governance, covers the entire list of companies that are traded in the US stock market (www.tkyd.org). The provisions of the Sarbanes Oxley Act were developed in order to prevent audit failures experienced in enterprises. This Act includes the following regulations (Tackett et al., 2004: 342):

- Public Company Accounting Oversight Board activities (PCAOB),
- New rules for supervisory boards,
- The protection of new criminal penalties and interest holders,
- Restriction of supervisory counseling,
- New financial reporting and audit procedures

The objective of the Sarbanes-Oxley Act is; to protect the investors by increasing the accuracy and reliability of corporate information related to companies declared in accordance with capital market legislation as stated in the legislation. This Act prioritizes the idea of regaining the confidence of the investors for the capital markets (Süer, 2004: 67).

Legal Regulations on Corporate Governance in Turkey

It is observed that the regulations regarding the corporate governance in Turkey are realized by being addressed within the framework of the Banking Regulation and Supervision Board, the Capital Markets Board and the provisions of the New Turkish Commercial Code. Information on such regulations is explained below.

Regulations Regarding Corporate Governance of the Banks

Regulations on corporate governance of banks in Turkey entered into force by being published in the Official Gazette dated 1 November 2006 and numbered 26333. This regulation specifies the structure and processes of banks' corporate governance and their regulations in this regard. This Regulation was developed so that senior management of the Bank would govern the Bank in accordance with specific objectives, laws and regulations enacted pursuant to law and other relevant legislation, articles of association and in-bank regulations, ethical codes of banking in order to protect the rights and interests of all stakeholders, shareholders and account holders. The principles of banking regulation and supervision agency regarding the corporate governance are explained below (www.bddk.org.tr):

- Corporate values and strategic targets should be established within the structure of bank.
- Corporate values and strategic targets should be established within the structure of bank.
- Powers and responsibilities within the Bank must be clearly defined and implemented.
- Members of the board of directors should have the qualifications to fulfill their duties and be aware of the role they have undertaken in corporate governance and to perform independent assessments regarding their bank's activities.
- Senior management should have the qualifications to fulfill their duties and be aware of the role they have undertaken in corporate governance.
- The Bank's inspectors and independent auditors should be actively utilized.

- Wage policies must be aligned with the bank's ethical values, strategic objectives and internal balances.
- Transparency in corporate governance should be ensured.

Capital Markets Board Regulations

Capital Markets Board (CMB), introduced a series of legal reforms regarding corporate governance to be implemented by public companies in Turkey. The CMB updated its own principles on the basis of amendments made in OECD principles in 2005 after publishing its Corporate Governance Principles based on the "apply or disclose" approach in July 2003. CMB's Corporate Governance Principles; consists of four main headings of shareholders, public disclosure and transparency, stakeholders and the board of directors which are specified below (www.yoikk.gov.tr).

Turkish Commercial Code Regulations

The new Turkish Commercial Code entered into force as of July 1, 2012 and implemented broad and comprehensive regulations in order to determine the scope of the Corporate Governance Principles. In this context, corporate governance principles have not only been limited to joint-stock companies whose shares are traded on the stock exchange, but also expanded its framework by incorporating joint-stock companies and limited companies that are not traded in the stock market. In addition, the companies subject to independent audit have been obliged to prepare and report their financial statements in accordance with Turkish Accounting Standards as of 01/01/2013 pursuant to Turkish Commercial Code numbered 6102 (Gönen & Yürekli, 2016: 136).

CONCLUSION

The characteristics of the societies' cultural structures and the legal regulations implemented by them are important in terms of corporate governance practices. Many studies conducted in the literature indicate that the social cultures of countries are effective on the organizational culture and suggest the effect of cultural structures on corporate governance practices. Significant studies expressing the importance of cultural dimensions on social and organizational structures and applied in many countries have been carried out by Hofstede (1980) and House et al. (2001). In this study, the social structure of Turkey has been investigated on the basis of sub-dimensions including power distance, tendency to avoid ambiguity, masculinity-femininity, individualism-collectivism and short-term and long-term orientation. In this research; it has been determined that Turkey has higher levels of power distance, tendency to avoid ambiguity, femininity, collectivism in the social and organization

structures. In addition, long term orientation averages have been found to be low in research studies conducted. Corporate governance practices in organizations are defined as; compulsory and voluntary practices which do not harm the rights of shareholders and all interest groups and which incorporate transparent, accountable, egalitarian and responsible activities. According to the research data conducted in Turkey, having higher levels of power distance will increase the hierarchy between subordinates and superiors. This process, which starts in the social structure, is also reflected on the organizational structure. Corporate governance practices support the participation of all stakeholders in decision-making processes in order to access good governance processes. However, obedient behaviors displayed against supers in organizations with high power distances could prevent participation and adversely affect the implementation of corporate governance processes. In addition, many studies conducted in the literature indicate that Turkey has higher rates of femininity. In feminine organizations, modest behaviors are emphasized, and no competitive and ambitious behaviors are displayed. This situation prevents the employees' ambitious and competitive behaviors in the organization and affects corporate governance practices adversely. According to research study conducted, it has been determined that Turkey has a higher level of collectivism dimension. Thanks to the solidarity characteristics brought about by the dimension of collectivism, the employees in the organization display helpful behaviors towards each other and thus they are able to gain efficiency in corporate governance practices. Research studies have shown that the social structure in Turkey has higher levels of tendency to avoid ambiguity. This characteristic of the social structure is also reflected on the behaviors of employees working in the organizations. Organizations with a higher tendency to avoid ambiguity refrain from risky behaviors and do not like the ambiguity. In this context, if the members of the board and the general manager in particular avoid risky behaviors in the organizations with higher levels of tendency to avoid ambiguity, this will prevent the organization to act innovative in its processes. In addition, studies conducted indicate that Turkey has lower long-term orientation rates. Today's non-visionary behaviors that attach importance to profitability displayed by senior managers working in the organizations with lower long-term orientation rates will cause the enterprise to experience many problems in the future. Cultural dimensions are influenced by traditions, customs and belief systems that the countries have. In this regard, the different cultural values that societies possess do not imply that the success levels of enterprises operating in such societies will be different from each other. Many studies conducted on different societies confirm that corporate governance mechanisms are influential, although their cultural dimensions are different from each other.

The legal arrangements that societies have are also important on corporate governance practices. The legal systems that societies have are generally based on the Anglo-Saxon Law system (Common Law) and the Civil Law. Most of the research studies which have been conducted suggest that enterprises operating in many countries governed by both legal systems are successful. The fact that more emphasis is placed on the stakeholder model and the decisions are taken within the framework of legal arrangements in the Civil Law is an important criterion that will enhance the effectiveness of corporate governance mechanisms. Even though companies operating in many countries such as United States and England, which have adopted the Anglo-Saxon legal system, have been quite successful, corporate bankruptcies that occurred after 2000 years have caused questioning and criticizing against this system as well. In this context, it is important to assess the success of corporate governance practices, taking into account the cultural characteristics and legal systems that the countries have.

REFERENCES

ALLAIRE, Yvan; FIRSIROTU, Mihaela E., (1984), "Theories of Organizational Culture", *Organizational Studies,* Vol: 5, Issue: 3, pp. 193-226

ASHKANASY, Neal; GUPTA, Vipin; MAYFIELD, Melinda S., ROBERTS, Edwin Trevor, (2004), "Future Orientation", (ed. Robert J. House; Paul J. Hanges; Mansour Javidan, Peter W. Dorfman; Vipin Gupta), *Culture, Leadership, and Organizations: The GLOBE Study of 62 Socities* (within), California: Sage Publications, pp. 282 – 342.

ATAMAN, Göksel, (2001), *İşletme Yönetimi*, Türkmen Kitabevi, İstanbul.

CADBURY, Adrian, (1992), *The Financial Aspects Of Corporate Governance*, Great Britain by Burgess Science Press, December

CAN, Halil; AŞAN, Öznur; MİSKİ AYDIN Eren, (2006), *Örgütsel Davranış*, (Ed. Halil Can), Arıkan Yayınları, İstanbul.

CARL, Dale; GUPTA, Vipin; JAVİDAN, Mansour, (2004), "Power Distance", (ed. Robert J. House, Paul J. Hanges, Mansour Javidan, Peter W. Dorfman ve Vipin Gupta), *Culture, Leadership, and Organizations: The Globe Study of 62 Socities* (within), California: Sage Publications, pp. 513– 563.

DAFT, Richard L., (2004), *Organization Theory and Design*, Eight Edition, Vanderbilt University, South-Western.

DEMİRCİ, Fettahoğlu, (2011), "Verimlilik Kültürü ve Bilinci", *Kalklınmada Anahtar Verimlilik Dergisi*, Milli Prodüktivite Merkezi Aylık Yayın Organı, Yıl: 23, Sayı: 272, Ağustos.

DICKSON, Marcu W.; BESHEARS, Renee S.; GUPTA, Gupta, (2004), "The Impact of Societal Culture and Industry on Organizational Culture",(ed. Robert J. House, Paul J. Hanges, Mansour Javidan, Peter W. Dorfman ve Vipin Gupta), *Culture, Leadership, and Organizations: The Globe Study of 62 Socities* (within), California: Sage Publications, pp. 3-9.

DOĞAN, Mustafa, (2007), *Kurumsal Yönetim*, Siyasal Kitabevi, Ankara.

DUONG, Hong K.; KANG, Helen; SALTER, Stephen B., (2016), National Culture and Corporate Governance, *Journal Of Internatıonal Accountıng Research,* Vol: 15, Issue: 3, pp. 67-96.

FRIJINS, Bart; GILBERT, Aaron; LEHNERT, Thorsten; TOURANI-RED, Alireza, (2013), Uncertainty Avoidance, Risk Tolerance and Corporate Takeover Decisions, *Journal of Banking&Finance*, Issue: 37, pp. 2457-2471.

GELFAND, Michale J; BHAWUK, Dharm P.S.; NISHII, Lisa Hisae; BECHTOLD, David J. (2004), "Individualism and Collectivism", (ed. Robert J. House, Paul J. Hanges, Mansour Javidan, Peter W. Dorfman ve Vipin Gupta), *Culture, Leadership, and Organizations: The Globe Study of 62 Socities* (within), California: Sage Publications, pp. 437 – 513.

GÖNEN, Seçkin; YÜREKLİ, Emin, (2016), "6102 Sayılı Türk Ticaret Kanunu Açısından Kurumsal Yönetim İlkelerinin Değerlendirilmesi", *Journal of Accounting, Finance and Auditing Studies*, Vol : 2, Issue: 4, pp. 129-141.

GÜVEYİ, Nazmiye, (2017), "Anglo - Sakson Hukuk Sistemi ve Kara Avrupası Hukuk Sistemi Boyutuyla Ekonomik İdare Hukuku Üzerine Bazı Düşünceler", *Gazi Üniversitesi Hukuk Fakültesi Dergisi*, Cilt: 1, Sayı: 21, ss. 83-122.

HANGES, Paul J, "Research Survey",(2006),

http://www.bsos.umd.edu/psyc/hanges/index_files/GLOBE_Phase_2_Alpha_Questionnaire.pdf>, Data Accessed: 12.01.2018

HOFSTEDE Geert and HOFSTEDE, Gert Jan, (2005), *Cultures and Organizations: Software Of the Mind*, McGraw-Hill, New York.

HOFSTEDE, Geert, (2001), *Culture's Consequences: Comparing Values, Behaviors, Institutions, and Organizations Across Nations*", Sage Publications, 2. Basım.

HOFSTEDE, Geert; NEUIJEN, Bram; OHAVY, Ohayv; SANDERS, Geert (1990), "Measuring Organizational Cultures; A Qualitative and Quantitative Study Across Twenty Cases", *Administrative Science Quarterly*, Vol: 35, Issue: 2, pp. 286-316.

HOUSE, Robert; JAVIDAN, Mansour; DORFMAN, Peter (2001), "Project GLOBE: An Introduction", *Applied Psychology: An International Review*, Vol: 50, Issue: 4, pp. 489-505.

JAVIDAN, Mansour, (2004), "Performance Orientation", (ed. Robert J. House, Paul J. Hanges, Mansour Javidan, Peter W. Dorfman ve Vipin Gupta), *Culture, Leadership, and Organizations: The GLOBE Study of 62 Socities* (within), California: Sage Publications, pp. 239 – 281.

KARTARI, Asker, (2001), *Farklılıkları Yaşamak*, Kültürlerarası İletişim, Ürün Yayınları.

KITAYAMA, Shinobu, (2002), "Culture and Basic Psychological Processes-Toward a System View of Culture: Comment on Oyserman et al.", *Psychological Bulletin*, Vol: 128, Issue: 1, pp. 89–96.

LICHT, Amir N., GOLDSCHMIDT, Chanan; SCHWARTZ, Shalom H., (2005), "Culture, Law, and Corporate Governance", *International Review of Law and Economics,* Issue: 25, pp. 229–255.

LUBETSKY, Michael H. (2008), "Culturel Difference and Corporate Governance", *Transnational Law& Contemporary Problems*, Vol :17, Issue: 1, Winter, pp. 190-211.

LUQUE, Mary Sully de; JAVIDAN, Mansour, (2004), "Uncertainty Avoidence", (ed. Robert J. House, Paul J. Hanges, Mansour Javidan, Peter W. Dorfman ve Vipin Gupta), *Culture, Leadership, and Organizations: The Globe Study of 62 Socities* (within), California: Sage Publications, pp. 602–653.

MENTEŞ, Ahmet, (2009), *Kurumsal Yönetişim ve Türkiye Analizi*, Derin Yayınları, No :135, İstanbul.

MINKOV, Michael; BLAGOEV, Vesselin, (2012), "What do Project Globe's Cultural Dimensions Reflect? An Empirical Perspective", *Asia Pacific Business Review*, Vol: 18, Issue: 1, pp. 27-43.

MUNLEY, E. Almarie, (2011), "Culture Differences on Leadership", *The IUP Journal of Soft Skills*, Vol: 5, Issue: 1, pp. 16-30.

NEWMAN, Karen; NOLLEN, Stanley D., (1996), "Culture And Congruence: The Fit Between Management Practices And National Culture", *Journal of International Business Studies*, Vol: 27, Issue: 4, pp. 753-779.

OECD, (2015), *G20/OECD Principles of Corporate Governance*, September.

OUDENHOVEN, Jan Pieter Van, (2001), "Do Organizations Reflect National Cultures? A 10-Nation Study", *International Journal of Intercultural Relations*, Vol:25, Issue 1, pp. 89-107.

PETTIGREW, Andrew, M. (1979), "On Studying Organizational Cultures", *Administrative Science Quarterly*, Vol: 24, Issue: 4, pp. 570-581.

PORTA, Rafael La; LOPEZ-DE-SİLANES, Florencio; SHLEIFER, Andrei; VISHNY, Robert (1999). Investor Protection: Orıgıns, Consequences, Reform, *Nber Working Paper Series,* Issue: 7428, December.

RAFIEE, Vahideh; SARABDEEN, Jawahitha, (2012), "The Cultural Influence In The Practice Of Corporate Governance In Emerging Markets", *Communication of the IBIMA*, Vol: 2012, Issue: 2012, pp. 1-10.

RINGOV, Dimo and ZOLLO, Maurizio, (2007), Corporate Responsibility From A Socio-Institutional Perspective The Impact Of National Culture On Corporate Social Performance, *Corporate Governance*, Vol: 7, Issue: 4, pp. 476-485.

ROS, Maria; SCHWARTZ, Shalom H.; SURKISS, Shoshana, (1999), "Basic Individual Values, Work Values, and the Meaning of Work", *Applied Psychology: An International Review*, Vol: 48, Issue: 1, pp. 49–71.

SARGUT, A. Selami, (2001), *Kültürler Arası Farklılaşma ve Yönetim*, İmge Kitabevi, 2. Baskı, Haziran.

SCHEIN, Edgar, (2002), "Örgütsel Kültür", *Dokuz Eylül Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi*, Vol: 4, Issue: 3, (Çev. :Atilla Akbaba), pp. 1-32.

SCHEIN, Edgar, (1999), *The Corporate Culture Survival Guide: Sense and Nonsense About Culture Change*, Jossey-Bass, John Wiley&Sons, Inc, San Francisco.

SMIRCICH, Linda, (1983), "Concepts of Culture and Organizational Analysis", *Administrative Science Quarterly*, Vol: 28, Issue: 3, pp. 339-358.

SMITH, Peter B., (2006), "When Elephants Fight, the Grass Gets Trampled: The GLOBE and Hofstede Projects", *Journal of International Business Studies*, Vol: 37, Issue: 6, pp. 915-921.

SÜER, Ayça, Zeynep, (2004), "Muhasebe Uygulamalarında Enron Vakasının Yeri ve Önemi ve Ülkemiz Muhasebe Uygulamaları Üzerindeki Etkisi", İstanbul Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, İşletme Anablim Dalı, Muhasebe Bilim Dalı, Yayımlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, İstanbul.

ŞEHİRLİ, Kübra, (1999), "Kurumsal Yönetişim", Sermaye Piyasası Kurulu Denetleme Dairesi Araştırma Raporu (Yeterlik Etüdü)", Sayı: XIV-4/55-3.

ŞİŞMAN, Mehmet, (2002), *Örgütler ve Kültürler*, PegemA yayıncılık, 1. Baskı, Ankara.

TACKETT, James; WOLF, Fran; CLAYPOOL, Gregory, (2004), "Sarbanes-Oxley And Audit Failure A Critical Examination", *Managerial Auditing Journal*, Vol. 19 Issue: 3, pp. 340-350.

TINAZ, Pınar, (2005), *Çalışma Yaşamından Örnek Olaylar*, Beta Yayınları, 1. Baskı, Aralık, İstanbul.

TROMPENAARS, Fons; WOOLLIAMS, Peter, (2003), *Business Across Cultures*, Capstone Publishing, England.

ÜGEOZ, Perihan, (2003), *Kültürlerarası İletişim*, Üstün Eserler Neşriyatevi, İstanbul.

Other References

http://tkyd.org/tr/sss-sarbanes-oxley-nedir.html, Türkiye Kurumsal Yönetişim Derneği, Data Accessed: 12.01.2018

https://www.bddk.org.tr/WebSitesi/turkce/Mevzuat/Bankacilik_Kanununa_Iliskin_Duzenlemeler/1682kurumsalyonetimyonetmeligiislenmishali.pdf, Bankaların Kurumsal Yönetim İlkelerine İlişkin Yönetmelik, Data Accessed: 12.01.2018.

http://www.yoikk.gov.tr/upload/komiteler/kurumsalyonetim/kurumsalturkiyeuygulama.pdfK, Kurumsal Yönetimin SPK, BDDK ve TTK Düzenlemeleri Kapsamında Türkiye Uygulamaları, Data Accessed: 10.01.2018

Sociology Studies

A LOOK AT MUSIC EDUCATION FROM THE STANDPOINT OF SOCIOLOGICAL THEORIES[1]

Mümtaz Levent AKKOL[2]

ABSTRACT

To develop a sociological perspective in music education, we first examined social and economic inequality and injustice through various sociological approaches. When establishing a sociological basis for music education, we have taken into consideration the functionalist theory, the conflict theory, symbolic interactions, and bureaucratization. These theories and approaches were used to evaluate education sociology, thus allowing us to make sociological assessments regarding music education. The functionalist theory requires that "institutions work together in harmony;" it can be said that this is also necessary in music education. By contributing to the continued existence of music as a social entity, music education also contributes – as a tool of reproduction – to the legitimization and approval of the dominant ideology and system of values, and to their adaptation within the system. Ideas put forward within the frame of the conflict theory were more based on how the current system could be rendered fairer and more equal, rather than just ensuring the continuity of the current system. As such, when evaluating music education according to the conflict approach, we considered how cases of inequality and injustice in music education could be identified and resolved. With regards to symbolic interactions, we focused on the one-to-one interactions relationships that emerged within the frame of everyday life. These interactions could recreate inequality, or carry them over to different areas. Using labels such as successful or unsuccessful in music education further reinforces the inequalities that stem from the environment and the family in which children are raised. Bureaucratization, on the other hand, confers a rather bureaucratic characteristic to music education through the implementation of written rules and principles that shape course content, class notes and class meetings; the mandatory nature of music education for every student, which reduces the appeal of this class at a personal level; and the employment of music instructors based on a set of technical qualities, rather than a more comprehensive approach.

Keywords: Music Education, Sociology, Sociology of Education, Sociology of Music, Sociological Theories

1 This paper has been presented at SGEM Conference, Albania, Bulgaria, 2016

2 Assist. Prof. PhD, Bozok University, Faculty of Arts and Sciences, Department of Sociology, mumtaz.akkol@bozok.edu.tr

INTRODUCTION

Main theories which constitute foundation to the modern sociology can be studied under the general approaches of functionalism, conflict theory and symbolic interactionism (Suğur, 2010:43). While looking at music education over these theories, it would be right to take "bureaucratization" into consideration together with these theories when Weber's contribution to sociology is considered. Starting from this, chosen topics while looking at music education over sociology theories are "Functionalism, Conflict Theory, Symbolic Interactionism and Bureaucratization."

Theories in modern sociology have a wide range of dissimilar features but they can be handled under certain approaches in regard to some common and similar features (Suğur, 2010: 43). In this respect, it would be helpful to consider theories underlying the modern sociology and education sociology together in studying and understanding educational practices and approaches in a sociological sense. Thus sociological view to be directed to music education can be reached from the sociological analysis of education.

While looking music education over sociology theories, reflection and impacts of social and economic inequalities and injustice to music education are especially handled under these topics.

• Theory of Functionalism and Music Education

"Functionalism considers society as a system composed of interconnected parts. On the other hand, functionalism in modern sociology considers society as a system with self-regulation (Suğur, 2010: 44). "Functionalist model of society emphasizes on the elements of harmonization and consistency, not conflict and contradiction (Swingewood, 2000: 244). Also Functionalism regards society as a complex system where its different parts operate together to produce stability and solidarity (Giddens, 2009: 55).

In the emphasis made to harmonization and consistency, a tone which evokes conservatism is heard. The origin of tendency in regarding functionalism as a conservative sociological theory is largely due to its fundamental interest to integration and analogy of society to human organism (Suğur, 2010: 44). The aspects that need to be particularly considered in this description are stability, harmonization and consistency.

According to Theory of Functionalism; besides the basic function of "transfer of the knowledge"; education has explicit functions such as "ensuring control, ensuring social and political integration, existence of a medium of exchange, providing status" as well as hidden functions such as "providing widespread child care system, places for developing

friendship and fellowship, preparation for a career, offering avoidance from unemployment" (Bozkurt, 2012: 279-280). As a part of education, music education contains explicit and secret functions of education.

Schools are part of social system according to Parsons who is the founder of Theory of Functionalism. Cultural norms and values which incorporate the society are taught to individuals through education (Bozkurt, 2012: 279). However the entity where these norms and values belong to is questionable.

Education instructs the individual to be "punctual, disciplined and programmed". These qualities are the qualities the individuals require and should conform to when they join the market economy in future as a workforce.

Thus students who easily accept to be punctual, disciplined and programmed will be the students who recognize these values in their families and learn them. Students who have difficulty in accepting these qualities expected by the education from them will be out of the system which requires punctuality, discipline and being programmed even during their school years (Bozkurt, 2012: 280).

Complementarity of education given by the family to the education given by school will positively affect the success and adaptation of the student. However in when family life and education at school do not fit each other, students will be disadvantaged.

Some students' disadvantageous condition in the class is seen in music education as well. Some students have difficulty in adapting to music genres and forms used in music lessons, while others do not. Because students who experienced the same genre of music which used in music lessons in their families and those who do not are all together in the class.

The intent in the viewpoint based on the theory of functionalism is to analyse the contribution of the handled institution, practice or concept in the subsistence of the society (Giddens, 2009: 55). Therefore, when viewed through theory of functionalism, contribution of music education to the subsistence of the society is merely the existence of a regeneration tool, legitimization and approval of those which are available and contribution to its adaptation to the system.

- **Theory of Conflict and Music Education**

In the theory of conflict, concentration on the issues of power, inequality and battle are in question (Giddens, 2009: 57). Differently from the functionalist theory, injustice due to inequalities and power imbalance introduced by the system rather than adaptation and system maintenance can be assessed in the point of view of conflict.

According to the implicit claim of Marx, social theory's mission is to teach people using these humane qualities in order to disclose oppressive social relations and suggest alternatives (Turner, 1991: 2). Turner said that every theory which tries to understand social world without revealing the forms of oppression and domination is in fact a theory which supports the status quo (Turner, 1991: 4).

It would be a correct approach to handle conflict theory together with critical theory. Critical theory which has come out based on the School of Frankfurt is composed of various interdisciplinary ideas. Furthermore all of these ideas regard every kind of sovereignty forms implemented in modern societies with both capitalist and socialist regulation by scientific technological rationalist powers which are not personal or related to any class (Suğur, 2010: 46).

Critical theory especially emphasizes on how the individuals in modern society reduced to consumption society are manipulated and transformed into creatures which tend towards thinking and researching less often through the temptation of consumption (Suğur, 2010:46).

In today's modern societies, self-view and self-perception which remain at a low level decrease the likelihood of the visibility of inequalities and injustices. For the sake of making these inequalities and injustices visible, critical theory will have contribution from the point of the awareness of people of the system they live in.

If we move the critical theory to educational approaches, we can say that development and use of practices which will allow individuals to use their consciousness level for thinking, research and production should be the basic approach.

According to conflict theory which focuses on social inequity, education is creating a class or dominance of elites. In schools, values such as competition, achievement motivation, economic profits, high status which will serve for the interests of dominant classes are transferred to students (Bozkurt, 2012: 281).

With its avoidance from justice and equity, education is serving high classes, legalizing social system based on inequality, raising the workforce required by capitalism by approving the position of dominant classes in the society. As is, education is a tool which tames the workforce in line with the benefits of dominant classes (Bozkurt, 2012: 283).

Attention of every society segment to music and their preference of music genre are different. There is a price for attaining the facilities for music making. Thus it can be said that economical inequalities affect the access to these facilities.

Ideas to be developed in the light of conflict theory will be established on how they can be modified in a fairer and more equalitarian aspect rather than the sustainability of the existing system. Thus things that can be changed for the sake of disclosing unequal and unfair situations within music education and cause the inequalities and injustices recede should be the subjects to be handled in the review of music education from a conflict point of view.

• Symbolic Interactionism and Music Education

Symbolic interactionism takes the society as a product of symbolic interactions in individuals' daily life. Symbolic interactionism is an approach which concentrates on social action, social interaction, explanation and interpretation processes in sociology like Weber (Suğur, 2010: 47).

"According to symbolic interactionism, meanings change continuously in social consensus and interpretation processes. In this process, social order and social world is reshaped and show up every day (Suğur, 2010: 47).

Symbolic interactionism originates from the interest to language and meaning. Most of the time, sociologists who are influenced by symbolic interactionism usually focus on face to face interactions within the contexts of daily life (Swingewood, 2000).

When looked from this viewpoint, school is related to the interactions in daily life. Social action, social interaction, explanation and interpretation continue in school just as it continues in life. As is, school remains as an institution which regenerates social values and lifestyle. Thus school enhances and legalizes the existing orders and values including inequality and injustice.

"Symbolic interaction theory views schools as a social space which affects education institutions, ego development and role learning (Bozkurt, 2012: 283-284). Students learn to behave in conformity with the expectations created by social labels in school where teacher himself/herself is an authority; Labelled students interiorize this role later on.

Existence of education as a field in which social labels of education are formed and supported has also influenced music education. Practices which evoke authority and obedience to authority, such as choir and orchestra organization, following the choir and the conductor, staying in a certain choir and orchestral order with respect to sound properties support "social labels".

Gender factor is the most apparent application area of social labelling (Bozkurt, 2012: 283-284). From the viewpoint of gender roles, male and female voices of choirs, their classification as high and low pitch, division

of instruments as male and female instrument enhances "gender" roles. School songs aimed at enhancing labelling based on gender can also be assessed by the symbolic interactionist viewpoint.

Discrimination in music genres includes the labelling of music as urban or rural. If one thinks that classical music bears urban values, it can be said that one of the labellings in music education is being urban. We can say that some segments may be excluded as the semantic world of the students and the language they possess would be different.

Having musical talent and interest enhances "successful, unsuccessful" labelling. Field and genre of the music the student works with that brings "success" depends on the environment where the student lives and improves. Thus successful, unsuccessful labelling in music education enhances inequalities based on the environment and the family structure within which one improves.

- **Bureaucratization and Music Education**

According to Weber who is deemed to have made one of the most effective sociologic analyses in bureaucracy, bureaucracy is an organizational model specific to all modern societies which have capitalist or socialist economic regulation (Suğur, 2010: 42).

Taner Timur said that Weber is a "modernization" theorist. Bureaucracy can be considered as one of the concepts of modernization. Bureaucratization should also be handled with the concept of rationalization. Rationalization and bureaucratization are each consequences of modernization (Timur, 2008: 110). According to Weber, transition from traditional society to modern society had occurred in the form a "rationalization" process and this rationalization covers both sides of social formation i.e. relations of exchange (civil society) within market economy and relations of bureaucratic dominance (state) (Timur, 2008: 110).

There are traces of authority and transformative mind in bureaucratization and rationalization. Education systems of countries in which modernization policies are implemented have also authoritarian and transformative content. Bureaucracy is an organizational model and also a form of governance based on authority. It can be said that bureaucracy, as is, forms the basis of power in modern societies.

Bureaucracy and education causes education to become authoritarian. It would not be improper to include the teaching staffs in educational institutes in managerial staff who identify oneself with the state authority. It is seen that a teacher who identifies with the authority cannot replenish himself/herself, cannot get out of the "rights" introduced by the ideology

and is close to novelties and developments. It is possible to handle bureaucratization of education together with the educational institutions which are coming to a state of including many formalities and strict rules with the prevalence and crowding of education. These formalities and strict rules affect the quality of education (Bozkurt, 2012: 284-286).

In music education, bureaucratic features such as division of tasks, the hierarchy of authority, written rules and principles, remoteness and taking technical qualities as basis can be easily seen. Especially the necessity of a hierarchical cooperation by adhering to certain rules together and also hierarchization of authority such as conductor of choir, section leader, music teacher, group leader are the first things coming to mind in the bureaucratization of music education.

Besides these, existence of written rules and principles such as course content, course notes, group meeting reports, remoteness and mandation of music lessons for everyone and employment of instructors and implementers according to some technical qualities somehow make the music education possess all bureaucratic features.

CONCLUSION

At the end of a survey which made inequality and unfair facts in society apparent, if something is going to be said about education it would be the purpose of education which is to reduce these inequality and unfair facts and minimize their effects. Unfair environment created by social and economic inequalities can be either enhanced or receded by education-oriented practices.

It is not possible to mention the liberator role of education unless education is under the service of certain class and ideology. Unless education converts its existing forms and symbols to labels and make the students adopt them, it will enhance inequalities and injustices.

Education is a process of acquiring terminal behaviors and these terminal behaviors are the behaviors of desired, expected by the dominating class/ideology. "Music education" which exists within the education system which is shaped according to the expectations and interests of dominating class is under the influence of dominating class and ideology. (School songs and marches used in Music Education are those determined by dominating class/ideology.) Also rules and discipline followed during music education include some practices that emphasize and enhance obedience to the authority.

Waiting for something to change spontaneously means that the laws of the powerful one will change insomuch it allows so. It can be said that an

education system in which inquiry, creative thinking and concept of justice are not handled will not contribute to reshaping and showing up of the society.

When effect of social and economic inequalities and injustice created by these inequalities to the field of education and the fact that purpose of education is to establish a fairer and free life through humane practices are considered, music education is viewed through sociology theories, priority should be given to receding the effects created by social and economic inequalities and reducing injustices.

REFERENCES

BOZKURT Veysel, (2012), *Değişen Dünya'da Sosyoloji* , Ekin Yayınları., Bursa.

GIDDENS Anthony, (2009) *Sosyoloji*, Kırmızı Yayınları, İstanbul.

SUĞUR, Serap, (2010), "Sosyolojide Temel Yaklaşımlar", *Sosyolojiye Giriş*, Ed. N. Sungur, Üniversitesi Açıköğretim Yayınları, Eskişehir.

SWINGEWOOD, Alan, (2000), *Sosyolojik Düşüncenin Kısa Tarihi* , Agora Kitaplığı, İstanbul.

TİMUR Taner, (2008), *Habermas'ı Okumak*, Yordam Yayınları, İstanbul.

TURNER, Joathan H., (1991), *The Structure of Sociological Theory*, Wadsworth Publishing Company, Belmond California.

THE SECURITY INSTITUTION FROM SOCIOLOGICAL PERSPECTIVE

Mehmet Seyman ÖNDER[1]

ABSTRACT

There have been some major problems of people, groups and societies throughout history, and continued till today. Security has been the foremost problem among these. From the early ages as people have experienced social transformation, the need for security and measures for it differentiates. Since social unity was limited in the early days, security was necessary during the activities such as harvesting, hunting and gathering. As the social transformation moved on, places for housing and means of defence have changed. Along with the transformation, it became necessary to maintain order in social unions and protect these unions against external factors. This study aims to find out the differentiation of the social unities and how the differentiated needs are met.

Keywords: Security in sociology, Security institution, Social unity and security

INTRODUCTION

Human beings have some basic needs. Although the order of importance of these needs varies, sometimes depending on the conditions in which they are found, in general, as Maslow points out, the basic needs such as eating, drinking are the most important ones. Escaping from tension is one of the most important needs for people after physiological needs. It is insurance of safety that protects people from tension. People cannot live in uncertainty. If a political or social stability cannot be achieved, the need for security is at the highest point (Burger, 2006: 429-433). When uncertainty is dominant in a society, people accept the enforcement of some rules such as restricting fundamental rights and freedom that would not be accepted in normal times. This situation is clearly observed in the United States after it was exposed to the September 11 attacks. After these attacks, in the American society, where the fundamental rights and freedoms are emphasized on every occasion, significant restrictions were made in the public sphere, particularly at airports, for the security measures, and even the occupation of countries such as Afghanistan and Iraq was allowed in order to secure American society.

The term 'security' reminds people organizations, such as armed forces,

1 Dr., Bingöl University, Faculty of Arts and Sciences. msonder@bingol.edu.tr

police and intelligence organizations. However, in order to meet security needs, different practises have been implemented depending on the time and conditions. In the first part of this study, the relationship between spatial structure and security is addressed in the context of need for housing and urbanization. And in the second part, the relationship between social structures and security is examined.

1 Spatial Structure and Security Relation

People first needed security in the early ages. People who want to protect themselves against the dangers outside, began to seek for shelter. This necessity has existed since early ages. However, the structure of shelters needed in each period changed according to ages. While the first shelters consist of caves, today's shelters consist of safe reinforced concrete structures.

1.1 Emergence of Need of Shelter

Throughout the history, housing has first emerged as a shelter. The first shelters are caves. In these caves, people aimed to be protected.

1.1.1 Caves

Living in open spaces causes people to be unprotected. Caves can be a shelter protecting from wild and dangerous animals. In addition, caves are very important as natural structures due to the constantly changing conditions of the harsh climates, being cool in summer and warm in winter.

Sheltering in caves has changed according to climatic conditions and eating habits. In the cave preferences, closeness to water resources first became effective. Then, regions where hunting can be done or where there are lots of blessings offered by nature are preferred (Kayan, 1990). In caves used as places for nutrition, burned bones and wood fragments were found in the Middle Palaeolithic Age, that is, about 100 thousand years ago. Such findings show that people were using fire in caves and thus they were cooking. Archaeologists suggest that during these periods people lived in changing groups of 12-15 depending on the season (Sevin, 2012: 7-10). It is understood that safety concerns have existed since the early days of humanity and people have taken precautions to eradicate this anxiety by using some cutting and drilling tools found in these caves.

1.1.2 First Villages

In the early ages, people lived as part of nature instead of dominating it for a long time. Due to climatic changes, the decrease in the number of game

animals or the natural products and the increase of the human population, people were no longer able live in the caves, and this urged people to seek new solutions. The reason why people left caves can be explained by climatic changes and new experiences of people. It is understood that with the first changes of the glaciers entering a period of being pulled into the poles, and the temperate climatic conditions in the Mediterranean basin, humans settled into damp and humid caves (Sevin, 2012: 19-20). When people learned that dried mud becomes hard, they started to make shelter from the soil. Maisels (1999: 198) stated that some groups engaged in hunting and gathering acted on annual cycles to establish various camps in order to benefit from limited resources at certain seasons around 9000 BC. Thus, it can be inferred that these camps started the process of a settled life. The shelters built while beginning the settled life were very few. But then, with the increase of these shelters, these shelters began to become a village or town. Even in the houses built in the Neolithic period, security was a priority. In Konya Çatalhöyük, houses are made of four-cornered walls and side-by-side rooms. The entrance and exit of these rooms are from the upper part, that is, from the roof. These houses, which do not have entrance on the wall, surrounded the settlement (Huot et al., 2000: 27-28). The lack of gates is to prevent the enemy's entry during the city's defence. This defence is against not only humans but also wild animals.

People as a social entity, did not live together just because of social concerns, but to live in security as well. The fact that the first houses were built single or in groups, then accumulated and surrounded by wooden defence supported by stones indicate that the established villages have multi-purposes. This also aims to facilitate farming in these villages with safety (Sevin, 2012: 79)

1.1.3 The Castles and City Walls

As the villages, surrounded by stones and trenches, enlarged the walls around them were strengthened. As time passed, the walls rose in length. The size of the wall, which is believed to be constructed between 3700 and 3500 BC and one of the earliest known settlements of Malatya Aslantepe, was 1.20 meter. It was found out that the walls surrounding Hassekhöyük, which is located in the vicinity of Siverek on the banks of the Euphrates river and belonging to Milano before 3400, are 1.80 meters. (Sevin, 2012: 107-110). This shows that people who lived in the caves in the early ages had security problems caused by wild animals and climatic problems.

The rise of the human population, the depletion of precious resources from nature, and the struggle among people to obtain these resources have also caused changes in security concerns. The necessity to take security precautions against other people has become the most important problem.

Ibn Khaldun (1954: 417) said that the number of people who sheltered in the cave and cavities had increased to such an extent that they were not able to recognize each other and began to be afraid others. According to Ibn Khaldun, they were forced to surround their settlements either with the wall or on the ramparts because they were afraid of being attacked by other people. Therefore, the places they gathered turned into a small city behind the walls.

In a strategic place in terms of securing safety, these walls made of stone that surround the first settlements and can be called as a small city close to water resources, are completely designed to defend. The places where the city walls were to be built were chosen for having advantage in terms of defence. With the use of gunpowder in wars, the city walls and the fortifications of the cities were destroyed. The security of the small settlements, surrounded by the city walls, with the change of economic and political conditions in the whole world, especially in Europe, has come to a considerable extent and the cities of a new kind of settlement have started to emerge since the 13th century (Matthew, 1998: 106).

1.2 Urbanization and Security

Although the urban life as we know today has become widespread since the 13th century, the first cities were first seen in Mesopotamia, Nile, Indus and Sarı Irmak valleys in the third and second millennia BC. Many researchers, such as Benevolo (2006: 6-7), have argued that cities have emerged as a command centre to bring the harvest together and exchange it. While these definitions are made to express the economic part, in fact security is as important as economic reasons in the emergence of cities. Settlements with fewer populations were always open to attacks by larger groups. The increase in the number of people living together means the increase in the number of warriors, as well as the physical labour force to take the necessary precautions in order to be able to defend themselves. The population in cities has increased steadily, both for economic and security reasons and for some other reasons. However, population growth in cities has also caused new problems. Security has been the foremost problem among these. In the cities having the function to reduce security problems against the outside, domestic security issues have begun to emerge.

As the population of cities increased, so did the security concerns of urban residents. Because of the increase in the population, the level of social control, which limits the behaviour of the person and adopts the social values through this limitation, decreased. While fewer crimes have been committed because of the social control of small settlements, the cities have provided a suitable environment for crime to occur since the individuals were not able to recognize each other. In the context of crime,

threats to the safety of life and property of each of its inhabitants turned the cities into unsafe places. This situation causes the emergence of urban security problems.

In the first studies examining the relation between the city and crime in terms of diagnosis of the problem of ensuring urban security, which became one of the main problems with the emergence of cities, it was asserted that the crime originated from the change in the social organization resulting from the change of city structure and irregularity. As a result of the analysis, it was found that the crime decreased as it moved away from the centre of the city (Dolu, 2010: 2007). The increasing complexity of the cities has led to the diversification of the crime and of course different approaches to the origin of the crime.

In Turkey such as in many other countries in the world, cities are no longer perceived as safety places. The spread of crime and the fact that the inhabitants of the city reach the dimensions that threaten their lives have caused this plague. Not only the presence of crime events in cities, but the fear which crime incidents create on the city residents also threatens urban security now. In addition, increased crime rates have resulted in a "fear of being exposed to crime" or "feeling of insecurity" on the urban population. Fear of crime has caused the community to feel insecure in the city to which it belongs and live an uneasy life (Ataç, 2007; Ataç & Gürbüz 2009).

2 The Relation of Social Structures and Security

2.1 Security with Tribes and Tribal Forms

Each society has created norms that will ensure its own order, according to its lifestyles, customs and traditions. Different norms are encountered in every period and every society. Before the formation of modern states, people continued to live within tribes and tribal organizations. The process that creates the tribes' relationship provided through marriage within the tribe members. The relatives formed tribes. The number of tribes determines the size of the tribes. There is also a tribal ruler over the tribe leader. Clans and tribes formed their own norms in order to provide the order. The individual who violated these norms has had to obey to the decisions made by the authoritarian authority and self-defence against tribal authority (Akgönenç, 1988, Türkdoğan, 2006: 41).

In the tribes, there is a common sense of unity and solidarity with a common sense of responsibility as well. A murder, extortion or immorality is not solely responsible of the agent. If the action is realized in the tribe, the responsibility is considered to belong to the whole family line with the individual. If the action is realized outside the tribe, the whole tribe is

responsible for it (Gökalp, 2009: 41, Özcan, 2009: 87). The purpose of these responsibilities is to ensure the social controls of the individuals. When individuals develop any behaviours, they will have to consider that the consequences of these behaviours are concerned not only with themselves, but also with a large number of people, and that the consequences of their behaviours may be very hard. Thus, the individual will avoid from illegal behaviour. Tribes are not only obliged to provide social control. At the same time, they are responsible for the security against the outside. Gökalp (2009: 42) said that the outward tribal members of the tribe are all directed to the tribe, and that all tribal members are liable for the revenge of the behaviour against the tribal member.

The rules and discipline within the tribes are not at the state level but they carry many qualities that the state has. Tribes have a piece of land that is not accepted as outside interference as it is in the states. The tribes have a leader and the places where they run their business. They have courts and judicial power to judge and punish the criminals by the instruction of the tribe leaders, and have a military force in which every individual who can use guns fight against the external threats (Uluç, 2010).

2.1.1 Customs and traditions

Societies, groups and the individuals who make up these groups encounter various problems in social life and perform various behaviours to solve these problems. In most of the cases experiences that have had a positive result on prior problems are often used again in similar situations. These behaviours begin to be repeated and become patterned as problems are solved. These patterns gradually turn into customs and traditions that determine social behaviour (Donmez, 2014: 87). It can be said that sometimes it is organized by the leaders of the communities in order to solve the problems or to provide the order in the community. For example, in Kutadgu Bilig, it is stated that the customs are determined by the leader of the tribe, and is said that " law and order, customs and traditions " are their products (Pamir, 2009). Similar expressions are found both in Kutadgu Bilig and in ancient Turkish sources. A similar phrase can be used for laws of the tribe. The so-called norms are not just the norms of punishment to be imposed against the offenses committed. At the same time, it has a big impact on ensuring justice in society. It is also possible to see it in ancient Turkish traditions. In Kutadgu Bilig, the term "törü" has been used for the meaning of "justice" as well as the meaning of "law and order" (Tanyu, 1979).

Formation of traditions and custom rules is realized after a long period of time and the almost every member of the tribe is influenced. The rules formed reflect the general preferences of the society as it is the result of the general behaviour of the society. For this reason, there is an important

influence in ensuring order in society. (Don, 2014: 87, Run, 2004).

2.1.2 Traditions

Traditions can be defined as a set of social practices associated with rituals or other forms of symbolic behaviour that adopt and transcend certain behavioural norms and values, persist in a real or imaginary past, and are widely accepted (Marshall, 1999: 258).

Traditions and customs regulate almost every aspect of society. One of these areas is how to set up the family building the basic structure of society. Even if the written rules of some countries vary, such as the kinship status of couples to be formed, the maturity status of the individuals to be married, or homosexual marriage, there is sometimes diversification or sometimes overlap between written law and traditional structure. For example, the marriage age of girls in Turkey is 18 in the law. Although some punishments for the criminal are in question, there are still marriages under the age of 18 in the society. The reason for this is that as a traditional practice with some social and cultural influences, the age of marriage, especially in girls, has been accepted as 14-15. In view of the tradition, it is possible to come across this acceptance even in poetry and Turkish of some poets (Oguz, 2012). Tradition, customs, moral values turn into norms that are accepted by the society and eventually they provide the social order as it is caused by the frequency of behaviours that lead to solution.

Values of society, belief systems, organizational structures and characteristics of the geography in which the existence of society is maintained; can determine the area of influence of traditional control mechanisms. Control instruments such as traditions and customs in the field of food or security (Pomegranate, 2013), has a great importance where traditional life is maintained and geographical conditions are difficult. One of the behaviours developed for ensuring order in society is one that appeals to the consciousness and sub consciousness of the individual and affects it with some concise words that will ensure compliance with the norms during and after the socialization process. Some of these words are as follows: " The deceived wins, the deceiver is the deceived one", "Anyone trying to trap others to lose their jobs, loses his/her own job", "The right word can bring back the unfair man from Baghdad" "The curse of innocent can dethrone the shah "(Dursun, 2016: 253-255).

2.1.3 The Impact of Customs, Morals and Traditions on Crime

In rural areas, occupational activities and economic interests are limited. Mutual and close relations are dominant and have strong social control mechanisms. For this reason, crime rates are low in rural settlements. Social organizations in rural areas are quite simple compared to cities and

observation is easy. In rural settlements, social control is based on traditions and customs in general and is influenced by the opinions and beliefs of the people. A person living in the village must also behave in accordance with the norms in order not to be excluded by others. This social pressure reduces the crime rate (Dursun, 2016: 257).

Some customs and traditions that having sanctioning power are settled in the codes of the society so that the codes cannot be separated or it can take a very long time even it is possible. As an example, murder committed by a deceived wife does not receive a "big approval" by contemporary urban society today, which means the approval is now very limited in society. In such cases, it suggests a departure from the traditional approach now, whereas child abuse and rape create a great deal of agreement in verbal and written law about punishment of the criminal. The news of "swelling" about those who fall into prison due to child rape can give an idea about the dimensions of this genuine consensus. When we look through this example, it can be seen how powerful some of the conventional codes are. A criminal who has entered a prison can convict another criminal who has entered the prison because of the rape of a child (Oguz, 2012).

Compared to rural areas, crime rates in cities are much higher. Cities with a more complex structure than rural settlements in terms of economic, social and cultural structures contain a society consisting of individuals with different cultural and occupational groups, social and economic classes, various values and norms of behaviours. For these reasons, the fact that the size and complexity of the physical structure of the city is added to the fact that the criminal and the crimes can be easily concealed is the basis for the crime. (Dursun, 2016: 258). Durkheim emphasizes that the organic solidarity is an altered form of collective consciousness and suggests that the adoption of values through the internalization of norms constitutes the basis of social order and integration in modern societies, but the greater incidence of crime in large cities compared to rural areas suggests that internalization in modern societies has never really happened (1999: 742-743).

2.2 Moral Construction and Security

When the term social order used, first of all, legal rules come to mind. Traditions and customs are functional when there is no law or where there is inadequacy. Sometimes, however, some behaviours that contribute to ensuring social order cannot be explained by legal rules or traditions and customs. These are called moral behaviours. People in every age; when war, injustice, poverty, intolerance are influential or when these begin lead the society, they have tried to contribute to the solution of these problems by identifying and renewing ethical truths and principles, distinguishing between good and evil in solving their problems. With moral understanding;

it is aimed to avoid the harmful ones by repeating the behaviours that are beneficial to individuals and groups by means of good and bad, wrong and correct concepts (Üçüncü, 2016). Morality has a structure that surrounds society in all its lines from the beginning and is a human product. In spite of the absence of a binding sanction, it comes to the forefront with the relationship arrangements between people.

2.2.1 Moral Development and Security

Although social influences emerge morality, the starting point is individual. Moral development begins in childhood, and is one of the most important elements of personality development. Considering the studies done in this respect, it is understood that the cognitive development of the people can reach the expected high point, but the moral development is different in each individual development process (Kabaday & Aladağ, 2010) These development processes are explained by both Piaget and Kohlberg in certain stages.

Pieaget has developed a three-stage model of human moral development. These are (1) the stage of immaturity without moral concerns, (2) the moral dependency phase, and (3) the moral stage of independence. According to the theories of progress, children are first influenced by external sources and then towards an internal morality. Therefore, a development model consisting of two societies is formed. This transformation point in moral development is defined as 10-11 years old. According to children younger than this age, these rules established by adults have a fixed and invariant character. Younger children are evaluating the hadith according to their results, and the attitudes are also influenced by the results (Dolu, 2010: 191). Piaget emphasizes that the rules presuppose the interaction of at least two individuals and that they function in organizing and integrating the social group. In all of the individuals, firstly, a childhood that Piaget stated, a sense of order and coexistence occur. After a while, this understanding also occurs in the social sense. In this case, collective consciousness and moral control arise as Durkheim stated (Nicolopoulou, 2004).

Moral control has always been a requirement for the restraint of behaviour and ensuring social order as a product of the human mind. This mechanism of restricting human behaviour is important in terms of ensuring justice by creating another value that is the product of human thought, not a pressure from the outside (Üçüncü, 2016). Morality corresponds to a general system in which conscious people participate with their own free will and conscience. In almost all societies, even these values show the existence in the system, but the values accepted in the system can vary (Durak, 2007). Durkheim has previously stated unlike individuals, the system of values is created with the common sense of the society, and he expressed

that collective consciousness is the common beliefs and feelings of the average members of society. According to Durkheim, this whole collective consciousness, which is independent from the particular conditions in which individuals exist, occupies a part of individual consciousness, that is, in the operation of some social rules, individuals do not recognize space and individuals are transient, but collective consciousness is permanent. The change of generations does not reveal the change of consciousness. This common consciousness involves more or less development or power than societies. Feelings that are felt together have a strength that comes from the hardships of punishment against those who break the prohibitions. As long as this common consciousness is strong, it keeps the anger against the crime is alive, and this situation makes it possible to create social security (Aron, 2000: 258).

Kohlberg also revealed a model for the development of the moral. This model considers a change from childhood to adulthood and consists of six stages. The six stages are as follow (Seymen and Bolat, 2007):

- The first stage is the 'Obedience and Punishment Direction' phase. At this stage, the individual obeys gentleness, respectability and problem-solving plan.
- The second stage is 'Individualism, Purposeful Exchange and Pure Interesting Tendency'. The correctness of action occurs according to the measure that the person needs.
- 'Mutual Expectations, Relations and Interpersonal Adjustment' constitute the third stage. In this period of the individual's socialization process, behaviours that other individuals expect from him are learned. It is also important to maintain mutual relationships such as trust, loyalty, respect and gratitude and to be pure minded.
- The fourth stage is the Tendency and Conscience to Show Compliance with the Law and the Community. The individual is now out of the family boundaries at this stage. The individual who obeys the duty, the law, and obeys the authority that represents the law attaches importance to the expectations of the group or society at this stage, and attempts to protect and support the social order. The conscience of the individual encourages him to fulfil his social obligations.
- In the fifth stage, defined as 'Social Contract or Benefit and Individual Rights', the individual feels obliged to comply with the law for the welfare of all and the protection of the rights of all people as a member of society (Seymen and Bolat, 2007).
- The sixth and the last is the "Universal, Ethical Principles" phase. At this stage, the right or wrong is not the rules of social order, but the person's conscience and basic ethical principles. These

abstract principles include universal justice, equality and respect for humanity, and so on. (Seymen and Bolat, 2007).

Although it is formed at certain stages and enables the development of moral behaviour, the moral development is the conscience of the person. Nevertheless, the sanction of man's behaviour is his conscience. Ibn Khaldun (1954: 383-384) says that humans have the virtue, intellect and power of discourse to incline the good to evil in terms of their creation and characteristics. Ibn Khaldun, however, does not deny the tendency of humans to be evil, but that this behaviour is realized by the affection the instinct in man.

2.2.2 The Social Security Dimension of Morality

The fact that some ethical values are based on a society, does not mean that it will be acted according to the norms set by the moral values that exist in that society. Because some individuals in society have a weak dependence on moral values. There may be difference in moral values from a society to another, from one group to another, as well as contradictions or conflicts between these values. The solution for cross-group or cross-community conflicts, i.e. security problems, is only possible with the adoption of the same moral values. Otherwise, one of the sides, the weak one, will have to bow down to the stronger to end the conflict. This will allow the unfair situation to occur, which will cause the weaker one to respond more strongly to the stronger one in the future. Germany who was defeated in World War I, started the World War II with a Nazis approach, can be given as a good example of this case.

If the individual gets out of the moral values within the group, sanction is the exclusion of the individual by the group. However, if the person who gets out of the values is an effective individual within the group, she/he may not be sanctioned, even if she/he is sanctioned it may not be effective. However, moral values based on religious beliefs can sometimes be more effective, even if they have less power of sanction and they can reduce the likelihood of individuals get out of the values. The reason for this is the belief that the individual will face very heavy sanctions in the eternal life, even though they will not lead to any sanction in the present life. People are able to distinguish good and evil in their own way with experience, without being as systematic as dogmatic rules and using the basic dogmatic guidance. It does not mean that knowing good and evil can be practiced by the individual. However, we see that the belief system which is based on religious belief of the halal and haram belief has more power of sanction. For example, in a Muslim society, harms of cigarettes are known by everyone. However, it is observed that the number of smokers is much higher than that of drinkers even these harms are known. The reason for this situation

is that, although there is no clear statement indicating that smoking is forbidden, it is clearly stated that the drinking alcohol is forbidden in their religious book (Sonmez, 2011).

The moral rules specify which actions are expected actions or legitimate in society, and which actions are undesirable actions or legitimate. The realization of expected or legitimate actions contributes to the formation of social order. Kohlberg states that the provision of social order is a great contribution to the behaviour of people with traditional moral principles. People with these principles show a total socialist behaviour by considering everyone's common interests from the smallest families to the members of the largest community (Dolu, 2010: 193). This situation minimizes the problem of social security.

When it comes to social security and order, the law comes first. Traditions and customs are functional when there is no law or where there is inadequacy. Sometimes, however, some behaviours that contribute to insurance of social order cannot be explained by legal rules or traditions and customs. These are called moral behaviours. With moral understanding; starting from the concepts of good and evil, wrong and correct, it is aimed to repeat the beneficial behaviours and avoid the harmful ones by individuals and groups. For example, if you tell the driver in front of you that on the way back to the same road is closed to the other drivers following that road, it is a moralistic act to prevent those drivers from losing time and money. There is no punishment for a young passenger sitting in a bus, not offering his/her seat to a pregnant, and a sick woman and cause a life-threatening health safety issue. Because this behaviour has no legal or custom responsibility, it is purely moral (Gözler, 2013: 21-22).

It is the conscience of the person that enables the development of moral behaviour. Nevertheless, this is the conscience of man. Nevertheless, the sanction of man's behaviour is his conscience. Ibn Khaldun (1954: 383-384) says that humans have the virtue, intellect and power of discourse to incline the good to evil in terms of their creation and characteristics. Ibn Khaldun, however, does not deny the tendency of humans to be evil, but that this behaviour is directed by the affection the instinct in man.

The ethical rules that come out of the conscience of individuals and make a social impact are one of the three basic sources of law. Morality first establishes its own norms, and these norms eventually acquire a characteristic that constitutes the basis of law, tradition and custom. In norm sociology a common behavioural expectation that suggests behaviours is considered culturally desirable and appropriate. Norms are similar to rules and regulations with their ability to be commanding, but normative rules have no official status. Sometimes a behaviour that is not contrary to the

law can be regarded as wrong and even deviant behaviour when evaluated according to the moral norms. For example, relation without marriage is regarded as an ordinary behaviour that does not require any sanction in the Turkish legal system, but is regarded as a deviant behaviour according to the ethical rules of this country (Gözler, 2013: 21-22; Marshall 1999: 533). The moral rules specify which actions are expected actions or legitimate in society, and which actions are undesirable actions or legitimate. The realization of expected or legitimate actions contributes to the formation of social order. Kohlberg also states that the provision of social order is a major contributor to the behaviour of people with traditional moral principles. People with these principles show a total socialist behaviour, considering everyone's common interests from the smallest family to the largest community of society (Dolu, 2010: 193). This reduces the security problem to minimum.

2.3 Person and Public Security in Legal System

The fact that everyone has unlimited freedom means that no one is free. Freedom of a person is due to the restriction of the freedom of all individuals in the society. In this context, in order to make individuals free it is necessary to determine the behaviours that can or cannot be done in advance. Pre-designation of behaviours that are expected or are not expected to be done by individuals prevents individuals from raping the fundamental or forging up some rights and freedoms of a group or within the community. At that point, the rule of law was needed. Bozkurt (2009) expresses that law is formed together with community life. According to Bozkurt, the beginning of a power and an economic life has triggered the creation of legal rules. The expression of the rule of law on a written text corresponds to 4000 years BC. Mesopotamian and Anatolian lands became places where the first legal arrangements were made. The Assyrian, Sumerian and Hittite civilizations are civilizations that regulate politics, trade and social relations with legal regulations, make them law texts and declare them to their people.

The protection of individual rights is realized in two ways. The first of these is the use of brute force, in which case the stronger is the winner. It is not possible to talk about justice where the strong is right. However, in civilized societies, individuals are transferring their defence rights to some institutional structures, which demonstrate the quality of being a state. In this way, justice becomes an event that is not solved by each person according to their own understanding, but a process that is evaluated according to general law and rules (Akgönenç, 1988). The functioning of the state and these institutional structures takes place through certain rules. These rules constitute the legal system. Law is a fundamental institution of social construction. This is one of the main social institutions that provide

social order with this quality (Yüksel, 2012). Within the legal system, the individual has no absolute superiority. Individual rights differ in the status assigned to them in society. The legal rights of an adult male and a child are different from each other. Türközeri (2005) emphasized that in order to evaluate the individual, it is necessary to understand all the bonds of society in which it exists and its relations with the previous generations. According to Türközeri, sociality is embodied in relations that integrate people together in community life and link them together in a firm relationship of solidarity. The individual is neither privileged nor superior to social ties. The fulfilment of the functions expected from the individual is realized by the power of the community's own unique strengths. Every individual is obliged to perform a specific function in society spontaneously and continuously. The individual cannot avoid fulfilling this social function; otherwise, social life is damaged.

2.4 State Security

In primitive communities, seeking rights or protecting their rights was more of a brute force. As primitive communities evolved towards modern societies, the individuals transferred seeking and defending of their rights to state institutions. State institutions have begun to function to protect their citizens against each other, as well as from external threats. This is why internal and external security institutions have been formed in the state for this function.

2.4.1 External Security Institutions

Every creature on Earth has always had the will to protect itself against both their fellow human beings and other species. Animals born with defence systems in their creation to protect themselves with the natural weapons they possess. People are the only ones developing their own defence system. In their first shelter in history, people developed simple weapons to ensure their security. The first people made coarse tools from large pebbles, which are easily found in nature. These tools were used in hunting and gathering as well as defending against other people and wild animals (Sevin, 2012: 7). Smaller and faster animal species forced people to develop new weapons and allowed them to invent the weapons such as arrows and bows in the Mesolithic period which is accepted as the period after the Palaeolithic period, (Sevin, 2012: 14-15). The use of metal in the construction of swords, the use of gunpowder used to illuminate by the Chinese until the 10th century in the firearms by the Arabs before the 14th century, and development of these firearms by the Europeans, defence has gained a new dimension (Özey: 2007: 41).

People have developed not only weapons to provide their security, but

also security units. From the early ages great importance has been attached to security units. In his book State Plato, divides the people within the state into three basic classes. While grouping the workers, artisans, tradesmen and all employees in a class he grouped the soldiers as a class by itself. Plato's assessment of the military as a class alone shows how much he attaches importance to it (Plato, no history: 39). The security units established in the early ages consisted of both internal security and external security. The military functioning as forces of defence against foreign powers in times of war, took the task of ensuring the order of the country in normal times. With changes in the conditions of the times and the development of technology the modern state emerged, needed new institutions. Professional armies have been established for external security as a requirement of modern age. These armies are specifically trained in combat strategies and tactics and they are equipped with modern, highly effective weapons.

2.4.2 Internal Security Agency

The crowds of cities and the fact that people can not recognize one another have reduced social control. The increase in population, the unfair distribution of income, the high welfare of some people while some people live in misery has increased the rates of crime. With the increase of criminals and types of crime, the military power which learns only martial arts in the fight against crime has become inefficient. This situation has led to the creation of new institutions, namely internal security institutions, which will only ensure order and fight against crime.

Internal security institutions were first divided and differentiated according to the rural and urban areas, then specialized in different areas according to the types of crimes. Internal security institutions, in the social order have provided public services such as social peace protection, use of human rights and freedoms that will enable the public to feel safe (Gül, 2008).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Akgönenç, O. (1988). "Savunmanın Tarihi Gelişmesi Üstüne Düşünceler". *Journal of the Union of Turkish Bar of Associations* (1), 16-19.

Ataç, E. (2007). "Suçun Kentsel Mekandaki Algısı: Güvensizlik Hissi". *UCTEA (Union of Chambers of Turkish Engineers and Architects) Bulletin of Chambers of Architects; Bulletin of City and Crime* 55, 16-23.

Bozkurt, H. A. (2009). "Eski Çağlarda Anadolu'da Hukuk (Hitit- Asur-Sümer)". *Journal of Ankara Barosu Hukuk Gündemi* (3), 79-82.

Burger, J. M. (2006). *Kişilik*. İstanbul: Kaknüs Publications.

Dikici, A. (2011). "The Place and Importance of Traditions in a Society". *Fırat University Journal of Social Science* (2), 251-258.

Dolu, O. (2010). *Suç Teorileri: Teori, Araştırma ve Uygulamada Kriminoloji*. Ankara: Seçkin Publications.

Durak, N. (2007). "The Concept of Good and Evil in Mawlana's Ethical Theory". *Journal of Suleyman Demirel University Institute of Social Sciences* (6), 1-24.

Ela Ataç, D. G. (2009). "Interdisciplinary Security Policies to Respond Crime in Urban Areas". *Turkish Journal of Police Studies*, 11(1), 25-45.

Gökalp, Z. (2009). *Kürt Aşiretleri Hakkında Sosyolojik Tetkikler*. İstanbul: Kaynak Publications.

Gözler, K. (2013). *Hukukun Temel Kavramları*. Bursa: Ekin Publications.

Gül, S. K. (2008). "Accountability in the Public Management and Security Services". *Turkish Journal of Police Studies*, 10(4), 71-94.

İbn-i, H. (1954). *Mukaddime 1*. (Trans by Z. K. Ugan) İstanbul: Maarif Publications.

Jean-Louis Hout, J.-P. T. (2000). *Kentlerin Doğuşu*. (Trans by A. B. Girgin) Ankara: İmge Publications.

Kabaday, A., & Aladağ, K. S. (2010). "Comparison of the Moral Development of the Students Attending to Different Primary Schools from Different Variables". *International Journal of Human Sciences,* 7(1), 878-898.

Kayan, İ. (1990). "Tarih öncesi Yerleşme Yerleri Olarak Antalya Mağaralarının Jeomorfolojik Özellikleri". *Aegean Geographical Journal* (5), 10-31.

Kongar, E. (2000). *Toplumsal Değişme Kuramları ve Türkiye Gerçeği*. İstanbul: Remzi Publications.

Koşum, A. (2004). "Osmanlı Örfi Hukukunun İslam Hukukundaki Temelleri". *Review of the Faculty of Divinity University of Süleyman Demirel* (17), 145-160.

Maisels, C. K. (1999). *Uygarlığın Doğuşu Yakındoğu'da Avcılık ve Toplayıcılıktan Tarıma Kentler ve Devlete Geçiş*. Ankara: İmge Publications.

Marshall, G. (1999). *Sosyoloji Sözlüğü*. Ankara: Bilim ve Sanat Publications.

Matthew, D. (1998). *Atlaslı Büyük Uygarlıklar Ansiklopedisi Orta Çağ Avrupası (Cilt VI)*. İstanbul: İletişim Publications.

Nicolopoulou, A. (2004). "Oyun, Bilişsel Gelişim ve Toplumsal Dünya: Vygotsky ve Sonrası" (Trans by Melike Türkan Bağlı). *Ankara University Journal of Faculty of Educational Sciences*, 37(2), 137-169.

Oğuz, M. Ö. (2012). "Yazılı Hukuk ve Sözlü Hukuk Açısından Evlenme Pratikleri ve "Töre Cinayetleri". Milli Folklor" *International Journal of Cultural Researches* (95), 103-113.

Özcan, H. S. (2009). *Kürt Tarihi Aşiretler ve İsyanlar*. İstanbul: Akis Publications.

Özey, R. (2007). *Küresel Silahlanma Dünyanın Silah Deporları*. İstanbul: Aktif Publications.

Sevin, V. (2012). *Anadolu Arkeolojisi*. İstanbul: Der Publications.

Sönmez, M. (2011). "The Moral Sanction-Power of the Faith". *Journal of Sakarya University Faculty of Theology*, 13(23), 117-141.

Tanyu, H. (1979). "Türk Töresi Üzerine Yeni Bir Araştırma". *Journal of the Faculty of Divinity of Ankara University*, 23(1), 97-120.

Türkdoğan, O. (2006). *Doğu ve Güneydoğu'da Kabile ve Aşiret Yapısı*. İstanbul: IQ Kültür-Sanat Publications.

Türközeri, B. G. (2005). "Hukukun Objektivite Kazanma Süreci". *Journal of the Union of Turkish Bar of Associations* (59), 198-209.

Uluç, A. (2010). "Social and Political Organization among Kurds: Tribe". *Mukaddime* (2), 35-52.

Yüksel, M. (2012). "A Sociological Overview of the Concept of Law Culture". *Communication, Theory and Research Journal* (35), 1-18.

Philology Studies

LES COMPÉTENCES DU TRADUCTEUR DANS LA PEDAGOGIE DE LA TRADUCTION
TRANSLATOR SKILLS IN TRANSLATION TRAINING

Gülhanım ÜNSAL[1]

ABSTRACT

This study aims to determine the skills, tasks and needs of the translator in the training of translation in order to emphasize the importance of the translator. In doing so, we tried on the one hand to define the translation, on the other hand to specify the hidden identity, the assumed task, the editorial capacity, the ability in two languages and cultures, the translational competence, the need, the field of work etc. of the translator. This work has a descriptive quality. As a result, it has been found that, in the training of translation, the future translator should have a sufficient understanding of the source language in its written form, general or specialized extralinguistic knowledge, good drafting ability in the target language, a skill of the principles and the approach of the translator, and knowledge of the practical and business aspects of the job.

Keywords: Translator, Translator Skills, Translation Training.

INTRODUCTION

Cette présente étude vise à déterminer les compétences, les tâches et les besoins du traducteur dans l'enseignement de la traduction afin d'accentuer l'importance du traducteur. Ce faisant, on essaiera d'une part de définir la traduction, d'autre part de préciser l'identité cachée, la tâche assumée, la capacité rédactionnelle, l'habilité en deux langues et cultures, la compétence traductionnelle, le besoin, le domaine de travail etc. du traducteur. C'est pour cette raison que ce travail porte une qualité descriptive.

1.La traduction

Nous sommes dans l'âge de la traduction. Il y a eu, jusqu'à présent, de nombreuses tentatives pour théoriser la pratique de la traduction. On postule qu'au sens saussurien, la traduction n'est pas la langue, mais la parole. Car, la traduction est l'utilisation de la langue.

1 Maitre des Conférences, Université de Marmara, Faculté de Sciences et Lettres, Département de Traduction et d'Interprétation en Français. E-mail:gulhanim.unsal@marmara.edu.tr

On peut considérer en général que la traduction est une activité très liée aux comportements sémiotiques. Capelle (1987: 128) dit que la traduction 'intersémantique fait partie de notre compétence communicative'. La traduction est une activité sémiotique complexe liée aux comportements de compréhension et d'expression par les processus de déverbalisation puis de reverbalisation (Cuq, 2003: 239 – Cuq & Gruca, 2011: 399). Cary (1994: 11) la définit comme l'opération qui cherche à établir une équivalence entre deux textes exprimés en des langues différentes. Selon Humboldt (2000: 24), traduire est un travail, une interprétation et, en même temps, un acte de liberté, ouvrant l'accès à essentielle pour le commerce des langues autant que pour la diffusion des idées. Jakobson (2000: 114) l'étudie sous les trois titres dont la plus connue est la seconde, la traduction interlinguale parmi les autres.

1.*La traduction intralinguale* : c'est de transmettre un message oral en même langue en oral de façon différente. Elle peut s'appeler la reformulation dans la même langue et comprend la synonymie, l'antonymie, la paraphrase, etc.

2.*La traduction interlinguale*: c'est d'exprimer de nouveau un message oral en langue différente en oral. Elle peut s'appeler la traduction qui a lieu entre deux langues.

3.*La traduction intersémiotique:* c'est de définir encore une fois un message oral par l'intermédiaire d'un différent système de signe. Elle peut s'appeler l'interprétation de signes verbaux par des moyens non verbaux.

Toutes ces formes jouent un grand rôle dans de nouvelles méthodes et elles s'inscrivent dans les recherches sur le métalangage. Mais quand on parle de la traduction, c'est la traduction interlinguale qui est le plus souvent visée.

La traduction est considérée comme une activité linguistique réalisée sur des textes, et les principaux facteurs déterminant la traduction sont des structures d'équivalence abstraites, définies syntaxiquement et sémantiquement (Robinson, 1997: 192). Quant à Gile (2009: 37), il pense que la traduction est comme une activité de nature sociale. La traduction est une activité autonome et interprétative. C'est un concept didactique (Cuq & Gruca, 2011: 399). On comprend que la traduction étudie dans de différentes perspectives comme littéraires, linguistiques et pédagogiques.

Les difficultés de la traduction sont nombreuses. Quelques-unes des difficultés résultent des obstacles stylistiques concernant par exemple les genres littéraires, des différences entre les structures syntaxiques des langues, des mots intraduisibles. Il est normal qu'une langue ne partage pas les mêmes civilisations et cultures avec d'autres langues et ne dispose pas

de mots spécifiques équivalents. Ces difficultés sont amplifiées par un autre problème linguistique, celui de la terminologie et l'équivalence des mots ou des expressions dans les deux langues, la polysémie, les faux amis ou les synonymes, l'infidélité et la trahison, les différences culturelles et sociales entre les locuteurs de la langue source et la langue cible, la subjectivité du traducteur, le sens etc. La traduction littérale (le mot à mot) pose aussi un problème. Elle peut conduire à des erreurs d'interprétation et à une perte de sens.

D'après Vinay et Darbelnet (1958/2008: 70-72), il y a trois problèmes linguistiques que les faux amis entrainent dans la traduction anglais-français et français-anglais. Ils sont de l'aspect sémantique, stylistique et structurel.

-l'aspect sémantique: le sens des mots varie d'une langue à l'autre. La langue de départ et la langue d'arrivée partagent certains mots de la même orthographe. C'est un piège qui se pose un problème de la traduction.

-l'aspect stylistique: concernant l'aspect stylistique, les faux-amis apparaissent dans l'ordre d'évoquer ou se rapporter à un milieu différent dans le texte cible, car le style varie d'une langue à l'autre en valeur intellectuelle, psychologique, littéraire, technique, scientifique, commerciale et spécialisée. Pourtant, les faux-amis stylistiques peuvent posséder presque le même sens.

-l'aspect structurel: Les faux-amis se montrent dans le sens global qui est divergent au sens de structure de la phrase. L'aspect structurel de faux-amis réunit la lexicalité et la syntaxtique d'une phrase. Ceux-ci font la structure phraséologique.

Les autres dilemmes qui se présentent à la traduction français-anglais/anglais-français sont les modes verbaux, la rhétorique des types de texte, la ponctuation etc. (Waliya: http://www.academia.edu/8503364/les_probl%c3%88mes_de_la_pratıque_de_la_traductıon)

Comme le dit l'expression latine, 'Traduttore, traditore.' C'est-à-dire, 'traduire, c'est trahir.' Le traducteur est donc celui qui est 'traitre.' Est-ce que c'est vrai ? On le voit.

2. Le traducteur

Le traducteur est celui qui reconstitue le message d'origine de la langue source par le biais d'un texte dans la langue cible. Le traducteur a donc une tâche binaire: décoder le texte et le synthétiser avec des caractéristiques intralinguales. Mais cette tache devient de temps en temps trop difficile.

2.1. Qui est le traducteur ?

Dans l'évolution de la traductologie, en raison des différentes approches et méthodes traductionnelles, le traducteur a eu plusieurs noms. Tous ces noms qui lui attribuent signifient une grande valeur et importance.

Le traducteur a été considéré comme un « translateur » chargé d'une langue à l'autre, comme un « adaptateur » ayant la responsabilité de satisfaire les attentes du public visé, comme un « médiateur » qui se place à mi-chemin entre deux cultures ou deux mondes pour les rapprocher, comme un « communicateur » enfin, chargé de faciliter le dialogue entre individus ou communautés éloignées. Dans tous les cas, le traducteur apparait comme un « percepteur » sur deux plans: d'une part, pour traduire la perception du public de départ, en d'autre part, pour traduire la perception du public d'arrivée. Le traducteur se trouve toujours au cœur du système: il est tout à la fois l' « interprétant » du texte de départ, le « sélectionneur » du sens à traduire, le « gestionnaire » des modules de traduction, le « décideur » de l'objectif et de la finalité, le « producteur » de la version traduite, le premier « récepteur » de la traduction, parfois même son premier « consommateur » et son « diffuseur » auprès du public cible (Guidère, 2008: 15).

On suppose qu'il est toujours dans l'arrière-plan et qu'il n'est pas apparent et toujours caché. On pense que personne n'intéresse à lui parce que celui-ci n'attire pas l'attention. Mais au contraire, il existe dans la vie de tous avec les textes traduits. Car, il est un expert de communication entre l'écrivain et les lecteurs.

On sait bien que la linguistique, initialement, a abordé la traduction par le biais des langues. Avec cette première approche linguistique de la traduction, les traductologues contemporains mettent l'accent sur la personnalité du traducteur et sur son comportement plutôt que sur les textes, depuis plus de vingt ans (Gile, 2009: 246). Mais, les identités de messager-traducteur-rédacteur sont si imbriquées qu'on ne peut pas parler de l'identité du traducteur (Bulut, 2008: 110).

2.2. Quelles sont les compétences du traducteur?

Quelles sont les particularités qui doivent se trouver chez le traducteur? Le traducteur doit acquérir quelques particularités. Quels sont les éléments de base de la compétence traductionnelle dans un contexte professionnel? Gile (2009: 12), du point de vue de formation, précise les cinq composantes de la compétence du traducteur :

1. Une compréhension suffisante de la langue de départ sous sa forme écrite

La connaissance d'une langue étrangère est en général l'élément premier. C'est la qualification du traducteur. Car, certains considèrent que c'est la seule condition nécessaire et suffisante pour la traduction. On peut dire que cette perception est erronée. On peut délimiter en quatre points:

1. La maîtrise de la langue de départ requise pour la traduction est une connaissance passive, et non pas active.

2. La connaissance passive requise est celle de l'écrit, et non pas oral.

3. Le niveau de compréhension requis varie en fonction du texte concerné.

4. Connaître une langue, c'est également connaître une ou plusieurs cultures qui y sont intimement associées. Certains termes et expressions, surtout les termes culturels, sont indissociables d'un fait historique, d'un fait social, d'une affectivité propre à une communauté, qui ont des incidences textuelles à travers des nuances dans des emplois et des sens.

La langue et la culture sont inséparables l'une de l'autre. Comme le dit Benveniste : Tout ce qui est du domaine de la culture relève au fond de valeurs, de systèmes de valeurs. D'articulation entre les valeurs. Eh bien! Ces valeurs sont celles qui s'impriment dans la langue (Benveniste, 1974: 22; Öztürk Kasar, 2009: 167). La transposition des éléments culturels crée des problèmes dans la traduction. Mounin (2004: 236) explique ainsi ses idées sur ce sujet: pour traduire une langue étrangère, il faut remplir deux conditions, dont chacune est nécessaire, et dont aucune en soi n'est suffisante: étudier la langue étrangère; étudier l'ethnographie de la communauté dont cette langue est l'expression.

2. ***Une bonne capacité rédactionnelle en langue d'arrivée***

La traduction est de récrire en créant (Göktürk, 2010: 43). Le traducteur est lui-même rédacteur (Gile, 2009: 14). Traduire, c'est non seulement comprendre le texte de départ de manière à pouvoir choisir des mots correspondants en langue d'arrivée, mais rédiger en langue d'arrivée un texte qui remplisse le rôle qui lui est affecté. Rédiger un texte de qualité exige un certain sens de langue et de l'expression écrite. Car écrire, c'est communiquer. Dans la production écrite, il y a trois étapes: la planification, la textualisation et la révision (Cornaire, 1999: 93; Cuq&Gruca, 2011: 185).

1. La planification: l'étape préliminaire peut s'appeler précomposition, préécriture, analyse, préparation. Au cours de cette étape, le rédacteur récupère dans sa mémoire à long terme les connaissances nécessaires et élaborer un plan; le processus de la planification sert à définir le contexte textuel et pragmatique d'un message à transmettre.

2. La seconde étape peut s'intituler rédaction, écriture, expression, production. La mise en texte ou textualisation, au cours de laquelle il engage des choix lexicaux, sélectionne les organisations syntaxiques et rhétoriques afin de mettre en mots, en propositions, en phrases, en paragraphes, en texte les idées récupérées et organisées à transcrire.

3. L'étape de révision apparaît sous les termes de corrections, réévaluation, réécriture. La révision ou l'édition, qui permet la revue du texte produit et qui consiste en une lecture minutieuse du texte écrit afin de lui apporter des améliorations et de finaliser la rédaction.

On croit que le rédacteur peut constater les erreurs et les modifications à apporter. Au niveau moléculaire de la phrase, la rédaction de la traduction est dans l'ensemble au moins aussi difficile et bien souvent plus difficile que la rédaction spontanée. À partir de cela, nous pouvons dire que la traduction de haut niveau exige une compétence rédactionnelle certaine. Brunette (2003: 124) précise la rédaction que les textes à traduire doivent étudier minutieusement avec le texte original et corriger convenablement à la méthode, à la théorie, aux particularités langagières et textuelles.

On remarque bien que la planification et la révision sont souvent présentées par les didacticiens et les chercheurs comme des stratégies. Et donc, les *futurs* traducteurs doivent acquérir ces deux stratégies comme la responsabilité du traducteur. Selon Gouadec (2002: 20), le traducteur planifie la réalisation de la traduction en déterminant *qui fait quoi, quand, en combien de temps, en se servant de quels moyens.*

3. ***Des connaissances extralinguistiques générales ou spécialisées***

En général, l'importance de la culture générale dans la traduction est sous-estimée. La connaissance linguistique non accompagnée de connaissances générales suffisantes les rend vulnérables à des erreurs d'interprétation graves dans l'analyse du texte de départ et à des mauvais choix d'expression dans la langue d'arrivée.

Mais les connaissances spécialisées, elles sont surestimées. Au-delà d'un bagage minimum de culture générale, la traduction appelle une acquisition de connaissances. Avant d'aborder un domaine de spécialité, le traducteur doit rechercher des informations qui lui permettront de résoudre les problèmes.

4. ***Une maîtrise des principes et de la démarche du traducteur***

Cette composante de la traduction est généralement ignorée par le grand public, parce qu'on croit la traduction fondée sur des connaissances et non pas un savoir-faire. Et quand même, à partir du moment où la correspondance linguistique fait défaut, à partir du moment où le traducteur

est confronté à un texte ambigu, à une difficulté de compréhension, les solutions à rechercher et à mettre en œuvre appellent des connaissances et des techniques ou stratégies.

Cette composante de la compétence traductionnelle s'appuie donc autant sur un savoir que sur un savoir-faire. Dans la catégorie du savoir-faire ont les techniques de la recherche documentaire, la prise des décisions informationnelles et linguistiques dans la rédaction du texte d'arrivée, l'utilisation des sources d'information et des différents outils. On peut dire que cette composante-ci est spécifique à la traduction parmi les autres. La compréhension d'une ou plusieurs langues étrangères, la culture générale, les connaissances spécialisées, l'habilité à la rédaction peuvent se retrouver dans d'autres professions, de même que dans des environnements non professionnels. Et pourtant, une personne obtenue de ces trois composantes de la compétence traductionnelle n'est pas pour autant mécaniquement qualifiée pour la traduction.

On attend que, en principe, le bon traducteur professionnel est apte à travailler dans des domaines de spécialité plus variés, à assurer à toutes ses traductions une qualité minimum, à les réaliser plus rapidement, à surmonter les différents empêchements plus facilement et à un coût moindre. Cette composante peut s'acquérir naturellement, au fil du temps, avec la pratique de la traduction en milieu professionnel. Mais on pense qu'elle peut largement s'acquérir par une formation.

5. ***Une connaissance des aspects pratiques et commerciaux du métier***

Il s'agit surtout de la connaissance des clients potentiels, des domaines de spécialité « porteurs », de la réglementation applicable aux modalités d'exercice de la profession, des méthodes et techniques de gestion de projets, des outils informatiques et autres.

Le traducteur est au service des autres acteurs. Dans la pratique, c'est un professionnel et en tant que professionnel, il dépend donc avant tout du client de la satisfaction de celui-ci.

2.3. Quels sont les types du traducteur?

Le terme traducteur est couramment employé pour désigner différents métiers de la traduction. Il regroupe de différentes spécialisations:

-*Le traducteur technique* est généralement un professionnel issu d'un secteur précis (industriel, médical, juridique...) qui traduit des documents relatifs à sa sphère d'activité. Il a une double compétence.

-*Le traducteur littéraire* travaille pour un éditeur avec lequel il signe un contrat pour la traduction d'un ouvrage déterminé. Comme il est considéré

comme un auteur, il touche des droits sur les ventes de l'ouvrage ainsi traduit.

-*Le traducteur audiovisuel* réalise le doublage et le sous-titrage de films, de séries ou de documentaires. Il doit respecter de nombreuses contraintes techniques. Il perçoit également des droits d'auteur.

-*Le localisateur* est spécialisé dans l'informatique et le multimédia. Il traduit le contenu de logiciels, de jeux vidéo ou de sites web pour les adapter aux contraintes locales du pays auquel ils sont destinés.

-*Le traducteur assermenté* a reçu l'agrément des autorités judiciaires. Il est le seul habilité à traduire certains documents (pièces d'identité, actes d'état civil, jugements...). Ses traductions ont une valeur légale.

-*L'interprète de conférences* assure la traduction verbale, simultanée ou consécutive, des propos tenus par un orateur (conférences internationales, réunions commerciales, audiences des tribunaux, etc.).

On sait que les traducteurs et interprètes exercent parfois leur profession en tant que salariés dans les organismes internationaux, agences de traduction, grandes entreprises au sein d'un pool de traducteurs. Plus souvent, ils travaillent comme traducteurs indépendants (freelance). Ils consacrent alors une partie importante de leur temps à des tâches commerciales: prospection, constitution d'un réseau, négociation, facturation, etc. (http://etudiant.aujourdhui.fr/etudiant/metiers/fiche-metier/traducteur-interprete.html).

2.4. Quels sont les besoins du traducteur?

Il faut préciser ici les besoins du traducteur. De quoi ont-ils besoin? On comprend que ses besoins sont très variés. Et qu'est-ce qu'on peut faire pour eux? Gile (2009: 19) les divise en trois cas d'espèce:

-la formation initiale en début d'études

-la formation des apprenants avancés

-le recyclage et la reconversion

1. La formation initiale en début d'études: ce premier cas est celui du débutant complet. Les apprenants qui souhaitent devenir traducteur, il leur faut acquérir l'ensemble des compétences requises pour la traduction, la culture générale, une bonne compréhension de la langue de départ, une bonne capacité de rédaction en langue d'arrivée et de la compétence traductionnelle.

2. La formation des apprenants avancés: ce deuxième cas, sous la forme la plus classique, correspond à celui d'apprenant ayant déjà un

premier bagage linguistique. Il est supposé avoir une culture générale et une bonne base linguistique. Il se prépare à passer une ou deux années supplémentaires pour acquérir les compléments de savoir et de faire savoir en matière de compétence traductionnelle et linguistique.

3. Le recyclage et la reconversion: ce troisième cas le plus fréquent est celui d'une personne déjà engagée dans la vie professionnelle qui souhaite se reconvertir dans la traduction, ou améliorer son niveau de compétence dans la traduction.

CONCLUSION

La traduction se montre sous la forme linguistique. La connaissance linguistique est un préalable mais elle n'est pas la base. Elle est un observatoire des événements langagiers dans la situation de communication. La traduction n'est pas neutre. Elle est « apparente. » Elle est interdisciplinaire. Elle appelle des méthodes, des techniques et des stratégies. Elle est un acte de communication. La traduction a donc son lieu parmi les professions intellectuelles.

Le traducteur est un équilibre entre le texte source et le texte cible. Il faut que le traducteur ait une compréhension suffisante de la langue de départ, une bonne capacité rédactionnelle en langue d'arrivée, une connaissance générale ou spécialisée, une maîtrise des principes et une connaissance des aspects pratiques et commerciaux du métier et qu'il planifie la réalisation de la traduction. Il n'est pas un appareil mécanique à décoder.

Pour traduire correctement, il faut que le traducteur connaisse bien les stéréotypes idiomatiques et dialogiques, les métaphores, les allusions, les symboles, les connotations, les noms propres, les noms de lieux, l'histoire, la religion, la géographie, etc... en bref ce qui appartient tout à la culture d'une communauté.

À côté de bonnes compétences linguistiques et traductionnelles, il faut que le traducteur ait de bonnes connaissances sur le texte à traduire. Mais, chaque texte a des difficultés et des fonctions différentes. Le traducteur doit savoir appliquer quelle méthode à quel texte. Chaque type de texte ne peut pas être traduit de la même façon. Le traducteur doit donc acquérir une connaissance solide pour chaque type de texte: littéraire, technique, académique…

Outre la connaissance approfondie d'au moins deux langues étrangères, il doit donc posséder des qualités de rigueur, d'exigence et

une certaine curiosité sur les thèmes. Il doit également être capable de respecter la présentation des documents fournis en utilisant un logiciel de TAO (traduction assistée par ordinateur). Enfin, le traducteur indépendant devra être polyvalent, réactif et savoir organiser son travail en fonction des circonstances. C'est le traducteur qui a beaucoup de missions et responsabilités et ses tâches sont très lourdes.

BIBLIOGRAPHIE

Benvenıste, Emile. (1974). Problèmes de Linguistique Générale I-II, Paris: Gallimard.

Brunette, Louise. (2003). La Révision, Traduction, Terminologie, Rédaction. Actes des universités d'été et d'automne et du colloque international, s. 123-133, Paris: La Maison du Dictionnaire.

Bulut, Alev. (2008). Basından Örneklerle Çeviride İdeoloji-İdeolojik Çeviri, İstanbul: Multilingual Yayınları.

Capelle, Mari-José & Debyser F., Goester J.L., (1987). Un Pas Vers La Traduction Interprétative- Retour à La Traduction, Le français dans le monde, numéro spécial, p. 128-135, Paris.

Cary, Edmond. (1994). Noblesse de la Parole, dans Babel, vol. VIII, no: 1, 1962, cité par Lederer Marianne, La Traduction Aujourd'hui, France : Hachette.

Cornaire, Claudette & Raymond, Patricia-Mary. (1999). La Production Ecrite, Didactique des Langues Etrangères, dirigée par Claude Germain, Paris-Québec: CLE International.

Cuq, Jean-Pierre. (2003). Dictionnaire de didactique du français. Paris: CLE International.

Cuq, Jean-Pierre & Gruca, Isabelle. (2011). Cours De Didactique Du Français Langue Etrangère et Seconde, Grenoble: PUG

Gile, Daniel. (2009). La Traduction. La Comprendre, l'Apprendre, Paris: PUF

Gouadec, Daniel. (2002). Profession: traducteur, Paris: La Maison du Dictionnaire.

Göktürk, Akşit. (2010). Çeviri: Dillerin Dili, İstanbul: Yapı Kredi Yayınları.

Gudière, Mathieu (2008). Introduction à la traductologie, Bruxelles: De Boeck.

Humbolt, Wilhelm Von. (2000). Sur Le Caractère National Des Langues, Paris: Editions du Seuil.

Jakobson, Roman. (2000). On Linguistic Aspects of Translation, The Translation Studies Reader, p.113-118, London- New York: Routledge.

Mounin, Georges. 2004. Les problèmes théoriques de la traduction, Paris: Gallimard.

Öztürk Kasar, Sündüz. (2009). Introduction à la Linguistique Pour Futur Traducteurs, İstanbul: Multilingual Yayınları.

Robinson, Douglas. (1997). Becoming a Translator, London - New York: Routledge.

Vaerenbergh, Léona Van. (2005). La Traduction. De la Théorie à la pratique et retour, Linguistique et Théorie(s) de la Traduction: Réflexion(s) Scientique(s) au profit du Traducteur, sous la direction de Jean Peeters, p. 19-30, Rennes: PUR.

Vinay, Jean Paul & Darbelnet, Jean. (1958/2008). Stylistique Comparé du français et de l'anglais, Paris: Didier

Waliya Yohanna Joseph (Les problèmes de la Pratiques de la Traduction, http://www.academia.edu/8503364/les_probl%c3%88mes_de_la_pratıque_de_la_traductıon /Erişim tarihi 19.01.2018

http://etudiant.aujourdhui.fr/etudiant/metiers/fiche-metier/traducteur-interprete.html.

THE EFFECT OF ARTAUD ON NEILSON'S CRUELTY

Belgin BAĞIRLAR[1]

ABSTRACT

Theatre, which within the borders of literature can define as being the mirror of society evolves in parallel with society in terms of reflecting scientific, political, and social change. Antonin Artaud, who was one of the most prolific and influential 20th century critics of experimental theatre, had zeroed in on the theme of savagery in order to fully reflect the shifts taking place within society and its values, and had aimed at increasing the level of interaction between the audience and the play by tearing down the wall standing between viewers and the stage. Artaud had succeeded in causing a rippling stir throughout the theatrical world with his two plays *Jet of Blood* and *Les Cenci*, as well as through his collection of essays *The Theatre and its Double*, featuring the piece *Theatre of Cruelty*. Not only has Artaud had a major influence on directors, he has also influenced many a playwright, as can be seen in a number of 21st century In-Yer-Face playwrights such as Neilson, Crimp, Kane, and Ravenhill. From the tail end of the 20th century until the present day, the contemporary playwright Anthony Nielson has contributed a great deal to Anglo-British theatre through the medium of avant-garde and contemporary language. The aim of this paper is, through the lens of Neilson's play *Normal,* to shed light upon the interrelationship between Artaud and Neilson's theatrical styles, as well as to uncover the similarities between the two playwrights' approaches to the theme of violence and cruelty. In *Normal*, Neilson openly exposes his audience to the omnipresence of savagery and cruelty. Neilson, in his laying out the bloodcurdling murders and barbarity of his characters, makes use of elements such as music, dance, and lighting in similar fashion to Artaud. Neilson, in exhibiting the true nature of humanity, succeeds in emotionally disturbing his audience by directly plucking at their senses and consciousness.

Keywords: Anthony Neilson, Antonin Artaud, Normal, Violence, Cruelty

> *A real stage play disturbs our peace of mind, releases our repressed subconscious, drives us to a kind of potential rebellion (since it retains its full value only if it remains potential), calling for a difficult heroic attitude on the part of the assembled groups. (Artaud, 1958: 18).*

1 Giresun University, English Language and Literature Department, sakiroglu.belgin@gmail.com

INTRODUCTION

A slow but steady change over time is being seen the world of theatre as it drifts alongside the sociological and political shifts that are taking place within various human societies. The reigns of the Conservative Party-based prime ministers Margaret Thatcher (1979 – 1990) and Tony Blair (1997 – 2007) had led to an intense period of economic, political, and culture changes that were felt throughout the entire island of Great Britain. The negative effect of Thatcherism on British society and theatre lasted until 2000, despite Thatcher's term in office coming to a close in 1990, and despite her supporting of private ownership, balanced taxes, and patriotism. According to Alex Sierz, "Thatcher achieved her victories at terrible cost, usually borne by others. By any test, from statistical surveys of relative incomes to the striking reappearance of beggars on the street, Britain became a more unequal society" (2001:65). Hence, it was during her time in parliament that Britain had fallen witness to the growing divide between social classes as well as ever increasing unemployment. The Blair administration is, the wake of Thatcher, not remembered any more fondly, politically speaking. The British artistic world too had lived through a dry spell in parallel during this period in time. The draughty economic conditions throughout the 1980s during Thatcher's reign had had a negative monetary impact on British theatre. However after 1990s, Britain's politics of privatization had brought rain into the desert, thus rejuvenating the theatrical scene once again. Due to the considerable number of new playwrights, '*a distinct genre in British theatre' had begun to improve, and was called 'new writing*' (Middeke, 2011: ix). The term "In-yer-face" was coined by Alex Siers in describing this new wave of theatre in terms of its raw language use, its blunt criticism of politics and society, and its revealing of all that is hidden. According to Sierz:

Any drama that takes the audience by the scruff of the neck and shakes it until it gets the message. It is a theatre of sensation: it jolts both actors and spectators out of conventional responses, touching nerves and provoking alarm. Often such drama employs shock tactics, or is shocking because it is new in tone or structure, or because it is bolder or more experimental than what audiences are used to. Questioning moral norms, it affronts the ruling ideas of what can or what should be shown onstage (2001: 10).

In this context, the goal of In-Yer-Face theatre—in adding a new dimension to British theatre—is to ethically shock the audience through content and though language, by leaving nothing hidden. Anthony Neilson, Sarah Kane, Mark Ravenhill, and Martin Crimp are just a handful of a number of important playwrights who fall under the category of this new wave, and who use taboo-eliminating frank language in order to shock their audiences with political, gender, and social issues. Sierz, in comparing In-

Yer-Face playwrights to earlier experimentalists in terms of how they draw from various stage techniques in order to underscore the theme of violence, strengthen the interaction between the audience and the play, and elevate its degree of effectiveness, notes that "*it is hard to imagine contemporary theatre without the modernism of Beckett, Bertolt Brecht or Antonin Artaud*" (2006: 9). Moreover, in citing Artaud's Theatre of Cruelty, he states that "*We have the right to say what has been said and even what has not been said in a way that belongs to us, a way that is immediate and direct, corresponding to present modes of feeling, and understandable to everyone*" (1958:74). Artaud, akin to In-Yer-Face theatre, both includes his audience in the play, as well as uses staging elements such as lighting and dance in an attempt both to freak his audience and to increase the potency of his production. In this sense, in can be said that both In-Yer-Face and Artaud's style theatre are in fact similar. For example, whilst Artaud's *Jet of Blood* (1925) contains a violent scene of a women who chews off her own wrist, *Les Cenci* (1935) refers to sexual violence in shedding light upon a girl who was sexually abused by her father, similar to what the character of Kurten in Nielson's *Normal* lives through at the hands of her own father. In *Theatre and Its Double,* Artaud focuses on the concept of violence. In Nielson's *Normal,* it is impossible to avoid the themes of sexual and homicidal violence. The aim of this paper is to examine Artaud's influence over Neilson's *Normal,* as well as to identify the similarity between the two playwrights in terms of their theatrical style.

Antonin Artaud, 1896 – 1948, was one of the most prolific French artists of avant-garde theatre. He managed remain very fruitful, both as an actor and as writer, in spite of enduring mental illness, drug addiction, and scandal. Opposing traditional forms and content of theatre, Artaud demands to trigger the senses of the spectators, surfacing their subconscious to make them perceive the truth about real human beings. In attacking their senses and feelings, he prevents spectators from being passive observers and makes them take part on the stage. Susan Sontag posits the aim of Artaud; '*a commando action against the established culture, an assault on the bourgeois public; it would both show people that they are dead and wake them up from their stupor*' (1988: xxxviii). Thus, unlike his contemporaries, theatre for Artaud is a kind of vehicle provoking spectators to comprehend the truth rather than giving them a moral lesson. Managing to spark a change in the theatre, Artaud had also written a collection of essays in 1938, *Theatre of Cruelty* in *The Theatre and Its Double*. His masterpiece influenced many playwrights, literary critics, and philosophers, who made effective comments on his work. Derrida claims that "*The theatre of cruelty is not a representation. It is life itself, in the extent to which life is unrepresentable. Life is the non-representable origin of the representation*" (1978: 294). While Jacques Derrida praises Artaud for his realistic representation of life, Peter

Brook defines Artaud's theatre with these words: "*A theatre working life the plague, by intoxication by infection, by analogy, by magic; a theatre in which the play, the event itself, stands in a place of a text*" (1996: 44). As Brook and Derrida advocate, Artaud refuses the value of written theatre and believes that theatre "*has the power to influence the aspect and formation of things*" (79). For that reason, he presents *The Theatre of Cruelty*. Nevertheless he specifically mentions that *The Theatre of Cruelty* does not address to 'blood', but

It means a theatre difficult…And on the level of performance, it is not the cruelty we can exercise upon each other by hacking at each other's bodies, carving up our personal anatomies, or, like Assyrian emperors, sending parcels of human ears, noses, or neatly detached nostrils through the mail, but the much more terrible and necessary cruelty which things can exercise against us. We are not free. And the sky can still fall on our heads. And the theater has been created to teach us that first of all. (1958:79).

Cruelty for Artaud means evoking the consciousness; that is, intertwining both spectators and theatre rather than displaying physical torture or attack. This is why fulfilling this aim is not as easy as he depicts. Artaud's short plays, including his *Les Cenci* (1935), which based on Percy Bysshe Shelley's work, as well as *The Fountain of Blood* (1925), are in fact the biggest proof of his comprehension of cruelty. Even though both plays contain scenes that disturb his audience, Artaud's aim is more focused around depicting our own sense of inner violence as opposed to cruelty, and thus makes his audience feel that inner turmoil. Thus, Artaud had wanted his audience to walk away from his plays having learned something, all the while avoiding teaching a direct moral at the end of the play—thus avoiding traditional theatre all together. He believes that we have to get rid of masterpieces:

Masterpieces of the past are good for the past: they are not good for us. We have the right to say what has been said and even what has not been said in a way that belongs to us, a way that is immediate and direct, corresponding to present modes of feeling, and understandable to everyone (1958:74).

To paraphrase, Artaud, in criticizing Aristotle's position that theatre is for the aristocracy, defends that theatre is for everybody. Moreover, he argues that language used in theatre ought to be colloquial, and that the topics dealt with be relevant to everyday life in order to appeal to for it to have a broad appeal. His language concept is completely different from his contemporaries. He advocates that "*the stage is a concrete physical place which asks to be filled and to be given its own concrete language to speak*" (1958:37). In order words, for Artaud, the language of theatre is neither oral nor written, but is something addressing spectators' senses. He calls it "*a concrete physical language*" that "*is truly theatrical*" (1958:37). Creating this

kind of language is not easy, and the first thing to do is to "*assume many aspects…such as music, dance, plastic art, pantomime, mimicry, gesticulation, intonation, architecture, lighting, and scenery*" (1958:39). Oral language is not enough to express feelings and trying this "*is to dissimulate it*" (1958:71). It is this reasoning that lead Artaud to believe that theatre needs to satisfy the senses of the audience in every way, shape, and form in order to evoke their inner feelings. He claims that language has a simple duty to express ordinary feelings: "*this is why true beauty never strikes us directly. The setting sun is beautiful because of all it makes us lose*" (1958:71). However, if theatre is combined to "*expressive possibilities of forms, to everything in the domain of gestures, noises, colors, movements, etc.*" (1958:70), it is achieved to "*restore it to its original direction, to reinstate it in its religious and metaphysical aspect, is to reconcile it with the universe*" (1958:70). Hence, Artaud in fact indicates that actions and objects have their own language, and that the message of the play can more successfully reach the audience by allowing those languages to awaken the audience's consciousness. On this point, Anthony Neilson, in following in the footsteps of Artaud, does not reject the "magical" tie between theatre and both audio and visual art, and makes use of dance, music, slapstick, and gestures within his violence-themed plays.

Artaud, in *Art and Theatre,* claims that there is an undeniable relationship between (the) plague and theatre. According to him, the plague makes spreads throughout the body first without making itself known, but then by the time the patient shows any symptoms, the illness has already taken its toll, and it is too late. The patient, who is aware that (s)he is about to die is ready to live off of sole instinct because now, for her/him, death is no longer a frightening event. Like the plague, theatre too envelopes people's consciousness and senses, and causes inner emotions to protrude outwards. In essence, theatre to Artaud "*has been created as an outlet for our repressions*" (1958:9). In this context, both Artaud and Neilson's perception of violence is close to one another; according to Nielson, "*violence takes place in the same place as real life*" (Sierz, 2001:37). Nielson views violence as being as being an inescapable fact of life, and thus makes violence the core theme of his works. For instance, his play *Penetrator* (1993), he focuses on the violence towards both women and men, whist another of his plays, *The Censor* (1997), deals with violence and sexual desire. *Normal* deals with the themes of blood, murder, sexual abuse, animal abuse, and violence-driven by sexual desire.

Anthony Neilson is a tremendously influential contemporary playwright because of how he incorporates avant-garde colloquial language, violence, satire, and comedy into his works. Nielson was born in 1967 in Edinburgh, Scotland to actors Berth Robens and Sand Neilson. This means that his being born into a family of artists, as well as being reared within the world of art from a very early age, proved him with a natural advantage when it came to

his becoming artist as well. He would later on follow in his parents footsteps and studying acting at the Royal Welsh College of Music and Drama in Cardiff, Wales. However, it was not before that he long had decided to drop out of school. Two year, he wrote his first radio play *The Colours of the King's Rose* (1988), thus making an important step forwards in his career. According to Trish Reid, Nielson had begun to make a name for himself with the 1991 release of *Normal*, which "*after a successful run at the Edinburgh Fringe transferred to London*" *(2017:5)*. Neilson had also simultaneously worked as a director during. He is known to have directed Nina Raine's *The Drunks* (2009), Alistair Beatosa's *Catedonia (2010)*, and Peter Weiss's *Marar Sade* (2011). Neilson, who both linguistically as well thematically rains upon his audience with shock bombs through his addressing of violence, has been classed by critics such as Rebecca D'Mante, Graham Sounders, and Alex Sierz has being an In-Yer-Face playwright. According to Alex Sierz, "*long before Sarah Kane and Mark Ravenhill hit the headlines in the mid-nineteens, Neilson was exploring the darker side of the human psyche*" (2001:68). In addition, the themes of humanity, the consciousness through dreams, hidden inner violence, and hidden sexual desire can be found in a number of his other works such as *Penetrator* (1993), *Censor* (1997), *The Lying Kind* (2002), *Stitching* (2002), *The Wonderful World Of Dissocia* (2004), *Realism* (2006), and *Unreachable* (2016). On the other hand, even though Neilson is of Scottish origin, one does not come across any trace of Scottish nationalism in his plays. Trish Reid, in her book *Modern British Writing in the 1990s*, writes that "*it seems pertinent to consider how far his Scottishness can be considered as a factor in shaping his early work*" (2012:138). In brief, even though Neilson takes a different and even aggressive approach to highlighting contemporary problems, he does not make his Scottishness apparent in any form.

If we were to think of theatre, like the other branches of the arts, as being a mirror that reflects the era within which it rests, we therefore know that it will never be independent from politics. Nevertheless, most In-Yer-Face plays do not reflect the political climate of the day. In Reid's view, Neilson keeps a firm distance from criticising politics, noting that: "*Neilson's major plays are certainly marked by an intensified consciousness of ethical dilemmas, but these are figured as acutely personal. Moreover Neilson's attitude to the 'topicality' of his own work enhances the impression that he is not a political artist*" (2017:6). As Reid indicates, Neilson makes himself known in British theatre, both by eradicating the taboo of sexuality in *Penetrator* (1993) and *Censor* (1997), as well as through his use of rebellious and violent language. *The Lying Kind* (2002), which features the aspects of dark comedy and farce, deals the theme two policemen who commit violence in the name of "kindness" upon delivering bad news on Christmas Eve. *The Wonderful*

World of Dissocia (2004) and *Realism* (2006) move British theatre into a whole other dimension in their dealing with the themes of fear and of dreams stashed within the subconscious.

According to Neilson, "*theatre has to give a voice to the poor, the deviant and the fucked up*" (Sierz, 2001:37). Hence, Neilson gives the characters of Wehner (*Normal*), Alan (*Penetrator*), and Gobbel and Blunt (*The Lying Kind*) the chance to have their voices and thoughts heard. On the other end of the spectrum, there are also the "deviant" characters of Kurten, Frau, Max, and Tadge, who both shock the audience, and whose subconscious emotions never come to the surface. Neilson's *Normal* is appraised as being a "*small but crucial laboratory for new writing*" (2001:68). Sierz therefore sees Neilson, as well as Kane and Ravenhill as being pioneers in In-Yer-Face theatre. He claims that "the most polished and poetic of Neilson's plays, *Normal* is full of detail and rich in theatrical inventiveness" (2001:13). *Normal* (1991), be it due this linguistic structure, or be it due to its cutthroat and thought provoking vocabulary, had raised many an eyebrow throughout the theatrical world during the 1990s, and became the subject of many a writer's examination and positive interpretation. "*The Scotsman* appreciated Neilson's 'deep research', while *the Guardian* said that 'gave Normal an air od modish nihilism'... critic Ian Shuttleworth thought that .. highly questionable because of the pornographically violent murder" (Sierz, 2001:9). Neilson, who uses a razor sharp tone in his dialogues, had—in drawing from a real serial killer—openly mentioned the names of the deceased as well as the dates of their murders. The serial killer in question was Peter Kurten (1883 – 1931), who was dubbed "The Düsseldorf Monster" because he had murdered and raped a number of people between 1929 and 1939. *Normal* and its place in In-Yer-Face theatre is—both thematically as well as linguistically-speaking—a play that caused the ball to roll in Neilman's career.

NORMAL

Normal takes places between Peter Kurten, who has been charged with multiple crimes and condemned to death, his wife Frau Kurten, and Peter's lawyer Justus Wehner. Wehner, who at the beginning of the play defends what has happened as being—to his recollection—a "memory of a memory", and goes on to explain that it is impossible to undo erase the trail of footsteps that Kurten has left behind him. Neilson draws his audience's attention on Wehner during his opening speech through the effective use of focused stage lighting. "*He is at the foot of some twisted steps which lead to the back rostra. Atop the rostra a swan has risen, its wings outstretched. In his hand, Kurten holds a pair of ludicrously oversized scissors*" (1998:13). The display of Kurten's inner barbarity before the eyes of the audience as he kills the

white swan—who represents purity and innocence—on stage, thus causes the audience to focus more on Kurten than on Wehner's speech. Nielson, thus, tears down the barrier between the audience and the stage by means of shocking his audience. During the second act, Kurten—who appears as a silhouette—at the same time appears to be staring at slaughtered swan. Moreover, the voice of his wife Frau can be heard in the background, asking *"Peter? Peter, what is it that's happened? Peter, what have you done this time?"*(1998: 13) During the third scene, all of the lights are yet again focused on Wehner. This time, Wehner states that when he was in his 20s, in 1931 he was given Kurten's court case by the law office at which he worked not because he personally wanted the case, but rather because taking on that case would mean a giant step forward for his career. As for his reason:

> Wehner... it's true
>
> I knew everything of the law.
>
> Little of life
>
> And less of love But I knew everything of the law. (1998:13)

Wehner, who knows little of either life or love, is unware that he is about learn a tremendous amount life from Kurten upon meeting him. Here, Nielson uses dance and music in order to focus the audience's attention upon Wehner. Thereupon Wehner talks about Germany's plummeting economy during the early part of the 20th century, about German citizens living through poverty and unemployment, and about their being unable to look towards the future, as well as about Kurten's vicious killing spree not even getting enough attention. He then goes on to talk about Kurten's violent past.

> Wehner... Between February 1929 and May of 1930, eight lives had
>
> Been taken by Peter Kurten.
>
> And so, for fifteen months,
>
> A black fog of fear had been settled on Dusseldorf
>
> And there was no escape from it,
>
> if you opened your window
>
> it crept into your home (1998:14)

Here, Nielson again makes use of lighting, dance, and dummies in order to give the audience the sense that Wehner too has a dark streak about him, as well as in order to ironically not have the audience just associate the so-called cruelty with Kurten alone—much in the same way that Artaud uses various stage effects in order to both increase the drama of cruelty itself,

as well as to stir the audience's subconscious. In the fifth act, the lighting when Kurten and Wehner meet is significantly brighter, however Neilson still does not allow the audience to see Kurten's face by having him sit with his back turned towards the audience. Wehner first introduces himself to Kurten, thereupon which Kurten asks Wehner whether his (own) hair appears combed or not. Here, Neilson wants to define Kurten as being someone who appears to be a normal human being, to the point that he even indicates that Kurten is no different from anybody else, and that he even is somewhat handsome, saying: *"he is immaculately dressed, his cheeks just slightly rouged. He is a handsome man, in his late forties*" (1998:15). During the initial dialogue between Wehner and Kurten, Wehner states that he is going to defend him through a plea of insanity in order to rescue him—under the logic that the committing such a heinous series of atrocities can only be born out of insanity.

> Wehner I think that you must be.
>
> Kurten You hope that I am.
>
> Wehner I'm trying to save your life
>
> Kurten My dear young boy.
>
> Wehner They'll execute you, Mr. Kurten.
>
> Doesn't that frighten you?
>
> Kurten Why should I be afraid?
>
> I am what they fear. (1998: 15)

Neilson, through obscure dialogue between the two characters, uses Kurten as a means of us that man's inner sense of violence is omnipresent. Kurten had unleashed his inner violence, consequently becoming a savage and cruel criminal who has been sentenced to death for translating his violence into the rape and murder of countless male and female children. Hence, Kurten is the physical embodiment the cruelty that secretly exists within society. In fact, his family seems to be desensitized to violence. His grandfather "was a thief, a simpleton and a violent alcoholic" (1998:16) and his father was imprisoned for attempting to rape one of his daughters" (1998:16). Therefore, for Kurten, violence is a normal and natural part of life that need not be hidden. Moreover, Kurten does not even categorize his father's actions towards his sister as rape, and expresses this through undiluted idiom:

> Kurten You see, Dr Wehner
>
> When my father wanted to
>
> Take my mother he took her

In that room

In full view of us all.

That was my family.

I was never

An innocent. (1998: 16)

Neilson, like Artaud, uses direct and obscene language, and in doing so enters into the audience's comfort zones by breaking down the wall that lies between and the stage. Wehner is saddened by and ties Kurten's lack of being able to distinguish violence as being bad as stemming from his "insufferable upbringing" (16) (this, given that Kurten indicates that did not receive enough of a chance in order to remain innocent within his upbringing), and moreover turns a blind eye towards Kurten's becoming aroused when he commits the murders. However, similar to what Artaud had tried to do, Kurten expresses one of mankind's darkest of secrets, "On the whole it was my advantage. There is no place for innocence in this world."(16)

The second dialogue that takes place between Wehner and Kurten evokes the audience to question themselves. Kurten asks Wehner whether or not he has ever fallen in love, and asks him to define love. Love according to (inexperienced) Wehner is "Selflessness. Trust. Understanding. Affection. Happiness" (1998:17). When Kurten then askes Wehner where he acquired that definition from, Wherner replies that he learned love from those he had felt close to as well as by watching his family. Neilson during this point in time forces the audience to think. The dialogue continues:

Kurten Did your parents love each other?

Wehner Yes.

Kurten How do you know?

Wehner I just know.

Kurten But how?

Wehner They must have.

Kurten That must have?

Because daddy must love mummy?

Wehner How does this answer my question?

Kurten (pause) I don't suppose it does.

Wehenr Because what your parents had doesn't sound like love

it sounds more like

brutality.

Kurten Brutality belongs to love.

Wehner I don't believe that. (1998:17)

While both Artaud and Nielson force their audiences to confront reality, they at the same time force them to think. They expose the audience to the reality of the supressed inner violence that exists within mankind, to how prevalent and mundane that violence is, and how well cloaked that evil is by things that we understand as being good. Kurt explains how his first murder takes place when he is only 8 years of age, and describes how he both boarded a boat along a river with two friends, and how he drowned those friends. Moreover, he describes this with a sense of pleasure and excitement in his voice, saying that it was "like I had found a diamond washed up on the beach" (1998:18). Wehner labels this event as being "horror", whilst Kurten views the same event as being the flip side of the coin of horror. For Kurten, who describes how during his teens he had befriended and learned a great deal from a man who caught and tortured dogs, horror is:

Kurten ... fear is the dullest side of horror's coin

There comes a point when all that is left to do is to go to it

To close the door behind you and go to it (1998: 18)

Neilson, like Artaud, in fact merely tries to express mankind's suppressed inner savagery through plan and open language. However, despite spending 27 years in prison, Kurtrn neither experiences this fear, nor does he victimize himself. To the contrary, given that prison has supressed his inner beast in order to prevent him from re-repeating what he has done, prison becomes an good opportunity for him to poison his friends. Moreover, he becomes frustrated at Wehner's not understanding him and accuses him of being two-faced.

Kurten ... I was fucking dogs and sheep and pigs whilst sticking them with knives

Pigs were the best, you know why?

The noises they made- (1998: 19)

Kurtner, in saying this, is thus forcing the audience to think about the violence hidden within darkness through the help of lighting, all the while Wehner also leaves the audience in horrified shock. When the electricity goes out Wehner, who is caught in the same darkness as Kurten, enters into a panic and shouts out to the guards for help. Wehner screams out of fear and wants to escape. Kurtner on the other hand, unlike Wehner, pushes his

fear aside and steps forward in order to get a rise out the cruelty, just like he did when met his dog-catching friend. In fact, while Nielson uses Wehner as a means of reflecting the thoughts and emotions of his audience, he uses Kurtner during this scene to represent their lack of understanding. Neilson also, like Artaud, turns his audience into a jury by including them as part of the play. During the ninth act, as Wehner defends Kurten, he talks in a manner where he is facing away from the audience. Here, just as before, Kurten is defined as a monster. Then, as the lights begin to fade, Wehner leaves the audience-deep sinking into deep thought with the question, "*Do we bear monsters? Or do we create them?*"

The eleventh act consists of Wehner and Kurten talk about the murder of 13-year old Christine Klein. Here, in order to emphasise the drama of the incident, as well as to have the audience relive that incident in their minds, a wandering corpse that "carries with a grotesque doll, clothed in a wedding dress" appears on stage. Kurten, who breaks into her house in order to commit robbery, sees Christine fast asleep, strangles her, and then slashes her throat. Wehner, aware that Kurten had placed an extra plate on the dinner table in spite of Christine's family being dead, grabs the doll from the wandering corpse's hand and sits the corpse down at the table. Kurten, upon coldly describes the murders, begins to pressure Wehner in order to uncover as well as to understand the inner-darkness that lies within him and humanity.

> Kurten ... You choose to believe that I am insane
>
> because you choose not to believe in evil
>
> Yet you know that they are both only terms of convenience
>
> and instant relations of truth
>
> Why do you support the structures you distrust?
>
> Wehner Because
>
> without structure
>
> society would collapse.(1998: 23)

Just like Artaud, Nielson too is well aware of man's inner darkness, and tries to convey that awareness to the audience. He moreover uses the character of Wehner as a means of showing the audience that mankind's sense of inner violence and darkness merely becomes restrained as opposed to gets dissolved within societal rules.

During this act, the waking corpse then returns to life—this time as Kurten's wife, who both had once worked as a prostitute, as well as who had killed the man she loved for abandoning her. Kurten, who flogs Wehner

for at one point meeting and then sleeping with Frau Kurten, gets the ball rolling in order to evoke Wehner's dark side. In Act 14, Wehner calls out to the audience, saying "*the art of seduction, Peter said, was much akin to that of murder!*" (1998: 25). It is at this point that Neilson makes the audience feel the danger of Kurten's intention towards the otherwise obvious Wehner through music, "*jerky movements, and flickering lights*" (1998:25). Kurten, who re-enacts the seduction of Frau with flowers and gifts, as well as by kneeling down, presenting her with a ring, and then kissing her, creates out of himself a role model both for Wehner as well as for the audience. Moreover, Neilson's characters, through the acting out of (potentially) important love-related events (i.e. giving flowers, proposals, rings, etc.) in fact include the entire audience as opposed to Wehner alone. Even though Wehner accepts how beautiful Frau Kurten is, and even though he feels that his thoughts are unethical, for Kuren on the other hand lust is "*natura*l" (29). Kurten furthermore induces Wehner's inner urges by saying that "*Lust has no ethics*. (1998: 29)" Wehner—in an attempt to understand Kurten—questions why Frau would want to marry a man who is this violent, and learns from Frau that her love was out of desperation, that her passion over time had died, and that people consequently embark on other quests. One day, Frau had discovered Kurtan in bed with another woman, thereupon which she acted as though nothing had happed and made the two coffee. For Frau in this case, love and sex are two mutually exclusive needs. Similar to what Neilson had tried to convey, Artaud too had discussed about sexuality being one type of need and basic urge, saying that "*the human body is an electric battery whose discharges have been castrated and repressed, whose capacities and emphases have been oriented toward sexual life*" (Alexander, 2012:168). Kurten at this point completely loses his sense of passion, and retreats back to his original state:

> Kurten Yes Back!...
>
> Now there's a man after my own heart!
>
> And what with the clouds on fire, it was as if Jack himself
>
> Was saying
>
> 'Peter!
>
> You are one of us now
>
> One of an elite
>
> Destined to take your place in the Chambers of Horrors
>
> And the nightmares of children for all time!
>
> ... I understood

My true nature

The Dusseldorf Ripper

is born (1998: 27-28)

Artaud claims that "*All our ideas about life must be revises in a period when nothing any longer adheres to life; it is this painful cleavage which is responsible for the revenge of things*" (1958:12). Even if people's lives gravitate towards different things, those like Kurten almost always rereat back to their original selves and exhibit their inner violence and evil. For instance, after Kurten gets married, he too supresses his inner monster for a period, but nevertheless waits for the right moment to show Frau the man behind the mask. After the passion within their marriage dissolves, the only thing keeping Kurten alive is his urge to take other people's lives. Neilson portrays Kurten as being a rather clever type of man who every woman is in fact married to. Even though in Kurner's eyes Wehner knows next to nothing about either life or love and thus appears innocent, he never the less manages to bring out his inner wolf. In Act 19 or "The Reign of Terror", Kurten describes both how he had repeatedly stabbed the heads and bodies of countless people, and then how he murdered 5 year-old Gertrude and 14 year-old Louise. However, Kurten, who at that point is holding the audience's attention in the palm of his hand, energizes the tempo with Wehner by "*laughing uproariously*" (1998:30), whereupon the two look around and play a game. Kurten has successfully managed to bring Wehner's inner violent streak out. Kurten then slaps Wehner to his senses, leaving him "*standing stunned, horrified*" (1998:30).

Wehner becomes stunned by his own inner state upon becoming aware of it. Kurten however gets a kick out of this, feels proud, and then turns and bursts out at the audience.

Kurten brings out Wehner's inner evil by telling him that Frau had never loved him and that she only slept with as a means of brownnosing so to speak, as well as by provoking him to kill her. Wehner repeatedly strikes Frau to death on stage with a hammer given to him by Kurten. Wehner then, upon staring at her corpse, feels "a mixture of horror and exhilaration", much in the same way that he had felt proud of Kurten's actions.

The jury delivers its verdict, declares Kurten to be "*normal*" (1998:38) on account of his cleverness and his degree of planning behind his murders, and thus asks for the death sentence. Even though Warner believes that no "normal" person possesses the capacity to carry out such atrocities, Kurten on the other hand bellows out the bitter truth both to both Wehner as well as to the audience.

Kurten I am not the only, Justus, nor will be the last.

Even as we speak they are being created, assembled; in the

Homes, in the prisons.

In the playgrounds.

And they are, all of them, normal men. (1998: 39).

There are two types of people according to Kurten. The first type include those like Wehner, who live by the rules but whose sense of inner evil and inner sexuality are oppressed at the same time. The second type are those like himself, who are well aware of man's natural inner cruelty, live and act against the grain of social norms, and act upon their savage but "normal" urges. On the one hand, Wehner and those like him function as well-behaved members of society by keeping their inner worlds under lock and key. On the other hand, Kurten grew up being exposed to evil. He and those like him, that this those who are "created", and who satisfy their urges as well as show no remorse for their actions are, as Kurten points out, everywhere.

Wehner, later mentions leaving this place of birth in order not to bring out the inner beast that he had discovered within himself following Kurten's execution, as well as mentions that he has married someone that he loves, that he shares two children with that person, and that he has left his career in law. Kurten's case has had a profound impact upon him, to which he states:

Wehner... I know that

come the day of judgement

we will all go before him

saints and sinners alike

I can only hope that he will judge us

Not as the monsters we have become

but as the children

we once were. (1998: 78)

Wehner becomes aware that the instinct for evil exists with all human beings from birth; he is also are that those like Kurten will be judged as "monsters" after they die. Thus, for this reason he wishes that they instead be judged when they are children—that is, before they lose their innocence.

Wehner throughout the play continuously writes unanswered letters to his family. We moreover see that the language of these letters gradually changes as Wehner gradually becomes aware of his own inner cruelty under Kurten's overarching influence. In his first letter, Wehner indicates that his

the fabulous court case that he was recently assigned with will be successful. However, even though he dubs the reason behind Kurten's savagery as being (due to) an "insufferable upbringing", he does not make mention of this a second time upon discovering his own inner beast. At the end of each of each of his letters, he mentions a girl named Eva that he had a crush on when he 11 years old, a girl that he had even kissed at one point. Moreover, he asks his family whether they were aware of Eva or not. In the second letter Wehner—who at that point has met the lovely Frau—mentions suffering from a lack of sleep, as well as reflects expresses his gradually changing thoughts. Wehner accepts that he inexperienced when it comes to love, and writes that his family is the reason behind why he is unable to see Frau, citing that they have "*called him back to his books*" (1998: 45). In the third letter, Wehner, who both mentions the murders as well as is now dancing with Kurten, rejects his family's rules and accuses them of using him, citing that he has never once been allowed to make any decision—including studying law—for himself whatsoever. Here, Neilson shows us once again that Kurten is in fact right—in the respect that Wehner's emotions, inner violence, and sense of social order have all been dictated and supressed by family and rules. In his final letter—that is after having a sexual relationship with, and then murdering Frau—Wehner writes:

> Wehner ...
>
> This is just to say that I won't be requiring you to write to me
>
> any more
>
> I have a new father now... (1998:72)

Wehner, upon learning of Eva's death, now no longer wants his family to reply to him, indicating that he does not expect of them to write him back. The reason behind this is that he now no longer is someone who knows nothing about world around him, just as he had confessed at the beginning of the play. Kurten had presented him with the chance to discover himself, as well as had ensured that he accept the inner-cruelty/darkness within all of humanity.

CONCLUSION

"*In-yer-face theatre is less a school of writing or a movement than series of networks, in which individuals such as Neilson, Ravenhill and Kane formed temporary milieus*" (Sierz, 2001:397). Nielson, as an In-Yer-Face playwright, uses obscene language as well as the theme of violence in each of plays in order to emotionally stir and awaken the subconscious of his audience. Moreover, just as Rachel Elfassy states, it is impossible not to see Antonin Artaud's influence when one explores In-Yer-Face theatre

more closely, given that Artaud too had "*tackled the subject of violence, and critiqued men's stupidity and modern life*" (Bitoun, 2014). Artaud states that theatre "*assembles the true spectacle of life*" (1958:12). He claims that *"[w]ithout an element of cruelty at the root of every spectacle, the theatre is not possible. In our present state of degeneration it is through the skin that metaphysics must be made*" (1958: 99). To him, theatre reflects life, and violence is a suppressed reality that is present in all human beings. Neilson thinks along the same lines as Artaud. Seirz is of the view that "*his (Neilson's) work is haunted by recurring images of sex and violence*" (2001:140)". Neilson's approach to language as well as to violence is very similar to that of Artaud. Both writers view sexuality as a fundamental human need. In Artaud's eyes, "*consciousness in us is linked to sexual desire and to hunger*" (1982: 72)". In Neilson's play, Kurten is a character with no limits whatsoever when it comes to sexuality and who attempts to have Wehner view sex in much the same way. Neilson in this context, like Artaud, treats sexuality in is play as a basic urge that "*has many faces, and expresses many different emotions*" (2001:139).

When it comes to language, Neilson feels that "*it really has to have very direct, very basic force*" (2001:108). What too had set Artaud apart of from other playwrights of his day was—in parallel with In-Yer-Face theatre—his use of counter-taboo obscene language in his plays. In addition, Nielson—like Artaud—defends that the language used be both direct as well as delivered in the form of monologue; Artaud's works however are not just composed of monologues alone. Artaud was of the opinion that theatre is not theatre without "*dance, song, [and] pantomime*"; that this, theatrical effects "*restore(s) the theater to its original destiny and presents as a combination of all these elements fused together in a perspective of hallucination and fear*" (1958: 54). Neilson uses lighting, alongside music, dance, and slapstick in order to make the theme of violence all the more compelling. For example, in the second act of *Normal*, one sees swan with its wings wide open on stage, alongside "*a pair of ludicrously oversized scissors*" in Kurten's hand. Nielson keeps the swan on stage throughout the play. Moreover, Kurten kills the swan with this scissors before he is executed. From the first act onwards, Nielson manages to successfully grab his audience's attention through these gruesome acts, and in essence plants bombs into their subconscious. Furthermore, his use of lighting plays an important role in *Normal*. In the first act for instance, his focusing of lighting upon just the audience successfully creates a psychologically disturbing atmosphere. He then suddenly switches to using red lighting at the moment of Kurten's execution, which in turn agitates the audience even further. Finally, both Neilson and Artaud's appear to resemble one another tremendously in terms of their use of language, their understanding of both violence and lust, as well as their aiming to haunt their audiences by breaking down the wall-like barrier between the them and the stage.

REFERENCES

Alexander, A. & Roberts, M. S. (ed.) 2012, High Culture: Reflections on Addiction and Modernity. SUNY Press, Albany.

Artaud, A. (1958). *The Theatre and its Double*, trans. Mary C. Richards, New York: Grove Press.

Artaud, A. (1965). *Antonin Artaud Anthology*, ed. Jack Hirschman, San Francisco: City Lights Books.

Artaud, A. (1973). *Selected Writings*, ed. Susan Sontag, California: University of California Press.

Artaud, A. (1982). *Antonin Artaud: four texts*. Panjandrum.

Bitoun, R.E.(2014). "In-Yer-Face Theatre: A Contemporary Form of Drama", *The Artifice*

https://the-artifice.com/in-yer-face-theatre-a-contemporary-form-of-drama/

Brook, P. (1996). *The Empty Space: A book about the theatre: Deadly, holy, rough, immediate*. Simon and Schuster press.

Derrida, J. (1978). "The theater of cruelty and the closure of representation". *Theater, 9(3), 6-19*.

Middeke, M. (2011). *The Methuen Drama Guide to Contemporary British Playwrights*, London: Methuen.

Neilson, A. (1998). *Plays:1 , Normal, Penetrator, Year of the family, The Censor*. Bloomsbury Methuan Drama.

Reid, T. (2017). *The Theatre of Anthony Neilson*. Bloomsbury Publishing.

Sierz, A. (2001). *In-Yer-Face Theatre: British Drama Today*. Faber and Faber, London.

Sierz, A. (2006). *The Theatre of Martin Crimp*, Methuan, London

Sierz, A. (2012). *Modern British Writing the 1990s*. Bloomsbury Publishing

Sontag, S. (1988). *Antonin Artaud: Selected Writings*. University of California Press.

BURMA(MYANMAR) AND GEORGE ORWELL

Mehmet Ertuğ YAVUZ[1]

ABSTRACT

Born as Eric Arthur Blair, George Orwell created some of the sharpest satirical fictions of the 20th Century with such works as: Animal Farm and Nineteen Eighty-Four. He was a man of strong opinions, ideas who addressed some of the major political movements of his times, including imperialism, fascism and communism. Orwell's experiences – both as figure of authority and as poverty – had given him was a lived understanding of the human conditions. It was this grounding in reality that had a more profound political instinct than would be available to some zenith.

George Orwell's works bear a political tone. Burmese Days is not only a narrative of Burma's historical past, but a sociological document in which the cultural and social specificities of the country feature prominently. His works also defines the approach of British colonialism at Burma. His escape into the jungle and his choice of this place as a setting for his play support his desire to reach His own secret and sacred original World. My study will trace the markers of the secret and sacred original World and the sublimity of His own mind through His use of landscapes and His criticism of the imperialist politics.

Keywords: George Orwell, Politics, Secret and Sacred World, Sublimity

INTRODUCTION

Born as Eric Arthur Blair, George Orwell created some of the sharpest satirical fiction of the 20th Century with such works as *Animal Farm* and *Nineteen Eighty-Four*. He was a man of strong opinions, ideas who addressed some of the major political movements of his times, including imperialism, fascism and communism.

Selected Works of George Orwell:

- **DOWN AND OUT IN PARIS AND LONDON**, 1933 –
- **BURMESE DAYS**, 1934
- **CLERGYMAN'S DAUGHTER**, 1935
- **KEEP THE ASPIDISTRA FLYING**, 1936 - - film A Merry War / Comstock and Rosemary (1997), by Robert Bierman, screenplay by Alan Plater, starring Helena Bonham Carter, Richard E. Grant, Jim Carter, Harriet Walter

1 Bozok University, Yozgat Turkey

- **THE ROAD TO WIGAN PIER**, 1937 –
- **HOMAGE TO CATALONIA**, 1938 - Katalonia, Taisto Nieminen, 1974
- **COMING UP FOR AIR**, 1939
- **ANIMAL FARM**, 1945 - film adaptations: animated movie 1954, prod. Halas and Batchelor Cartoon Films, by Joy Batchelor & John Halas; TV film 1999, by John Stephensen, starring Kelsey Grammer and Julia Ormond;
- **NINETEEN EIGHTY-FOUR**, 1949 - Vuonna 1984 - film adaptations: 1956, by Michael Anderson, starring Edmund O'Brien, Michael Redgrave, Jan Sterling, David Kossoff; Nineteen Eighty-Four, by Michael Radford, starring John Hurt, Richard Burton, Suzanna Hamilton, Cyril Cusack; 1984, by Michael Radford, featuring John Hurt, Richard Burton, Suzanna Hamilton, Cyril Cusack, Gregor Fisher, James Walker; Brazil, 1985,by Terry Gillam, featuring Jonathan Pryce, Kim Greist, Robert De Niro, Katherine Helmond, Bob Hoskins

The son of a British civil servant, George Orwell spent his first days in India-in the EAST, where his father was stationed. His mother brought him and his older sister, Marjorie, to England about a year after his birth and settled in Henley-on-Thames. His father stayed behind in India and rarely visited. (His younger sister, Avril, was born in 1908.) Orwell did not really know his father until he retired from the service in 1912. And even after that, the pair never formed a strong bond. He found his father to be too dull and very conservative.

According to one biography, Orwell's first word was "beastly." He was a sick child, often battling bronchitis and the flu. Orwell was bit by the writing bug at an early age, reportedly composing his first poem around the age of four. He later wrote, "I had the lonely child's habit of making up stories and holding conversations with imaginary persons, and I think from the very start my literary ambitions were mixed up with the feeling of being isolated and undervalued." One of his first literary successes came at the age of 11 when he had a poem published in the local newspaper.

Like many other boys in England, Orwell was sent to boarding school. In 1911 he went to St. Cyprian's in the coastal town of Eastbourne, where he got his first taste of England's class system. On a partial scholarship, Orwell noticed that the school treated the richer students better than the poorer ones. He was not popular with his peers, and in books he found comfort from his difficult situation. He read works by Rudyard Kipling and

H. G. Wells, among others. What he lacked in personality, he made up for in smarts. Orwell won scholarships to Wellington College and Eton College to continue his studies.

After completing his schooling at Eton, Orwell found himself at a dead end. His family did not have the money to pay for a university education. Instead he joined the India Imperial Police Force in 1922. After five years in Burma, Orwell resigned his post and returned to England. He was intent on making it as a writer.

The British Empire comprised the dominions, colonies, protectorates, mandates, and other territories ruled or administered by the United Kingdom, that had originated with the overseas colonies and trading posts established by England in the late 16th and early 17th centuries. At its height it was the largest empire in history and, for over a century, was the foremost global power. By 1922, the British Empire held sway over a population of about 458 million people, one-quarter of the world's population at the time, and covered more than 13.000.000 square miles (33.670.000 km2): approximately a quarter of the Earth's total land area. As a result, its political, linguistic and cultural legacy is widespread. At the peak of its power, it was often said that "the sun never sets on the British Empire" because its span across the globe ensured that the sun was always shining on at least one of its numerous territories.

After leaving the India Imperial Force, Orwell struggled to get his writing career off the ground. His first major work, Down and Out in Paris and London, (1933) explored his time eking out a living in these two cities. Orwell took all sorts of jobs to make ends meet, including being a dishwasher. The book provided a brutal look at the lives of the working poor and of those living a transient existence. Not wishing to embarrass his family, the author published the book under the pseudonym George Orwell.

Sometimes called the conscience of a generation, Orwell next explored his overseas experiences in Burmese Days, published in 1934. The novel offered a dark look at British colonialism in Burma, then part of the country's Indian empire. Orwell's interest in political matters grew rapidly after this novel was published. Also around this time, he met Eileen O'Shaughnessy. The pair married in June 1936, and Eileen supported and assisted Orwell in his career.

> How can you make out that we are in this country
> for any purpose except to steal? It's so simple.
> The official holds the Burman down
> while the businessman goes through his pockets...

The British Empire comprised the dominions, colonies, protectorates, mandates, and other territories ruled or administered by the United Kingdom, that had originated with the overseas colonies and trading posts

established by England in the late 16th and early 17th centuries. At its height it was the largest empire in history and, for over a century, was the foremost global power. By 1922, the British Empire held sway over a population of about 458 million people, one-quarter of the world's population at the time, and covered more than 13.000.000 square miles (33.670.000 km2): approximately a quarter of the Earth's total land area. As a result, its political, linguistic and cultural legacy is widespread. At the peak of its power, it was often said that "the sun never sets on the British Empire" because its span across the globe ensured that the sun was always shining on at least one of its numerous territories.

Following the recent troubles in India, we have asked our contributor, Mr E. A. Blair, whose investigations on 'The Plight of the British Worker' have already appeared in these pages, to tell us something of the unrest which has been fermenting in the sub-continent for some years, and which is threatening to spread to English Indo-China.

Mr E. A. Blair, who lived in Burma for some years, has written the following interesting article for us[1], which shows the methods the British Empire uses to milk dry her Asian colonies:

"Burma lies between India and China. Ethnologically it belongs to Indo-China.

It is three times the size of England and Wales, with a population of about fourteen million, of whom roughly nine million are Burmese.

The rest is made up of countless Mongol tribes who have emigrated at various periods from the steppes of Central Asia, and Indians who have arrived since the English occupation.

The Burmese are Buddhists; the tribesmen worship various pagan gods.

To be able to talk in their own language to the people of such diverse origins living in Burma, you would need to know a hundred and twenty different languages and dialects.

This country, the population of which is one-tenth as dense as that of England, is one of the richest in the world. It abounds in natural resources which are only just beginning to be exploited.

There are tin, tungsten, jade and rubies, and these are the least of its mineral materials.

At this moment it produces five per cent of the world's petroleum, and its reserves are far from exhausted.

But the greatest source of wealth-and that which feeds between eighty and ninety per cent of the population-is the paddy fields.

Rice is grown everywhere in the basin of the Irawaddy, which flows through Burma from north to south.

In the south, in the huge delta where the Irawaddy brings down tons of alluvial mud every year, the soil is immensely fertile.

The harvests, which are remarkable in both quality and quantity, enable Burma to export rice to India, Europe, even to America.

Moreover, variations in temperature are less frequent and sharp than in India.

Thanks to abundant rainfall, especially in the south, drought is unknown, and the heat is never excessive. The climate as a whole can thus be considered one of the healthiest to be found in the tropics.

If we add that the Burmese countryside is exceptionally beautiful, with broad rivers, high mountains, eternally green forests, brightly coloured flowers, exotic fruits, the phrase 'earthly paradise' naturally springs to mind.

So it is hardly surprising that the English tried for a long time to gain possession of it.

In 1820 they seized a vast expanse of territory. This operation was repeated in 1852, and finally in 1882 the Union Jack flew over almost all the country. Certain mountainous districts in the north, inhabited by small savage tribes, had until recently escaped the clutches of the British, but it is more and more likely that they will meet the same fate as the rest of the country, thanks to the process euphemistically known as 'peaceful penetration', which means, in plain English, 'peaceful annexation'.

In this article I do not seek to praise or blame this manifestation of British imperialism; let us simply note it is a logical result of any imperialist policy.

It will be much more profitable to examine the good and bad sides of British administration in Burma from an economic and a political standpoint."

In December 1936, Orwell traveled to Spain, where he joined one of the groups fighting against General Francisco Franco in the Spanish Civil War. Orwell was badly injured during his time with a militia, getting shot in the throat and arm. For several weeks, he was unable to speak. Orwell and his wife, Eileen, were indicted on treason charges in Spain. Fortunately, the charges were brought after the couple had left the country.

Other health problems plagued the talented writer not long after his return to England. For years, Orwell had periods of sickness, and he was officially diagnosed with tuberculosis in 1938. He spent several months at the Preston Hall Sanatorium trying to recover, but he would continue to battle with tuberculosis for the rest of his life. At the time he was initially diagnosed, there was no effective treatment for the disease.

To support himself, Orwell took on various writing assignments. He wrote numerous essays and reviews over the years, developing a reputation for producing well-crafted literary criticism. In 1941, Orwell landed a job with the BBC as a producer. He developed news commentary and shows for audiences in the eastern part of the British Empire. Orwell drew such literary greats as T. S. Eliot and E. M. Forster to appear on his programs. With World War II raging on, Orwell found himself acting as a propagandist to advance the country's national interest. He loathed this part of his job, describing the company's atmosphere in his diary as "something halfway between a girls' school and a lunatic asylum, and all we are doing at present is useless, or slightly worse than useless.' Orwell resigned in 1943 saying "I was wasting my own time and the public money on doing work that produces no result. I believe that in the present political situation the broadcasting of British propaganda to India is an almost hopeless task." Around this time, Orwell became the literary editor for a socialist newspaper.

> It is a stifling, stultifying world in which to live.
> It is a world in which every word and every thought is censored....
> Free speech is unthinkable. All other kinds of freedom are permitted.
> You are free to be a drunkard, an idler, a coward, a backbiter, a fornicator;
> but you are not free to think for yourself.
> Your opinion on every subject of any conceivable importance is dictated for you by the pukka sahibs' code.

> The country, popularly known in English as Burma, and officially named Myanmar, has undergone changes in both its official and popular names worldwide. The choice of names stems from the existence of two different names for the country in Burmese, which are used in different contexts. The official English name was changed from "the Union of Burma" to "the Union of Myanmar" in 1989 by the country's military government, and since then has been the subject of controversy and mixed incidences of adoption.

U Po Kyin, an extremely powerful magistrate in Kyauktada, Upper Burma, plots and schemes to take down Dr. Veraswami, an upstanding Burmese who affronts U Po Kyin through his rectitude and geniality.

Flory, a timber merchant, has been in Burma for several years now. He meets with the handful of other Europeans in the Club, where they complain about their roles as administrators and businessmen in the quickly fading Empire. Flory does not care much for the British Empire and befriends Dr. Veraswami, discoursing about the negative effects the English have on the Burmese. The doctor defends the English, though, and believes his own countrymen to be less civilized.

Flory is remarkably lonely, and loathes himself for his ugly birthmark on one cheek. He has a Burmese mistress, Ma Hla May, but he feels nothing for her. He also laments his lack of courage in terms of nominating Dr. Veraswami to the Club after it is ordered that it be opened to a native member. Another member, Ellis, viciously hates the natives, and the other men –Mr. Lackersteen, Maxwell, Mr. Macgregor, and Westfield –are mostly indifferent but not particularly disposed toward the natives.

Flory's life changes when Mr. and Mrs. Lackersteen's niece Elizabeth arrives in the colony. She has come to live with them after her mother dies. Elizabeth hates the natives and all things that indicate a highbrow or artistic disposition. She craves only a life of ease and wealth, and hopes to marry a European she meets in Burma.

Flory and Elizabeth initially hit it off, but she becomes annoyed by the way he defends the natives and tries to praise their culture and mores. When Flory acts in a more masculine and authoritative way, as when they go on a hunting trip, she finds him more desirable and thinks she could possibly marry him. Flory discards Ma Hla May and falls deeply in love with Elizabeth. He does not notice when she becomes irritated when he talks about the natives, and can think of nothing he desires more than to marry her.

Meanwhile, U Po Kyin has kept up his crusade of rumors about the doctor, and targets Flory because he is the doctor's friend. U Po Kyin sends Ma Hla May to Flory's house to embarrass him and shriek for more money because he ruined and abandoned her.

Flory plans to ask Elizabeth to marry him after the hunting trip, but an earthquake occurs and he thinks it would be better to wait a little bit while the shock and excitement wear off.

A young man named Verrall arrives to spend a month with the Military Police. Handsome, cold, and arrogant, Verrall is uninterested in the social life of Kyauktada and manages to offend the other Europeans with his sneering behavior. Flory feels inferior to him, especially when he falls off his horse trying to be equally dashing. Elizabeth sees him fall and is disgusted by his perceived ineptitude. She ignores Flory, throwing him into despair and causing him to depart for the timber farm.

While Flory is away Elizabeth successfully ensnares Verrall and the two begin a romance, although Verrall offers no promises for the future. When Flory returns he is startled at this new development and is filled with intense envy and depression.

U Po Kyin announces his ultimate goal to his wife and co-conspirators, which is to become the first native member of the European Club. He will attain this by secretly instigating a rebellion and then putting it down. He

carries this off successfully and is seen as a hero. However, a real rebellion brews and eventually breaks out without him knowing in advance.

One evening two thousand angry Burmese surround the Club. They demand Ellis in particular for a cruel act he committed, but everyone is in danger. Flory devises an idea to save them, and executes it perfectly. The rebellion ends and Flory, aided by Dr. Veraswami, is a hero. U Po Kyin also tries to get credit but is largely ignored. He is irate and begins to devise a new plan to ruin Flory.

Verrall departs the colony without even a goodbye to Elizabeth, and she decides she should marry Flory. The Christians in the colony gather for church and Flory is blissfully happy as he thinks about his new life with Elizabeth. Suddenly there is a screaming, and Ma Hla May begins to savagely cry and scream about how Flory ruined her. Orchestrated by U Po Kyin of course, the scene is distasteful, and Elizabeth notices Flory's dark birthmark as he flushes with shame. She is utterly repulsed by it, and when Flory tries to apologize, Elizabeth will have none of it; she departs in a cold fury and Flory feels the weight of the crushing disappointment. He decides to kill himself because there is no way he can go back to his old life. He shoots himself and dies.

No one is too surprised about Flory. A funeral is held. Dr. Veraswami is no longer held in esteem, and is transferred to another hospital. U Po Kyin enters the Club as the first native member but dies before he can start to carry out good works; it is feared he will languish in hell or return to earth as a lesser creature due to his sins. Elizabeth ends up marrying Mr. Macgregor and becomes a perfect *burra memsahib*.+

Approximately 2% of Burmese people are Hindu. Burmese Hindus are a mix of Bengalis, Tamils, Telegus, and Uttar Pradeshis who arrived in Burma under British colonialism. With the military coup of 1962, about 1 million Indians were forced out of Burma, but some remained, mostly in Yangon (Rangoon), Mandalay, and in the Bago District. As India is a close neighbor, Hinduism has had a regional influence for centuries and Hindu gods are sometimes included among the nats, or spirits, worshiped by some Burmese Buddhists. Due to historical ties between Hinduism and Buddhism, Hindus have faced far less discrimination than Muslim Indians such as the Rohingya.

In this age of ascending feminism and focus on equality and human rights, it is difficult to assimilate the Hindu practice of sati, the burning to death of a widow on her husband's funeral pyre, into our modern world. Indeed, the practice is outlawed and illegal in today's India, yet it occurs up to the present day and is still regarded by some Hindus as the ultimate form of womanly devotion and sacrifice.

Sati (also called suttee) is the practice among some Hindu communities by which a recently widowed woman either voluntarily or by use of force or coercion commits suicide as a result of her husband's death. The best known form of sati is when a woman burns to death on her husband's funeral pyre. However other forms of sati exist, including being buried alive with the husband's corpse and drowning.

The term Sati is derived from the original name of the goddess Sati, also known as Dakshayani, who self-immolated because she was unable to bear her father Daksha's humiliation of her (living) husband Shiva. Sati as practice is first mentioned in 510 CCE, when a stele commemorating such an incident was erected at Eran, an ancient city in the modern state of Madhya Pradesh. The custom began to grow in popularity as evidenced by the number of stones placed to commemorate satis, particularly in southern India and amongst the higher castes of Indian society, despite the fact that the Brahmins originally condemned the practice (Auboyer 2002). Over the centuries the custom died out in the south only to become prevalent in the north, particularly in the states of Rajasthan and Bengal. While comprehensive data are lacking across India and through the ages, the British East India Company recorded that the total figure of known occurrences for the period 1813 - 1828 was 8,135; another source gives the number of 7,941 from 1815 - 1828, an average of 618 documented incidents per year. However, these numbers are likely to grossly underestimate the real number of satis as in 1823, 575 women performed sati in the state of Bengal alone (Hardgrave 1998).

Historically, the practice of sati was to be found among many castes and at every social level, chosen by or for both uneducated and the highest ranking women of the times. The common deciding factor was often ownership of wealth or property, since all possessions of the widow devolved to the husband's family upon her death. In a country that shunned widows, sati was considered the highest expression of wifely devotion to a dead husband (Allen & Dwivedi 1998, Moore 2004). It was deemed an act of peerless piety and was said to purge her of all her sins, release her from the cycle of birth and rebirth and ensure salvation for her dead husband and the seven generations that followed her (Moore 2004). Because its proponents lauded it as the required conduct of righteous women, it was not considered to be suicide, otherwise banned or discouraged by Hindu scripture. Sati also carried romantic associations which some were at apparent pains to amplify. Stein (1978) states "The widow on her way to the pyre was the object (for once) of all public attention... Endowed with the gift of prophecy and the power to cure and bless, she was immolated amid great fanfare, with great veneration". Only if she was virtuous and pious would she be worthy of being sacrificed; consequently being burned or

being seen as a failed wife were often her only choices (Stein 1978). Indeed, the very reference to the widow from the point at which she decided to become a "Sati" (Chaste One) removed any further personal reference to her as an individual and elevated her to a remote and untouchable context. It is little wonder that women growing up in a culture in which they were so little valued as individuals considered it the only way for a good wife to behave. The alternative, anyway, was not appealing. After the death of a husband an Hindi widow was expected to live the life of an aesthetic, renouncing all social activities, shaving her head, eating only boiled rice and sleeping on thin coarse matting (Moore 2004). To many, death may have been preferable, especially for those who were still girls themselves when their husband's died.

Finally, what Orwell's experiences – both as figure of authority and as poverty – had given him was a lived understanding of the human condition. It was this grounding in reality that had a more profound political instinct than would be available to some zenith. He had acquired a capacity to empathise with the foot-soldiers of history, the put-upon people generally taken for granted, ignored or squashed by the great isms of one sort or another. It conferred upon him the remarkable ability to achieve what every journalist and essayist seeks.

REFERENCES

+NOTE: [1] Raoul Nicole wrote on 22 March 1929, while Orwell was still in the Hôpital Cochin, to say he was sorry Orwell was ill and thanking him for his article on Burma. This would, he said, be included in an early issue of *Le Progrès Civique*, and, indeed, would have appeared already were it not that the journal had been embarrassed by a large number of articles on foreign affairs. Orwell was paid 225 francs for the article on 11 June. This was the last article he is known to have had published in Paris. Published by *Le Progrès Civique*, 4 May 1929. *CW* 86. Translated into English by Janet Percival and Ian Willison

Biography.com Editors. "George Orwell Biography," The Biography.com website Available at: http://www.biography.com/people/george-orwell-9429833

Hutter, M. 2008. "Hindus in Southeast and East Asia," *Encyclopedia of Hinduism,* Eds. Denise Cush, Catherine Robinson and Michael York New York: Routledge, pp. 813-821.

Kearney, Richard. 2010. *Through a Glass Darkly: Suffering, the Sacred, and the Sublime in Literature and Theory.* Ed. Holly Faith Nelson, Lynn R. Szabo, and Jens Zimmermann. Waterloo, ON: Wilfrid Laurier UP.

Manfred Hutter, 2008. "Hindus in Southeast and East Asia," Encyclopedia of Hinduism,

Eds. Denise Cush, Catherine Robinson and Michael York (New York: Routledge,), pp. 813-821.

Nicole, R. 1929. "How A Nation is Exploited-The British Empire in Burma" in *Le Progrès Civique*.Available at:http://www.theorwellprize.co.uk/the- orwellprize/orwell/essays-and-other-works/how-a-nation-is-exploited-the- british-empire-in-burma/

Orwell, George.1984.*Shooting an Elephant.* New York: Harcourt, Brace.

---.1989. *Burmese Days*. London: Penguin.

---. 2000.*Animal Farm*. Harlow: Longman.

Thiemann, Ronald F. 2014. *The Humble Sublime: Secularity and the Politics of Belief. I.B.Tauris: London,*

Notes on athe Author: Mehmet Ertuğ Yavuz obtained his BA from Cumhuriyet University Department of English Language and Literature. He completed his MA in 2003 and He received his PhD at Atatürk University after completing his thesis on *George Orwell and Burmese days in Postcolonialist Discourse* from the Institute of Social Sciences, Atatürk University, in 2010. He is currently an Assistant Professor in Bozok University and supervises courses of English Language and Literaturel.

Public Relations Studies

LEADERSHIP AND PROCESS MANAGEMENT IN CRISIS COMMUNICATION

Hasan ÇİFTÇİ[1]

ABSTRACT

The continuous and rapid occurrence of the technological developments and changes affects public and private sector in many ways. Organizations should be prepared and cautious about all possible economic and technological changes that have been experienced and may be experienced in the future. Organizations, however, can face crises arising from intra-organizational and non-organizational influences. A strategic crisis planning management is required to eliminate these crises. In crisis management, which is an area of expertise of public relations, it is necessary to communicate effectively with all stakeholders (internal and external). In this effective communication to be established, the existences, attitudes, behaviours, empathy of the leaders are of crucial importance in getting rid of the crisis. Crisis periods can be turned into opportunities through crisis plans, crisis management teams, communication studies and correct determinations of the factors constituting the crisis. In addition, the way of using the crisis processes (proactive, reactive) determines the organization's presence within the market.

Keywords: Crisis, Crisis Management, Leadership, Public Relations, Organizational Communication

INTRODUCTION

With the new production century, the supply and demand balance has shifted its subject when compared to the previous years. Today, technology adds value to speed and relations. For organizations, the elements of time and competition have been becoming a priority. Along with the growth of the social and economic system, there may occasionally be lack of harmony between elements in the system. Lack of harmony and conflict situations between the elements that make up the system are called the crisis in business life.

The rapid growth and expansion of the mass media, especially the Internet in recent years, and its being able to reach the vast majority of the world's population, it is possible that the events or crises happening elsewhere in the world can reach all of the people very quickly. For this reason, in any event, or crisis, it is important that the managers transmit everything correctly and quickly to the target group before the news

1 Assistant Professor, Harran University hasanciftci@harran.edu.tr

being heard from other sources. Organizations should primarily foresee unexpected events that will threaten them most. Organizations should try to prepare various plans and take precautions according to possible positive and negative consequences when they identify the elements that threaten them. Communicating effectively during times of difficulty can provide great opportunities for the organization both from the financial side and the labour force and time points of views. The effects of the crisis exposed in an unprepared manner are the worst of all possible conditions. However, it can be considered that training expenses in the preparatory activities (proactive) during the pre-crisis period to assist the organization and time to be spared are extremely small. Opportunities in the crisis, as well as the threats, should be considered. Thus, the crisis manager has the higher possibility of assessing and comparing information (Okay & Okay, 2014: 3 81). At this stage, the most needed elements are accurate public relations studies, strategic management, transparency, agility, good relationships and effective leaders. Crisis leaders can cooperate, collecting all stakeholders around the same goal, in order to turn the crisis into an opportunity. This can contribute to the continued existence of the organization and the success of the organization. At the same time, leaders can save their organization from being disturbed and add prestige and advantage to the organizations.

The Effects Of The Crisis On The Organization

Organizations that are formed by a group of people or institutions who have come together to do a common business or to fulfil a purpose have constantly and rapidly been changing with the influence of their environment. This change can cause organizations to face events, threats and opportunities that affect the routine course of the organization, which are unexpected and known as the crises (Canöz & Özdoğan, 2015: 37). Crises are the phenomena that do not have a certain time, and which can disturb the existence and reputation of the organization, but which are also could be turned into opportunities at the same time, require effective communication, require quick and accurate decision making and taking action, and contain all possible conditions.

The key features of the crisis are: threatening the institution's objectives and existence, making the institution's measures and forecasting mechanisms inadequate, and requiring urgent intervention. At the same time, it has become increasingly important by creating time pressure, bringing about unexpected and sudden changes, creating tension in decision-makers, causing fear and panic, being in control, becoming a vital turning point, threatening the institution's image, human resources, financial structure or natural resources (Özdemir, 1994: 17-18). Crises include elements that threaten organizational existence and profitability. However, crises

can damage the organization as well. Reputation does not only belong to the organization. Reputation is also related to the stakeholders, partners, customers, investors, employees and the society at the same time.

Otherwise, the reputation, positive image and even the existence of the organization, which are achieved as the result of years of successful activities and services, may disappear in a crisis at once (Okay& Okay, 2014: 380).

The Factors Constituting the Crisis

Organizations operating in society are affected by each other because they are the parts of an overall system. When there is lack of harmony and conflicts between various systems and subsystems, certain unusual conditions and situations arise. We can distinguish the factors that cause crises, in general, as internal factors and environmental factors. Among the internal factors are the inability of the top managers, the life status of the organization, and various problems that may arise within this establishment. Environmental factors are the changes in natural conditions and social, economic, cultural, technological, legal and political factors (Tüz, 1996: 6).

Some of the reasons for the crises can be listed as: product mistakes, deterioration in production machines, sabotage, product imitation, unfortunate interviews, handing over the company, lie, libel, boycotts, erroneous communication, internal and external economic fluctuations, industrial accidents, legal regulations, natural disasters, and the changes that take place in the perceptions of the public. Each crisis has its own signs and solutions. The solution to a crisis can lead to an inexcusable situation in another crisis. So, taking the right steps before and after the crisis is crucial.

Crisis Management

Crisis management is conscious and programmatic public relations activities done in an unexpected situation that is likely to cause adverse consequences, in a wider context, in the event of a crisis, to prevent damage to the organization and its reputation and to communicate with the target groups. Crisis times are when leaders are most needed. The managerial powers of the leaders at the time of the crisis keep the organization together, causing the false perceptions created by the crisis to be broken down and ensure the crisis to be overcome as soon as possible. In terms of organizational effectiveness, it is essential that managers, in other words, leaders, have crisis management skills. Leaders should first determine the structure and dimensions of the crisis. The right questions and answers play an important role in determining the crisis. First, the internal and external factors that make up the crisis should be identified. Managing the crisis is crucial, vital, difficult and even complicated. Therefore, crises should not be

expected to be solved immediately. At this stage, it is necessary to establish a crisis team and this team should consist of experts. A correct and effective crisis plan should be established and should be applied in cooperation with the lower and upper stakeholders. The reputation should always be taken into consideration. However, a public relations team should play an active role in the crisis and public relations efforts should be carried out. Crisis management is a matter of continuity and the prize for success in crisis management is the continuity. A crisis management team, which is able to successfully manage the crisis, can strengthen the self-confidence and morale of the managers. Executives who have been able to successfully overcome crises will begin a new turn in their careers as well as they strengthen their positions.

Public Relations in Crisis Management

In the successful management of the crisis, communication with the employees, customers, suppliers, investors, and with all the people who are directly or indirectly related media and organization, who are described as organizational stakeholders, and the public-relations activities to be carried out are of great importance. Properly informing, resting and evaluating the opinions of the organizational stakeholders through the public relations efforts to be carried out will reduce the negativities created by the crisis situation. In addition, this situation makes it possible for the organization to benefit from the crisis with more constructive steps to form an attitude towards the organization (Canöz & Özdoğan, 2015: 37). The necessity of accepting the existence of the crisis and therefore the fact that every organization can experience a crisis must be considered. By producing information, time must be turned to a direction that is in favour of the organization. Whether or not this information is produced by the public relations unit is important, and it is important to share it with senior decision makers and relevant persons.

The crisis is one of the areas of expertise for the field of public relations. Although the concept of crisis management was not well known until 1980's, many of the disasters that were faced directed the institutions such as Chernobyl, Bhopal, Shuttle, Zeebrugge, Sellafield, King's Cross, Piper, Alpha, Lockerbie and Exxon Valdez to crisis management issue and has also led the public relations companies to the adoption of the concept of crisis management (Okay and Okay, 2014: 380). The contribution of public relations in crisis planning is to help organizations and the managers think about what could go wrong. Public Relations is an application that attempts to prevent important relations and to forecast various issues and trends. As an element of crisis planning, the monitoring efforts and all official and non-official contacts of public relations are for information purposes.

Public relations activities can be in the form of helping to re-establish the organization's reputation and relationships that have been damaged during the crisis, and to take action in this regard.

The Role and The Characteristics Of The Leader In Crisis Management

Leadership is an important management tool for businesses. There are many definitions of the leadership. However, with the shortest definition, leadership is the force to influence people. In a more general sense, leadership is the ability to create environments that can lead people to do their jobs better, motivate them and make it easier for them to reach their goals. Human resources and organizational goals are two important elements to achieve organizational goals. Today, what we call the information age, as the leadership became a focal point to the social-human sciences and as there are technological developments and progress, it is also closely related to the social, economic and political developments. In the process of industrialization, increasing production, distribution and diversified consumption, integration in social and political life, and the superiority gained by having knowledge with the birth of the information sector in recent years have made leadership even more important for management and organization (Yatkın, 2007: 126-126). In the 21st century, leadership has become more difficult, because, the globalization has been accelerating the challenges facing the leader. Because of the intense influence of the media, in a crisis, the leader faces the people at the national and international level and the slightest mistake arouses great repercussions. Today, Donald J. Trump has to respond to the questions in his mind and make a decision within a few days, while Roosevelt and Churchill had a long time to think before they enter the war, away from the media and from the public (Tuğcu, 2004: 21).

Resolving the crisis requires leaders who are flexible and creative, and who are objective, courageous, embracing group work, ready to act at all times, ready for innovations, and ready for any unexpected demands and conditions. Managing crises requires managerial experience and skills. Managers should also add time to value people, listen to them, deal with their problems and expectations, and at the same time be able to provide solutions to problems, at the same time. The leader should have an impressive broad-mindedness. Broad vision is made up of a common goal that can be achieved in the future but cannot be achieved easily.

CONCLUSION

Crises are events that occur at unexpected times and affect institutions negatively. Crises, when they emerge, can harm institutions and even destroy them. But the proactive period before the emergence of crises, that is the pre-crisis period, is quite crucial. Institutions can foresee the future and take precautions in this proactive period before the disasters are experienced. However, if the reactive period, which is the period after the crisis, can be managed well, the negative effects of the crisis can be minimized. Preference is not showing the reaction after the crisis emerges, but the precautions should be taken before the crisis occurs, by considering the possibilities as a whole. Foresight before the crisis and finding effective remedies after the crisis is the task of the public relations department to be established within the organization. This department can only be created by visionary managers and leaders. A good manager should be able to act with the conditions required by the time, not with traditional methods, and be able to adapt both institution and self to the changes in technology and market. Organizations that are not properly managed during the crisis can suffer great losses from the crisis. However, management within a strategic plan can cause the institution to suffer little damage, while at the same time they can also turn the feared crises in catastrophic appearance into opportunities. With the level of relationship that the ideal leader has developed within and outside the institution, the organization can ensure that when it is exposed to the crisis, the communication it has established will encourage people to sympathize with their institutions and not to immediately judge and leave the institution.

RESOURCES

Canöz, K., & Öndoğan, A. (2015). The Role of Transformational Leader in Crisis Management. Gümüşhane University Communication Faculty Electronic Journal, 3 (1), 36-61.

Okay A. and Okay A. (2014) Public Relations Concepts and Practices, İstanbul: DER Publications.

Tuğcu, Ş. T. (2004). Importance Of The Leadership Concept In Crisis Management. Selçuk University Communication Faculty Academic Journal, 3 (2), 16-22.

Tüz, M. (1996) Business Management in Crisis Period, Bursa: Ekin Publishing

Yatkin, A. (2007). Leadership in total quality management: Quality in leadership. Business, Power, Industry Relations and Human Resources Magazine, 9 (1), 126-147.

INTIMIDATION EFFORTS IN ORGANIZATIONS: MOBBING

Hasan ÇİFTÇİ[1]

ABSTRACT

Globalization has brought about many innovations and changes in our lives, together with itself. Psychological, social and economic influences at the individual, organizational and community level show their effects on the work life at a very high level. Today, where human resources, productivity, competition, and workload are intensely experienced, human relationships in business life are also influenced to a great extent. This influence, sometimes affirmed, is mostly negative. These situations also lead to the problem of mobbing nowadays. Certain individuals can attack and intimidate the individuals or groups verbally and emotionally with a tendency to prove themselves, to put themselves in the foreground, or due to the hatred within their personalities. With the development of technology and the increased use of the Internet, it is easier for individuals to reach and follow individuals on the other side of the world. This allows people to continue their bullying behaviours easily and frequently in business and private life. The emergence of the victims who are exposed to the behaviour of the bullies can lead to both psychological, organizational and social problems. This forces people to make mistakes by creating stress. Mobbing is, first and foremost, a crime against humanity, and is an attack on the personality rights of the individual. Mobbing, which occurs almost everywhere in the world, has not yet been defined in a true sense, and the mobbing problem has not been resolved yet. For individuals who are exposed to mobbing in organizations, society, organizations, media, government, and law should have the power to create sensitivity and sanction in cooperation with each other.

Keywords: Mobbing, Psychological Harassment, Crime, Psychological harassement, Bullying

INTRODUCTION

In today's modern workplace environments, employees are sometimes confronted with the phenomenon of 'mobbing' which threatens their physical and emotional health. Psychological harassment is the psychological terror, or any form of bullying on public and private sector employees, which leads them to resign or even to suicide. This concept was first described by the German psychologist Heinz Leymann in Sweden in the late 1980s, however, in recent years it has emerged as a frequent situation for the researchers of organizational psychology. Psychological harassment, which refers to

1 Assistant Professor, Harran University, hasanciftci@harran.edu.tr

intimidation, suppression, oppression, ignorance, psycho-terrorism or the practice of abstract violence, also constitutes the source of organizational aggression, lack of motivation and low productivity (Mizrahi, 2013: 443).

It has had a different importance for people in today's modern life. Business life occupies a significant part of modern human's time and psychology. However, in recent years, increased competition in the workplace, career struggle and the occasional rise in work stress over the bearable limits have caused some negative consequences on organizational relationships. Relationships of the managers and managed ones are squeezed between anticipation, individual interests and personality battles, and it is observed that employees tend towards unacceptable behaviours towards each other. These applications, which have been transformed into terrorism in the business environment and cause great and irresistible damage, which are sometimes irreversible on the victims of these behaviours, have been explained by the concept of "mobbing", and this has become an important area of investigation and research in the literature. Employees' being exposed to behaviours such as oppression, intimidation and losing their self-esteem, trying to fight against it, but their losing strength and becoming frustrated because of these behaviours' becoming systematic, being (or forced to be) suspended from work, being forced to resign and even suffer psychological disturbances and as the result, being the victims of a process reaching up to suicide are among the topics to be explained and analysed within the scope of the concept of mobbing (Asunakutlu & Safran, 2006: 112).

The Conceptual Framework Of Mobbing

The concept of mobbing comes from the root "mob" in English. The word "mob" means over-violence-related and illegal crowd. The English term "mobbing" was first used by biologists in the nineteenth century to describe the behaviour of birds flying around an attacker to protect their nests. The same concept was later used by Konrad Lorenz in the 1960s to explain how small groups of animals (e.g. birds) attack and exterminate a stronger, lonely animal (e.g. fox) in bulk. In addition, the mobbing term was used to describe the experiences among the birds of the same nest and that the other birds exclude the weakest one out of the group, by keeping it away from the food and water, making them exclusively weak, and eventually killing it with physical attacks (Tinaz, 2006: 14). This word is derived from Latin "Mobile Vulgus". Emotional harassment, which leads to material and moral harm in business life, has only recently been identified as a phenomenon and has gained a name that is accepted from North America to European countries, then to Japan: Mobbing. Today, the word mobbing is used to explain compressing, surrounding, annoying and distressing someone. "Bullying", "Workplace Bullying", "Bullying at Work", "Work or Employee

Abuse", "Mistreatment", "Emotional Abuse", "Victimization", "Intimidation", "Verbal Abuse", "Work Harassment", and "Horizontal Violence" are used to state the similar actions inside the workplace. However, "bullying", which is most commonly used among these concepts, also includes the meaning of physical aggression and threat (İzmir & Fazlıoğlu, 2010: 5), as opposed to "mobbing." The experiences of sexual harassment and emotional bullying in business life, are important factors that cause negative feelings such as anxiety, guilt, stress, depression and anger in employees. These patterns of behaviour, especially those of traditional socio-cultural values, jealousy, being concerned about 'being' or 'looking' strong, tendency to act aggressive, feeling of personal inadequacy and feeling of competitiveness at the psychopathological level foster the behavioural patterns that we often see in today's business world, are experiences causing important problems in terms of organizational functioning (Solmuş, 2005: 2). Psychological harassment, which is used to describe non-ethical behaviours such as intimidation, humiliation, terrorisation, suppression, and emotional violence, which is targeted and systematically repeated, is a phenomenon that everyone in our modern society and our work lives can encounter. Psychological harassment is a disease that can be seen in every business in the world, physically and psychologically affecting the victim and damaging the institutions as a result of the decreases in productivity and resignations. In recent years, it is observed that there has been an increase in interest in psychological harassment in the workplace and an increase in the number of studies conducted in this regard, however, the empirical studies have remained limited and studies have been carried out in more conceptual dimensions (Palaz et al., 2008: 41).

Causes of Mobbing (Psychological Harassment At Work)

Mobbing is often confronted as a form of systematic behaviour that employers apply in order to get rid of paying the employee compensation to the individual that is desired to be dismissed while reducing the staff. People exposed to mobbing suffer psychological damage not only in their business life but also in their private lives due to the moral pressure they experience in the workplace. Mobbing is, first of all, a negative behaviour against human dignity that targets human rights (Mizrahi, 2013: 451). The emergence, reduction and increase of aggressive behaviours in organizations is a dimension of the business environment, so it is necessary to take necessary precautions in the organizations. For example, securing safety, controlling entrances and exits of the organization, and preventing attacks from outside can be the precautions. According to organizational approaches, developing policies and procedures can trigger aggressive behaviours. For these reasons, managers should identify those who are inclined to these behaviours and help them not to exhibit these behaviours.

In behavioural approaches, the main thing is that the moderate people in the organization would try to prevent others from aggressive behaviours by being a model. Those who ensure balance within the organization, have high emotional intelligence and possess leadership qualities play an important role in strengthening positive behaviours in organizations. Apart from these approaches, undesirable behaviours in organizations can also be prevented through education. Social programs (training seminars, informal meetings, celebrations, etc.) that can be implemented within the scope of mobbing prevention are also of great importance in organizations. The success of anti-mobbing programs depends on certain conditions. The presence of pressure-generating problems in organizations, competing with other organizations' programs, the negative image created by mobbing issues, and the weakness of the social and cultural environment in organizations can reduce the success of mobbing prevention programs. For these reasons, some of the issues should be considered in evaluating the success and validity of mobbing prevention programs. In order for these programs to be helpful, the structures and behaviours of the groups in the organizations should be examined while these programs are being prepared (Kırel, 2007: 318).

Mobbing can have many reasons. It is possible to compare them individually, organizationally and socially. Among individual causes, there are many factors, such as the desire to force one of the individuals to accept the rule of a group, the savour of enmity, the search for entertainment due to boredom, the desire to strengthen prejudices, the belief that they are privileged, selfishness and many more. Organizational reasons are the factors such as the desire to get rid of the unwanted people in the organization, the belief that there are individuals that cannot meet the desired change within the organization, the employees' not being able to keep up with the changes in contemporary information and technology, the desire to increase the organizational success in any matter, and having radical changes in management levels. Social causes are technological changes, reduced dependence on values, intense competition, the idea of sharing limited resources, excessive productivity pressures, selfishness and individualization, change and uncertainty, status differences, poor quality communication, and etc.

General Indications of Mobbing

Mobbing does not only take place directly against the person but also can happen through a third person. Persons have indicated that they were not in favour of intervention when a mobbing situation occurred against a close individual. In such cases, they did not want to be in a guilty state, because, people think that a third person who intervenes can be seen as

the actual criminal, or, in this case, he/she will also become a mobbing victim. However, it is unacceptable for people to remain silent in the face of such a situation. In this case, the people fall into the audience position and be supporting the mobbing person. At this point, this situation should be discussed in a suitable environment with the mobbing victim and specific methods for fighting should be identified. The person should be supported in this process so that the person should survive the situation without much damage. What is important for us is that we should not be an audience in the face of such behaviour. Nobody knows that today's mobbing behaviour is not going to happen to us tomorrow (Şen, 2017: 149).

Mobbing at work is sometimes done in a very open and sometimes in a hidden way. The indications are that the professional competence of the individual is questioned, the individual is not trusted, information is hidden from the individual, the tasks that cannot be completed within the desired time are intentionally assigned, the ignorance of the person, the isolation from the group and the reduction of authority. Otherwise, the person may suddenly appear to be inadequate, small mistakes that have not been a problem before can be shown to be very important, and humiliation actions can be made. These things can be done not only by employers but also by other employees. So, some employees may be tempted to apply mobbing by the executives. Especially for such things done by employees, when the person applies to authorized persons, these authorised people also take a negative attitude and the application is rejected. After all, the person is obliged to resign, and it seems as though it is his own will.

Mobbing victim is confused because he/she is constantly exposed to this situation at certain intervals. Over time, the potential for work in the workplace decreases because he/she cannot escape from this confusion, he/she cannot be adapted to work, and he/she starts to suffer in the workplace. As a result, the person may come to the point of losing his/her job and start to suffer financial difficulties. The person who suffered the most in this process is the victim of mobbing. The indications of certain diseases will also come out in the victim, he/she will not come to work and his/her contract is terminated. He/she is under intense stress and experiences severe depression. In fact, this situation can even lead someone to commit suicide. He/she believes that he/she is not guilty about his/her experiences, however, on the other hand, he/she constantly thinks "Is there his/her mistake?". There will be no self-confidence, and he/she will begin to experience the state of ambivalence. He/she keeps him/herself responsible for everything and escapes from any responsibility. Although it is not possible to mention a standard profile of the personality characteristics of the victim and the behaviours that make up this person, Heinz Leymann's research shows that certain personality traits are more susceptible to psychological mobbing (Şen, 2017: 138).

The Effects And Results Of Mobbing

People exposed to mobbing are unable to do their daily work due to the size and impact of the damage they suffer. Studies on the subject have shown that the shortest mobbing period is 6 months, the average duration is 15 months, and the duration of the permanent effects is 29-46 months (İzmir and Fazlıoğlu, 2010: 6). The person who experiences the biggest damage in the workplace mobbing process is the individual who is the victim. The effects of deliberate and systematic repetitive mobbing occur in the form of cumulative losses that gradually occur on the individual. The process of mobbing has serious consequences for the individual, both economically and socially. Expenditures made for the treatment of disturbed spiritual and physical health and the loss of regular earnings as a result of the individual's separation from work are the economic dimensions of the losses suffered. When we consider the effects of mobbing on quality of life, it is seen that the individual loses confidence in every area of life, and this starts to affect his/her family, social relations and business environment. The individual gets confused, becomes incompetent, makes mistakes, starts to be afraid, embarrassed and hesitant. This situation continues not only in the business environment but also in interpersonal relationships (Toker, 2010: 8). A variety of behaviours and thoughts can be observed in people exposed to mobbing such as insomnia, anorexia, depression, distress, anxiety, weakness, crying crises, forgetfulness, irritability, sudden anger, silence, loss of desire for life and lack of satisfaction. Yet, in cases where violence and harassment are very intense, suicidal thoughts can even arise in mobbing victims.

The Methods For Fighting Against Mobbing

The victim has the largest tasks at the point of fighting with mobbing. To prevent individuals from being exposed to mobbing in their workplaces, there are precautions that can be taken by individuals as well as measures taken by these businesses and institutions. The reaction of the victim to the other side during the mobbing process will also affect and change the behaviour. The methods of struggle by the victims vary depending on how important these people are for their workplaces and their efforts to maintain the relations with the mobbing person. The victims do not only try to improve their working conditions by fighting mobbing but also they protect their private lives from the negative effects of mobbing (Şen, 2017: 141). Managers must provide staff training on stress sources and stress management to heal the stressful working environment, an important factor in the emergence of mobbing. In addition, managers should endeavour to enrich the business, prevent role conflicts, give importance to the needs of employees and meet them. At the same time, in-house communication and

in-house training should be supported. Again, in order to prevent jealousy, which is among the causes of mobbing, businesses should be fair in conflict causing situations such as promotion, authority and wages (Karcioglu & Çelik, 2012: 73).

Through training activities and meetings at workplaces, it should be ensured that employees and employers are aware of mobbing. In establishments with certain conditions, a psychological counselling unit should be established as an element to support the development of a more productive work environment, and a psychologist trained in mobbing must be hired. It will be useful to teach children "respect for personality and personal rights" to ensure that the issue is better placed in the children's minds when it comes to learning and respecting personality and personal rights. This is not only a matter of mobbing but also an important and necessary issue for people at every stage of life. The necessary arrangements must be made for the disabled who are employed in the workplace, to avoid their facing mobbing because of their problems. The laws should also oblige employers and public institutions to make the necessary physical arrangements in their workplaces. Universities or related organizations should carry out studies on mobbing. They should provide statistical data on mobbing types applied in workplaces and other spaces, distribution and spread rates and investigations should be done in these areas. The newspapers and televisions reflect the opinions of experts by including this topic. The various organizations that are established provide both legal and health support to the victims (Tetik, 2010: 88).

CONCLUSION

Systematic application of mobbing in the workplace can lead many people to suffer mental, physical and health problems, and even to commit suicide. Struggle against mobbing must become one of the core tasks of both the individual, the society and the state and should have criminal sanctions. Individuals at work should react to the situation and the struggle of personnel being subjected to mobbing by the management, should not be silent. Because individuals should consider the possibility that one day this situation can be faced by themselves. Mobbing is an attack on personality rights and combating mobbing is a humanitarian duty.

RESOURCES

Asunakutlu, T. & Safran, B. (2006). The Relationship Between Mobbing and Conflict in Organizations. Journal of Social Economic Research, 1 (11), 110-129.

İzmir, G. Fazlıoğlu, A. (2010) Commission Report on Psychological Harassment (Mobbing) in the Workplace and Solution Proposals, Ankara: TBMM Printing House,

KARCIOĞLU, F., & Çelik, Ü. H. (2012). Mobbing and Its Impact on Organizational Commitment. Ataturk University Journal of Economics and Administrative Sciences, 26 (1) .59-74

Kırel, Ç. (2007). Suggestions for Supporting Mobbing Management and Reducing Risks in Organizations. Anadolu University Social Sciences Journal Anatolia University Journal of Sociological Sciences Vol.:7 No: 2: 317-334.

Mizrahi, R. (2013). Methods of Combatting Mobbing in Working Life. Social and Humanities Journal, 5 (2).

Solmuş, T. (2005). Trauma at Working Life: Sexual Harassment and Emotional Bullying/Harassment (Mobbing). Business, Power Industry Relations and Human Resources Magazine Volume: 7 Issue: 2.

Şen, N. (2017). Psychological Violence in Business Life (Mobbing): Trabzon Example. Imgelem, 1 (1), 135-151.

Tetik, S. (2010). Mobbing concept: Its importance in terms of individuals and organizations. Karamanoğlu Mehmetbey University Journal of Social and Economic Research, 2010 (1), 81-89

Tınaz, P. (2006). Psychological Abuse in Work, Work and Society, No: 4, p. 13-28

Toker Gökçe, A. (2010). "Mobbing: The Conceptual Framework of Intimidation in the Workplace" http://www.universite-toplum.org, (Date of the access: 01.02.2018).

Thematic

INVESTIGATION OF ABILITY OF FOCUSING ATTENTION OF SOCCER PLAYERS

Umut Davut BASOGLU[1]

ABSTRACT

This paper is aimed to investigate the focused attention skills of football athletes. In order to determine the skills attention skills of athletes; "Stroop Test TBAG" which is translated Turkish by Karakuş et al. (1999) has been conducted on. 123 licensed football athletes have voluntarily participated the research. The data has analyzed with SPSS 18.00. Frequencies were calculated and correlation test was used to determining the significant differences among the variables.

According to the findings; level of difficulty and complexity increases in association with the number of errors and reading periods In addition, there is a significant positive correlation between the average time that the athletes spent with cards and the mistakes they made As a result, the skill of focused attention arises as an important topic for sports activities. So, the sports managers and coaches should attach more importance on developing the skill of focused attention of athletes.

Keywords The Focused Attention, Soccer players.

1. INTRODUCTION

In recent years, the increasing competition in sports has become more significant in many ways. People and institutions that manage and organize sports activities in particular are trying to find new ways to integrate sports science together with other scientific areas for advertising and gaining more income and. In particular, the investment in the football branch, which attracts the most attention, continues to increase.

Especially, the extant literature is bound of many studies that focus on increasing the performance of the athletes playing a leading role in sports environment. Studies involving the physical, physiological and psychological processes of the athletes have been increasingly a popular theme for sports scientists. Particularly the studies conducted on in sports psychology and psycho-social fields are considered to be more interesting for sports scientists and practitioners. Psychological factors arise as the most important determinants that increase the performances of athletes in

1 School of Physical Education and Sports, Nişantaşı University, İstanbul, Turkey, umut.basoglu@nisantasi.edu.tr

sports environment. In recent years, many psychological factors associated with the performance of athletes have entered the field of investigation. One of the key determinants of performance and score within the sports is the notion of attention. Attention is basically described as the reasonably useful to use limited resources in the most efficient way. Attention can also be explained as the capacity to make selected analyzes of inputs [6].

Attention is first defined by William James 110 years ago. According to James, attention is human mind`s orientation to the one of the few objects or ideas in a living, distinctive manner. We can also define attention as a harmony of sensory organs in order to facilitate the reaction to any stimulus or condition [20]. The systematic acceptance of stimuli in perceptual sense is explained by the concept of "attention" [7]. Attention is a conscious focus on stimuli [12]. While most of the stimuli in the external world are caught by sensory organs, only some of them are perceived. The individuals cannot keep their interest towards a variety of stimuli concurrently, because of their limited capacity on the same stimuli, because of physical on mental tiredness [9].

The level of attention is important for daily life in addition to business and sports life. Even the level of attention and can be considered as one of the essential factors to achieve the best performance in sports. Attention levels of the athletes and the children differ due to the motivation, environmental conditions and individual interests [14]. Any distraction on the attention levels of the athletes leads the loss of concentration due to the confusion on his / her mind which in turn results with an inability to exhibit superior performance. Thus it is an imperative to keep the attention level of athletes [10]. Allocation of attention on more than one focal point during activity seems to be one of the important factors affecting performance [16]. No one can continuously attach attention. It is unavoidable to get distracted or to lose interest based on physical or mental fatigue [13].

A literature review regarding the attention in the sports environment reveals that; the ability to warn, to direct and maintain attention seems to be an important antecedent of success for sports. Thus the athlete's attention and concentration ability must be assessed. Behavioral, cognitive, and physiological levels of analysis are used to develop a better understanding towards attention in sport and exercise psychology [1].

This research was aimed to examine the focused attention skills of soccer players depending on the duration of performance and the occurrence of fatigue.

2. METHOD

The universe of this research is defined as the licensed athletes who play football in Istanbul province. The target sample is composed of 123 volunteer athletes selected by random sampling method. The necessary information about the research and study is shared with the athletes in a detailed manner "Stroop Test" is conducted on to measure the focused attention of the footballers.

Stroop Test

The Stroop Test was originally created by Stroop (1935) as an experimental task. The Stroop Test TBAG Form, included in the scope of BİLNOT Battery, was developed from the combination of the original Stroop Test and the Victoria Form. This new developed form entitled as the Stroop Test TBAG Form for the sake of TUBITAK Basic Science Research Group that sponsored the project. Stroop Test TBAG Form was tested and adapted to Turkish society, by Karakaş et al. [5]. Test application and scoring procedures were standardized, reliability and validity were determined and norm values were calculated at his study.

Stroop Test TBAG Practice Guidelines

The study was carried on individuals in a silent room where distracting factors (e.g. noise, insufficient light) were reduced. In the room there were tables and chairs of appropriate size that can be used by practitioner and subject. The test cards were placed on a table in an apple pie order and the registration form is kept in a format that subject could not see.

TBAG Score of the Stroop Test

Each section of the Stroop Test TBAG Form is scored in three ways: (1) the time from the "Begin" command to the reading of the last article of the section; (2) the number of errors; (3) the number of revised responses.

Once the application is completed for each section, the time spent to complete the section was measured by a chronometer and recorded in the record form. These time-related operations were performed at the end of each section.

When the applications related to the Stroop Test TBAG Form are completed, the incorrect responses are counted. The number of errors for each section is written down on the registration form. The number of errors that the subject has revised by himself/herself haven't not been recorded in the form. Corrected responses that we have addressed in the registration form are counted and the number of corrections for each section is written down on the registration form.

The highest score that can be taken from the Stroop Test is determined as "0" error score for each section, "0" correction score, and the possible shortest time for reading / color discourse. Stroop Test Application Time is 10 minutes [3].

The sections, cards and practice order related to the Stroop test are given below.

- Reading the words printed in black regarding the color names (1st Card),
- Reading color-printed words regarding the color names (2nd Card),
- Saying the colors of the shapes (Card 3),
- Saying the color of the words that are not related with any color name, printed in color (4th card),
- Saying the color of words related to the color names printed in color (2nd Card).

Data Analysis

The gathered data were transferred to the computer environment and analyzed by statistical program. Descriptive statistics, frequency (f) and percent (%) distributions were analyzed based on those data. Correlation test was used to determine statistical differences between variables.

3. RESULTS

Table 1. Distributions regarding the ages of participant athletes

Age	N	%
16-20	50	44,5
21-25	40	33,6
26-30	20	13,6
>31	13	8,2
Total	**123**	**100**

Participating players a maximum of 16-20 age 50 people (44.5%) and a minimum of 31 years of age and older, 13 people (8.2%).

Table-2. Distributions regarding the card reading durations of participant athletes

Card reading durationd	n	**Minimum**	**Maximum**	**X (sn)**	**SS**
Card 1	123	4,21	10,12	6,41	1,25
Card 2	123	4,51	13,22	7,38	1,86
Card 3	123	6,24	16,89	10,31	1,74
Card 4	123	9,17	24,42	12,75	1,97
Card 5	123	13,05	42,35	20,21	4,18

The average duration of the footballers for reading of card 1 is 6,41 ± 1,25 seconds, the duration for reading of card 2 is 7,38 ± 1,86 seconds, the average the duration for reading of card 3 is 10,31 ± 1,74 seconds, the average the duration for reading of card 4 is 12,75 ± 1,97 seconds and finally the average the duration for reading of card 5 is 20,21 ± 4,18 seconds.

Table-3. Distributions regarding the error numbers of participant athletes at card reading

Error Numbers	n	Minimum	Maximum	X	SS
Card 1	123	0	1	0,07	0,12
Card 2	123	0	2	0,13	0,23
Card 3	123	0	4	0,57	0,78
Card 4	123	0	3	0,59	0,62
Card 5	123	0	7	2,03	1,04

There is an increase in the number of errors from the card 1 to card 5. Football athletes make the least mistakes at reading card 1, while they make the most errors at reading card 5

Table 4. Distributions regarding the error correction numbers of participant athletes

Error Correction	**n**	**Minimum**	**Maximum**	**X**	**SS**
Card 1	123	0	1	0,02	0,21
Card 2	123	0	1	0,14	0,42
Card 3	123	0	4	0,47	0,56
Card 4	123	0	3	0,54	0,92
Card 5	123	0	7	1,99	1,36

Examining the error correction of the participant athletes at card reading, we find out that that there is an increase in average error connection numbers from the card 1 to card 5. It seems that participant athletes make the least error correction at reading card 1, while they make the most error correction at reading card 5

Table-5. Correlation between between the error numbers and the total time spent at reading the cards

Variables	Average error numbers	Average time of cards reading periods
Average error numbers	1	0,61**
Average time of cards reading periods	0,61**	1

**: p<0.01

There is a significant positive correlation between the average total time spent on reading the cards and the average of the errors made at reading those cards ($r = 0.61$, $p < 0.05$). As time spent on card reading by football athletes increases, the number of errors increases either.

4. DISCUSSION AND CONCLUSION

When the results of this paper, conducted to determine the focused attention skills of footballers are compared with the extant literature; we see that previous studies also report that the duration of card readings by the athletes increases from card 1 to card 5. A plausible explanation for this increase may originate from difficulty levels of the cards.

The findings of Demir`s (2015) study on the football referees provide similar results with this research, related with the average duration of card readings. The examination of error numbers at reading the cards of the football athletes dhow that there is an increase in the number of errors from the card 1 to card 5. Football athletes make the least mistakes at reading card 1, while they make the most errors at reading card 5. Demir`s (2015) study which compares the focused attention skills and the reaction skills od football referees with, point out that the number of errors increased from card 1 to card 5 either. Although the study was conducted on football referees, football referees have been as physically performing at least as athletes in recent years. So they also may have been subject to similar workouts [4].

Moreover another study on female basketball athletes also presents the same results. The descriptive statistics regarding the focused attention levels of female basketball athletes show that female basketball athletes spent more time to complete the each further step –from step 1 to step 5- within the Stroop test (Akın, 2016). These results are in line with the results of the research [2].

Finally our findings show that there is a significant positive association between the average total time spent on reading the cards and the average of the errors made at reading those cards. As time spent on card reading by football athletes increases, the number of errors also increases. The reason underlying this correlation may be that the increase in the amount of time the athletes spent on reading cards leads to increased level of difficulty and complexity.

In a paper in which the attention levels of the students are examined, significant differences on the attention levels of students before and after the attentional training are reported [22]. In another study conducted on children playing golf, Tunç (2013) find significant differences on the levels of attention between the subject and control groups both in the pre- and post-test [20].

Moreover Asan (2011) examined the attentional levels of children who play table tennis. He finds that table tennis exercises have positive impacts on attention characteristics of children aged 9-13 years [21]. Another

study, concerning the effects of of Tai Chi exercise on attention deficit and hyperactivity disorder; Tai Chi exercises are found to increase the level of attention and a level of concentration in children [12]. The students who get attention training, perform better at visual and auditory attention [23]. Tenenbaum and Benedick (1987) investigate the attention levels of 29 gymnasts between the ages of 7-13 and indicate that older gymnasts mark more items than the youngers [19]. Some studies claim that attention-gathering skills can be improved by education [15, 17]. In this context, the development of attention skills which is no doubt important for sports, can also lead to an increase in terms of performance. Attention studies should be done to avoid distraction that emerge as a result of mental and physical fatigue and to optimize the focus level

As a result, focused attention skills arises as an important topic for many sports branches. Using a technical skill at the right time and right way, based on an object or in-game rules, can directly affect performance and competition. In this vein, the focused attention skills of the football athletes are increasing due to the level of difficulty and complexity. For this reason, we recommend to identify and develop focused attention skills of athletes.

REFERENCES

Abernethy B. (1993). Attention, Handbook of Research on Sport Psychology.

Akın, S. (2016). Elit Düzey Kadın Basketbolcularda Odaklanmış Dikkat Becerilerinin İncelenmesi. Balıkesir Üniversitesi, Sağlık Bilimleri Enstitüsü, Beden Eğitimi ve Spor Anabilim Dalı, Yayımlanmış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Balıkesir.

Bozkurt İ. (2013). Stroop Testi Uygulama Yönergesi, Yayın tarihi:28/08/2013 Yayın Linki: www.onlineterapiler.com.

Demir, M.B. (2015). Farklı Klasmanlardaki futbol hakemlerinini odaklanmış dikkat becerileri ile reaksiyon sürelerinin karşılaştırılması. Fırat Üniversitesi, Sağlık Bilimleri Enstitüsü, Beden Eğitimi ve Spor Anabilim Dalı, Yayımlanmış Yükse Lisans Tezi, Elazığ.

Karakaş, S., Irak, M., Kurt, M. & Erzengin, Ö. U. (1999) Wisconsin Kart Eşleme Testi ve Stroop Testi TBAG Formu: Ölçülen Özellikler Açısından Karşılaştırmalı Analiz. Psikiyatri Psikoloji Psikofarmakoloji Dergisi, 7(3): 179-192.

Ratmatpenah M.A. (1997). Critical Look at the Quality of Our Soccer Officials, Central Methodist college

Amado, S. (1996). Farklı Dikkat Düzeylerinin Örtük ve Açık Bellek Üzerindeki Etkileri, Doktora tezi, Ege Üniversitesi, İzmir.

Asan, R. (2011). Sekiz Haftalık Masa Tenisi Egzersizinin 9-13 Yaş Arası Çocuklarda Dikkat Üzerine Etkisi, Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Selçuk Üniversitesi, Sağlık Bilimleri Enstitüsü, Beden Eğitimi ve Spor Anabilim Dalı, Konya.

Bozan, A., Akay, Y. (2012). Dikkat Geliştirme Eğitiminin İlköğretim 5. Sınıf Öğrencilerinin Dikkatlerini Toplama Becerilerine Etkisi, Western Anatolia Journal of Educational Science. 3(6): 53-66.

Çağlar, E., Koruç, Z. (2006). D2 Dikkat Testinin Sporcularda Güvenirliği ve Geçerliği, Spor Bilimleri Dergisi, 17(2): 58-80.

Clikeman, M.S., Nielsen, K.H., Clinton, A., Sylvester, L., Parle, N., Connor, R.T. (1999). An Intervention Approach for Children with Teacher and Parent-Identified Attentional Difficulties, Journal of Learning Disabilities, 32: 581-590.

Dereceli, Ç. (2011). Tai Chi Programına Katılımın Dikkat Eksikliği ve Hiperaktivite Bozukluğu Olan İlköğretim 1. Kademe Öğrencilerinin İç- Dış Denetim Odağı ve Dikkat Düzeylerine Etkisinin Araştırılması, Doktora Tezi, Ege Üniversitesi Sağlık Bilimleri Enstitüsü, İzmir.

Esin, A. (2011). Dikkatsizce Kullanılan Önlemler "Dikkat Et/ Dikkatli Ol", Çimento Endüstrisi İşverenleri Sendikası: 4-11.

Kumartaşlı, M., Baştuğ, G. (2010). Examination of Attention Levels of Athletes Who Do Taekwondo, Karate and Muaythai, Ovidius University Annals, Series Physical Education and Sport/ Science Movement and Health, 2: 521-524.

Lauster U. (1999). Konzentrationsspiele 1. Für die 1. und 2. klasse. München: Lentz Verlag,.

Maggil, R.A. (2004). Motor Learning and Control: Concepts and Applications, Mc Graw Hill, Boston.

Özdoğan B. (2001). Altı - on iki yaşlarındaki çocukların eğitimi ve okul başarıları. Eğitim ve Bilim. s. 26, 3 - 7.

Özmen, K.S. (2011). Dikkat Eksikliği Hiperaktivite Bozukluğunda Çok Yönlü Eğitim Uygulamalarının Etkisi, Eğitim ve Bilim, 36(161): 257-269.

Tenenbaum G, Benedick AA. (1987). Bar-Eli M Quantity, consistency, and error-rate of athletes'mental concentration. International Journal of Sport Psychology,; 19, 311-319.

Tunç, A. (2013). Golf Sporu Yapan Çocukların Dikkat Düzeylerinin İncelenmesi, Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Selçuk Üniversitesi. Sağlık Bilimleri Enstitüsü. Beden Eğitimi ve Spor Anabilim Dalı, Konya.

Asan, R. (2011). 8 Haftalık Masa tenisi Egzersizinin 9-13 yaş arası çocuklarda dikkat üzerine etkisi, Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Selçuk Üniversitesi. Sağlık Bilimleri Enstitüsü. Beden Eğitimi ve Spor Anabilim Dalı, Konya.

Karaduman, B.D., (2004). Dikkat Toplama Eğitimi Programının İlköğretim 4. ve 5. sınıf öğrencilerinin dikkat toplama düzeyi, Benlik Algısı ve Başarı Düzeylerine etkisi, Doktora Tezi, Ankara Üniversitesi, Eğitim Bilimleri Enstitüsü, Ankara.

Clikeman, M.S., Nielsen, K.H., Clinton, A., Sylvester, L., Parle, N., Connor, R.T. (1999). An Intervention Approach for Children with Teacher and Parent- Identified Attentional Difficulties, Journal of Learning Disabilities, 32: 581-590.

ALIENATION AND SPORTS

Nurgül ÖZDEMİR[1]

ABSTRACT

Today, people are getting away from the traits that make them human. Both by the influence of the developing technology and by the reshaping of the living conditions at any moment, the individual is obliged to make extra effort to adapt to this change. This difficulty of the individual and the increasing anxiety it creates cause the individual to become insensitive (deaf) not only to himself but also to his environment. The individual becoming increasingly insensitive to himself and to his environment is alienated towards his own self, the personality treats that make him himself, the society he lives in, the human values and human emotions, and his work.

Alienation in sports includes such behaviors of the sports person as isolation from sports environment and sports process, intrinsic sports commitment and meaning, breakdowns in relations, estrangement, normlessness and isolation. It expresses that the sports person gradually gets away from being the subject of the sports action and becomes the object of it.In this study, were examined alienation and reflections of alienation in the sport.

Keywords: Alienation, Sport

INTRODUCTION

Today, people are getting away from the traits that make them human. Both by the influence of the developing technology and by the reshaping of the living conditions at any moment, the individual is obliged to make extra effort to adapt to this change. This difficulty of the individual and the increasing anxiety it creates cause the individual to become insensitive (deaf) not only to himself but also to his environment. The individual becoming increasingly insensitive to himself and to his environment is alienated towards his own self, the personality treats that make him himself, the society he lives in, the human values and human emotions, and his work.

According to Akyıldız (1998), alienation is the confusion that emerges as the result of the conflict that the difference between what an individual has and what he wants to have in life creates.

1 Asst. Prof. Dr., Adnan Menderes University, Faculty of Sport Sciences, email: nozdemir974@gmail.com

Finifter (1972) and Mann (2001) defined alienation as a social-based process that the individual isolates himself from the organization, group, and the values of the group.

Püsküllüoğlu (2000) defined alienation as the fact that the individual becomes alienated from his own problems, the setting he is in, and everything social or humanitarian by going under the domination of the objects he has produced and the products of labor. According to Aldemir (1983), alienation is the belief that an individual's behavior within the social structure will lead him to the result he is trying to achieve. Hoşgörür (1997) defined alienation as a state of weakness. Fromm (1996) stated that a person who is alienated is isolated from both himself and others, and is unable to develop a productive relationship in this process with himself and his environment.

Although there are definitions of alienation in the form of lack of social support felt, it is generally regarded as a problem regarding the belonging of the individual.

Horney (1950) defined alienation as a negative process that involves the individual's withdrawal from his emotions, opinions, wishes and life energy.

In an existential framework, Weisskopf (1996) described alienation as being obliged to give up some latent powers while developing some others. Existentialist view argues that alienation is inevitable for human beings because a life in which the individual develops and uses all his potential is not possible. As the individual chooses one thing in life, he has given up another. Therefore, there is no possibility of a life in which a person can realize himself and so, alienation is the desperateness of an individual.

Alienation, which has a harmful effect on the social harmony of the individual, causes him to feel lonely. Alienation has a multidimensional structure, not a holistic structure (Mau & Yuanshan, 2001). Seeman (1959) described alienation in his work named the meaning of alienation as the consequence of the complexity of social life and made measuring alienation a current issue for the first time.

The Theories of Alienation

Hegel and Alienation

The concept of alienation was first used by Hegel. According to him, the source of alienation comes out as the result of the distinction between the person's physical and psychological existence. A person who is alienated from himself and his environment gets away from seeing himself as an entity that thinks and feels (Demirer & Özbudun, 1999).

Marx and Alienation

Marx used the concept of alienation for the first time in political and economic perspective. According to Marx, alienation is the act that causes the labor to be out of the worker, to be not related to its essence, and that causes the worker to get away from his own work, labor, the nature he lives in, his self-nature and other people as a result of denying his labor and production (Marx, 2000).

Marx stated that alienation can be seen in many different forms and examined alienation in four dimensions as alienation to labor, work, nature and oneself (Tolan, 2005).

Weber and Alienation

Weber (1968) explained alienation with the concept of rationality. According to him, the world becomes ordinary and loses its glory and meaning as it is rationalized. Rationalization destroyed the magical garden of faith and certainty, and did not produce an alternative set of values that can be valid instead (Löwith, 1999). As a result of the rationalization process and mechanization tendency in social life, personal relationships and freedoms decrease, and the strength and significance of monotonic and corrosive bureaucracy that does not depend on personal relationships increases (Weber, 2006). The individual who is obliged to behave in certain rules and patterns in all the bureaucratic institutions based on rational legal authority, from factories to armies and schools, inevitably loses his individuality, autonomy and emotions. Thus, the person who turns into a cog in the great bureaucratic wheel becomes alienated to his own self (Gencer, 2002).

Durkheim and Alienation

Durkheim stated that alienation comes out when the system of social values and norms begins to lose the power of shaping the behavior of the individual (as cited in Şirin, 2009). According to Durkheim, the main factor that reveals alienation is the society that imposes the negative conditions on the individual. Human is weak against social conditions and alienation against society is related to human's lack of the power to supervise and manage his own social relationships (Tolan, 2005). Beginning from the family, the individual goes through a lifelong socialization process within the circle of friends, school, work life and other surroundings. The socio-cultural structure of the society in which the individual lives influences and determines his personality. Losing the functionality of social control due to the deterioration of the society's values and norms within the social and cultural structure of the society causes the arousal of anomaly. According

to Durkheim, normlessness, which is an indicator of this social disease, is observed in two ways: structural normlessness; the weakening of the functional ties between the institutions constituting the social structure, and social normlessness; the incompatibility of cultural developments with the social structure (Bayhan, 1997).

Marcuse and Alienation

Marcuse stated that alienation is the inhuman situation that the individual experiences, the one-dimensional status of the society as a result of the fact that the rapidly developing technology becomes less and less dependent to physical labor. Capitalism, with its present dimensions, captivates and colonizes the human being and makes it a consumer robot just as the society's rulers want at the desired amount at the desired time and place. Marcuse expressed that alienation would spread to the whole of the society (Yeniçeri, 1987).

Fromm and Alienation

Fromm handled alienation on an individual aspect. The individual who is alienated within the industrial society may feel himself weak by experiencing difficulties in managing and understanding himself (as cited in Şirin, 2009). The alienated human loses the productive relationship with himself and with others. The contemporary society is at the grip of alienation and therefore, alienation determines the frame of the relationship that the individual will set up with his work, with what he consumes, with the institutions of the social structure, with himself and others. For the first time, the individual has created a world of objects entirely made of handcraft; and has set up a complex social wheel to manage this technical wheel. However, all these things that he has created with his own hand have gone above him and begun to manage him. According to Fromm, the individual perceives himself within the modern world as a slave of this wheel that he has created by his own hands, not as the subject that has created this self-created structure. As this structure becomes stronger and farther away from his control, the person feels as weak. Within this system, he comes face to face with the objectivized, disconnected form of his power. The system he has built has owned him then; he is no longer the owner of himself (Fayda Kınık, 2010).

Seeman and Alienation

Seeman examined alienation in terms of the influences on the individual and transformed it into a measurable concept. Seeman explained alienation in five categories from the perspective of sociology and social psychology (Seeman, 1959);

- Powerlessness,
- Meaninglessness,
- Normlessness,
- Isolation and sense of loneliness,
- Self-estrangement.

The Dimensions of Alienation

Sense of Powerlessness

Powerlessness is the feeling that the individual has lost control of his own life because power requires keeping control of life. Sense of powerlessness is controlled by others or by non-personal forms. A powerless individual confines himself to respond to his behaviors rather than to put forward them. The individual does not direct himself in this case and is always directed by others (Minibas, 1993).

Powerlessness is the loss of the individual's control over own products the consequences of the tools he uses within the production process (Şirin, 2009). This can be explained as the loss of the individual's belief that his behavior will lead him to the consequences he wants to achieve (Bayhan, 1997).

Sense of Meaninglessness

Meaninglessness is defined as the lack of enlightenment of what an individual should believe and the inability of integration with his own truths and social truths in the process of personal decision making (Şirin, 2009). For many, the organization of society has destroyed the possibility of self-regulation by using their mind within life. This situation causes the individual to perceive himself as incompatible within social life and to feel meaningless in terms of life.

Meaninglessness is about the attitude that the individual develops as a result of feeling that he lacks the ability to cope with and understand the life circumstances he faces (Mackey, 1974). It is the opinion of the individual that as the individual does not understand and realize the causes and results of his behaviors and those of others, his life does not have a meaning. Making plans about the future and setting goals – as the world is too complex – is not possible because the future is unpredictable. For this reason, the ones who have developed targets have done so for nothing because the world is too complicated. The individual who cannot predict the future and cannot analyze the current situation has become open to social and ideological inculcations because of the lack of analytical

thinking ability that is necessary for him. The individual who is incapable of perceiving events and phenomenon and who experiences the sense of meaninglessness feels a sense of insecurity against those who decide for himself and against the society (Mackey, 1974).

Sense of Normlessness

According to Durkheim (1992), normlessness is the deterioration of the social and cultural structure that one sees and reacts to, and alienation in the sense of normlessness refers to the incoherence between the desires of the individual and the tools by which he can obtain these desires. Normlessness is an antithesis of institutionalization and normative order. Institutionalization and normative order, and normlessness are the opposite of each other (Durkheim, 1992). For example, normlessness is the destruction of the normative order, the dissolution of the institutionalization process, and the weakening of the common value standards.

According to Seeman, normlessness means that the individual adopts behaviors which are unacceptable for the society in order to achieve the determined goals. In general, normlessness comes out as the disappearance of the accepted social standards and the increase in the individual's behaviors that are self-interested and for his own benefit (Şirin, 2009).

Isolation

Isolation is the situation that arises from giving low value to things that are highly valued by the society. In this case, if the person refuses not only the legal means but also the goals of the group and the organization, then loneliness increases (Bayhan, 1997). Isolation can in general be defined as the avoidance of the individual from being in the physical environment he is in or being in relation to other people, or the minimization of this relationship. This withdrawal or estrangement can stem from the psychological state or the environment the individual is involved in (as cited in Minibas, 1993). Acording to Bowker et al. (1998), the isolation dimension has two different aspects as functional and structural. These are the two approaches in the form of withdrawal – isolation of self from the environment (expressing the individual's self-isolation from his own environment) and exposure to isolation (isolation and exclusion of the individual by his environment). The first of the reactions related to insulation anticipates active isolation. Accordingly, the individual feels isolated and rejected because of the group pressure. Besides, the individual develops this reaction even more in the problems or obstacles that arise when he is joining in a group or when he is accepted by the group. In the second reaction, the individual chooses a path of passive isolation. Among these reasons, personality traits of the individual play a very important role. Especially shyness, anxiety, extreme

social sensitivity and negative self-perception of the individual play a significant role in passive isolation (Bowker et al., 1998).

Self-Estrangement

The fact that a certain behavior of a person does not coincide with his future expectations results in self-estrangement (Tolan, 1980). That a person can no longer dedicate himself to work means that he cannot include himself in the work and thus is alienated for some thoughts. Self-estrangement is very closely related to meaninglessness and powerlessness (Bayhan, 1997).

West (1988) defined self-estrangement as the fact that the employee sees work as an external experience and as a result, as the externalization of the work for the employee, that is to say, a force or situation apart from himself that begins to dominate him (West, 1988).

Yeniçeri (1991) stated self-estrangement that the present state of the individual can be better on the condition that the social conditions are suitable and it is the state that stems from the fact that the individual believes the present state is bad .

According to Başaran (1998), self-estrangement is that the behaviors of the individual is not based on the values, norms, needs and desires that he develops, the inconsistency of the behaviors. According to him, in this kind of alienation, the individual behaves just to exhibit behaviors, unwillingly and not intrinsic motivation-oriented; and behaves as if the behavior is not his own (Basaran, 1998).

Seeman defined self-estrangement as the incompatibility of the individual's certain behavior with his future expectations, and behaving differently by getting away from his expectations (as cited in Hosgörür, 1997; Pars, 1982).

The Sources of Alienation

Alienation stems from a number of factors ranging from the widest social circle the individual lives in to friends, and family circle and personality traits (Duru, 1995).

According to Weingberg (1971), the sources of alienation are;

1. Non-personal environment,
2. Insufficient and irrelevant living conditions,
3. Bureaucratic mechanism,
4. Annoying features in terms of the surrounding,

5. Fatigue and exasperation,

5. Great and sudden changes,

6. Rules and regulations, and bureaucratic structure (Tezcan, 1982).

The Consequences of Alienation

According to Nettler (1967), the alienated person experiences mental and emotional deterioration, reacts greatly to social relations, and even if it is hard to explain, avoids these relationships, tends to commit suicide, has a higher tendency to use drugs, and is in a negative attitude towards marriage. Besides, the alienated person has tendency to illegal actions. However, the alienated person also tends to be more creative (Nettler, 1967). In terms of sociality dimension, norms turn into deviant behavior that results in excessive harmony or normlessness in the individuals. In terms of social relations, the individuals either willingly withdraw themselves from their social interactions, or experience a sense of direct exclusion. Powerlessness results in opposition, inadequacy, hopelessness, pessimism, and the inability of the individual to struggle. Experiencing extreme alienation and other factors cause self-estrangement. The role of the individual within the society leads to the alienation of the individual when it does not allow him to realize himself and put forward his skills and his power of production (Rosner & Mittelberg, 1989). As a result of alienation, the individual perceives himself as an object that is dependent to external forces, deprived and has reflected his essence in these forces, not as the effective creator of his own power and richness (Fromm, 1996).

Alienation is regarded as a peculiarity that has long felt itself in the modern society in spite of the fact that the intensity, prevalence and form of it are experienced differently in art, health, education and economy (Öksüz & Öztürk, 2017).

Alienation in Different Scientific Disciplines

When literature is reviewed, it is seen that the concept of alienation is explained with different meanings in different scientific disciplines;

In psychology; alienation is the insecurity felt by the individual towards others, the state of pessimism which he feels he has lost all his belief to be happy, the weakness he feels towards society, and the anxiety of being among others (as cited in Elma, 2003).

In social psychology; alienation is the sense of powerlessness, meaninglessness, normlessness, isolation and self-estrangement that emerges due to the influence of social, institutional or interpersonal problems on the individual (Seeman, 1959).

In philosophy; alienation is the fact that things and objects are seen to be strange, remote and irrelevant for conscious (Elma, 2003).

In sociology; alienation is the loss of interest towards the society he lives in, cultural values and role distribution, the meaninglessness of value and norms, the state of feeling powerless and lonely, or the normlessness and anomy experienced as a result of losing the legitimacy of the existing social rules in achieving the individual's goals within the society where rapid social change is experienced (Demir & Acar, 2005).

In psychiatry; alienation is the moods of impersonality in such mental health disorders as schizophrenia and psychosis, unrealism or strangeness, normlessness, role disorder, loneliness, weakness and hopelessness (Budak, 2005).

In education; alienation is the fact that school education is unable to reproduce itself in terms of economy and culture and loses its function of increasing individual rights and freedoms; that it removes the individual from social equality and freedom; that the administrator, the teacher, the students and parents find educational activities meaninglessness, feel themselves insufficient and powerless, isolate themselves from the school and bear negative attitudes towards education as the cause or consequence of them (Tezcan, 1988).

In economy; alienation is the fact that although the individual produces to meet his needs and to be free, he cannot consume the way he wants, he becomes impoverished, and as a result this, he loses his freedom.

In politics; alienation expresses individual's withdrawal from the political system (as cited in Elma, 2003).

In law; alienation can be defined as transferring, disposing, giving the right of property to someone else (as cited in Sanberk, 2002).

Alienation in Sports

Sports can be defined as the physical activities that are performed for various purposes within the framework of certain rules (Hekim, 2016). Sports is the effort of the human being to be excellent in life and it promises health, happiness and fun in his life.

Sports has a different place from other occupational areas as it is game; sports time and activity are more attractive, bounder, enjoyable and encouraging, socializing and endeavoring for the individual (Kuter, 1998).

As a consequence of the increasing interest in sports within today's circumstances, performance-oriented structure of sports has become more and more complex. Within this framework, sports has become a tool that

alienates and that keeps away from being alienated. Alienation in sports can be dealt in two dimensions. While sports is a means that saves the individual from the alienation created by the complexity of the present living conditions, it is also a means that alienates for the professional athletes and the masses who are their spectators.

Sports stands as a profession because sports is transformed into a product consumed by huge masses, and in order to be able to benefit from the financial and spiritual opportunities of the profession, , the athletes, as the owners of the profession, are in such attitudes and behaviors that contradict with the nature and purpose of sports. Increasing violence in sports, using drugs that push the performance boundaries of sports people and threaten their health are the indicators of alienation in sports (Kuter, 1998).

Alienation in the sports environment may manifest itself as, for any reason, losing his sense of belonging to his team and sports environment, and following that, quitting sports, not participating or irregular participation in training, getting away from his teammates, exhibiting undisciplined behavior in such a way as to cause a decrease in the performance, seeing sports as a means to gain a lot of financial gain by the sports people, and also in the form of trying to win in a non-lucrative attitude such as using a doping with a gain-oriented perspective, injuring his rival or keeping on playing although being injured. Self-estranged individual is not concerned with the internal factors of work, but is concerned with such factors as money, security, etc.

Alienation in sports includes such behaviors of the sports person as isolation from sports environment and sports process, intrinsic sports commitment and meaning, breakdowns in relations, estrangement, normlessness and isolation. It expresses that the sports person gradually gets away from being the subject of the sports action and becomes the object of it.

Sports liberates the individual. Freedom is that the individual draws the limits of his life within the circumstances of his life, makes his choices freely and decides who he is and who he wants to be. In today's sport, the sports person becomes the slave of the social and economic system by playing the roles that are drawn by those who form the system that does not comply with the work they are doing. For example, an athlete who breaks his record of the previous year for one second each year can be regarded as a sign that he has not exhibited his performance at the highest level. The thing that makes a sports person as a sports person is such behaviors of self-transcendence, struggling with himself and with the opponent to perform at the highest level to reach the best performance. Within this context, the sports person focuses on how he can sell his best performance for the longest time by

making his performance a commodity, a product rather than using the choice of exhibiting his own performance at the highest level. Therefore, the sports person cannot create a natural, peculiar production area within sports. According to Fromm (1996), the individual who cannot realize his productivity can be directed or managed by others or by an unknown force. However, human is a free being and wants to be productive; his nature and his power is directed to this. The inability of the individual to realize his own existence will bring together the feeling of frustration with him.

Together with the alienation process in sports, the sports person starts to see and do the work as a mechanical work isolated from the spirit of sports.

While the sports person tries to go beyond himself both mentally and physically and psychologically, he redefines the boundaries of his branch at the same time. For this reason, game in sports is a test of excellence and is also important for measuring the boundaries of the individual. A sports person who breaks a record in his branch carries out this excellence trial not only for his own sake but also in the name of all mankind (Erdemli, 2002).

Sports is a game. However, the qualities that make sports as sports today have begun to disappear gradually since game is an organized, fictional, non-economic event in which voluntary participation is the basic principle and there is no time and space limit, and the results cannot be predicted. Nonetheless, a professional sports person can continue to play even if the he is injured, due to the decision of his coach or his club managers though he is not volunteering. Although the results of the games are unforeseen, in some sports branches such as football, the result of the game can be determined from the beginning by the ways that do not match with sports ethics such as match fixing and incentive pay. Today, sports person, trainer, referee, club managers, and teams have turned into an economic product with a brand value. Therefore, professional sports has lost its feature of being a game by becoming an economic product. All these qualities have thus made the professional sports people, trainers, referees, club managers and supporters get away from the essence of the sport, and caused them to become alienated from the sports, society, and themselves.

Alienated sports person loses the enthusiasm for the game, avoids setting up social relations, tends to use doping and violate the rules more, often gets punished, does not deal with the internal factors of work but deals with money and security elements. As a consequence, the sports person does not feel enough power to struggle in time, begins not to turn his talent into production power and becomes alienated to himself. He attributes his own ability to the elements outside him and perceives himself as a deprived object.

Today, the sports person is regarded as a meta for the mass supporters who are present as spectators within sports that has become a consumer instrument in the capitalist system that is based on a mentality of consumption rather than production. When a supporter supports a team, he regards everything about that team as a means to provide his own happiness. The individual is someone who is trying to compensate what he has lost in his personal life with the victories of his team. The individual who is trying to compensate all the defeats in his life with the victory of the team psychologically shows his reaction with unfair, exaggerated behaviors when his team is defeated in the match (such as attacking to opponent's supporters, players, managers, bus, symbols; attacking to his own team's players, trainers of the referee for the decisions). Sports events are almost cut out for the fans to pour out their accumulated anger because the fans consider sports environment a legitimate setting where they can easily exhibit many aggressive behaviors that they cannot exhibit in everyday life. While exhibiting these behaviors, he does not feel himself as the other because there are many people who exhibit the same behavior in that environment. In other words, the fan can easily disappear in the crowd and exhibits his violent behavior; and also feels stronger than he really is with the other fans. Hence, in his research that analyzed what kind of behavioral consequences alienation causes, Seeman (1967) expressed that alienated individuals tend to behave in a more hostile way, which is explained by the relation of frustration and aggression. Security measures taken against the aggressive behaviors of the supporters during the matches on the sports areas (drawing wire fence between the pitch and the tribune, body search in the entrance, etc.) increase the alienation experienced by the supporters more.

Sports that has turned into a consumption object has created its own industry. The sports industry which has been created with recreative, preventive and performance-oriented products offered to consumers is the first in terms of overall financial turnover in the world economy. The sports industry is focused on making consumers satisfied and consume more. All the other components of sports (sports person, trainer, referee, sports manager, cheerleader, etc.) are transformed into sports workers who are sacrificed to make the consumer happy when considered that the supporter are turned into target consumers within the sports industry. Together with the fact that a work performed entirely based on the ability of the sports person comes into a mechanical form, the behaviors of the sports person, trainer, and referee are shaped by boundaries (punishments) defined within sports. For example, the reaction of a sports person, a trainer, or a referee towards an aggressive behavior to himself from the supporters or sharing his joy with the fans after scoring a goal is prohibited. This is defined as their professional behavior. Basketball players are prohibited from watching the game by standing during the match (so as to be able

to let the supporter who pays the highest fare and gets the ticket for the front seat can watch the match more comfortably and with joy). The sports person is expected to do his work in such a way that he has entirely got free his feelings. In order to encourage the sports person to do so (as a reward), he has had the opportunity to get a high financial gain. Therefore, the sports industry irrevocably alienated the sports person to his own field of labor. Thus, the possibility of doing professional sports with an amateur spirit has completely been destroyed.

While sports is the source of alienation for professional sports, the situation is just the opposite in the sports activity performed with amateur spirit. That is to say, the individual uses sports as a tool to get rid of the complexity and monotony of daily life. At this point, the elements of sports that make the individual happy, healthy, and active are effective. As the aim of the individual is to win by having fun while doing sports, he does not experience the anxiety to win and gets all the joy he can get from sports. Therefore, he feels the impact of alienation within life less.

REFERENCES

AKYILDIZ, H. (1998). Bireysel ve toplumsal boyutlarıyla yabancılaşma. *Süleyman Demirel Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi, 3*, 163-176.

ALDEMİR, C. (1983). Yöneticilerin güç tipleri ile işe yabancılaşma ve iş doyumu arasındaki ilişkiler. *AMME* İdaresi Dergisi, *Mart.* Sayı:16 / 1,s .61-77

BAŞARAN, İ. E. (1998). *Yönetimde insan ilişkileri: Yönetsel davranış.* Ankara: Aydan Tes.

BAYHAN, V. (1997). Üniversite *gençliğinde anomi ve yabancılaşma.* Ankara: Kültür Bakanlığı Yayınları.

BOWKER, A., Bukowski, W., Zargarpour, S., & Hoza, B. (1998). A structural and functional analysis of a two dimensional model of social alienation. *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly, 34*(4).

BUDAK, S. (2005). *Psikoloji sözlüğü.* Ankara: Bilim ve Sanat Yayınları.

MANN, S. (2001). Alternative perspectives on the student experience: Alienation and engagement. *Studies in Higer Education, 26*(1), 7–19.

DEMİR, Ö., & Acar, M. (2005). *Sosyal bilimler sözlüğü*. Ankara: Adres Yayınları.

DEMİRER, T., & Özbudun, S. (1999). *Yabancılaşma*. Ankara: Öteki Yayınevi.

DURU, E. (1995). *Üniversite öğrencilerin yabancılaşma ve yalnızlık düzey ilişkileri.* Unpublished master's thesis, Dokuz Eylül Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, İzmir.

DURKHEİM, E. (1992). *İntihar (Trans. Özer O.).* Ankara: İmge Kitabevi.

ELMA, C. (2003). İlköğretim *okulu* öğretmenlerinin *i*şe *yabancılaşması: Ankara ili* ö*rneği.* Unpublished doctorate dissertation, Ankara Üniversitesi, Ankara.

ERDEMLİ, A. (2002). *Temel sorunlarıyla spor felsefesi.* İstanbul: E Yayınları.

FAYDA KINIK, F. Ş. (2010). Öğretmenlerin *yabancılaşma algıları.* Unpublished master's thesis, Yıldız Teknik Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, İstanbul.

FİNİFTER, A. W. (1972). *Alienation and the social system.* New York: John Wiley and Sons, Inc.

FROMM, E. (1996). *Sağlıklı toplum (Trans. Yurdanur S. & Zeynep T.).* İstanbul: Payel Yayınları.

GENÇER, A. (2002). *Öğretmenlerin iş doyumu ile mesleki tükenmişlik düzeyleri arasındaki ilişkiler.* Unpublished master's thesis, Osmangazi Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Eskişehir.

HEKİM, M. (2016). Çocuklarda beden eğitimi, spor ve oyun etkinliklerine katılımın kemik gelişimi üzerine etkilerinin değerlendirilmesi. *Gümüşhane Üniversitesi Sağlık Bilimleri Dergisi, 5*(2), 66-71.

HORNEY, K. (1950). *Neurosis and human growth.* New York: W. W. Norton and Company.

HOŞGÖRÜR, V. (1997). *Eğitim iş görenlerinin örgütsel tutumları: Samsun ili merkez ortaöğretim okulları* örneği. Unpublished doctorate dissertation, Ankara Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Ankara.

KUTER, F. (1998). *Toplumsal boyutlarıyla spor.* Ankara: Bağırgan Yayınevi.

LÖWİTH, K. (1999). *Max Weber ve Karl Marx (Trans. Nilüfer Y.).* Ankara: Doruk Yayınevi.

MACKEY, J.A. (1974). *The dimension of adolescent alienation.* Unpublished doctorate dissertation, Indiana University, the USA.

MARX, K. (1844). *Yabancılaşma (Trans. Somer, K., Kardam,A., Belli, S., Gelen, A. , Fincancı, Y., & Bilgi, A.).* Ankara: Sol Yayınları.

MAU,R., & YUANSHAN, C. (2001). Alienation differences between Hawaii and Singapore secondary school students. *Asia Pacific Journal of Education. ISSN: 0218-8791 (Print) 1742-6855 (Online), Retrieved from http://www.tandfonline.com/loi/cape20*

MİNİBAŞ, J. (1993). *Yabancılaşma kavramının incelenmesi ve banka sektörüne* ***y*önelik** *bir araştırma.* Unpublished doctorate dissertation, İstanbul Üniversitesi, İstanbul.

NETTLER, G. (1967). A measure of alienation. *American Sociological Review, 27.*

ÖKSÜZ, Y., & Öztürk, M. (2017). Relationship between levels of student alienation and hemsehrilik attitudes of university students: A study on Kyrgyz-Turkish Manas university students. *Universal Journal of Educational Research, 5*(7). Retrieved from http://www.hrpub.org. DOI: 10.13189/ujer.2017.050711.

PARS, E. (1982). **İşbölümü,** *yabancılaşma ve sosyal politika.* Ankara: Ankara Üniversitesi Siyasal Bilgiler Fakültesi Yayınları.

PÜSKÜLLÜOGLU, A. (2000). *Arkadaş Türkçe s*özlük. Ankara: Arkadaş Yayınevi.

ROSNER, M., & MİTTELBERG, D. (1989). The dialectic of alienation and dealienation: The case of Kibbutz Industrialization (In D. Schweitzer & R. F. Geyer Eds.). *Alienation Theories And Dealienation Strategies: Comparative perspectives in philosophy and the social sciences.* Nortwood: Sciences Reviews Ltd.

SANBERK, İ. (2002). Öğrenci *yabancılaşma* ölçeği. Unpublished master's thesis, Çukurova Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Adana.

SEEMAN, M. (1959). On the meaning of alienation. *American Sociological Review, 24.*

SEEMAN, M. (1967). Alienation studies. *Annual Review of Socıology, 1,* 93-112.

Şirin, E. F. (2009). Beden Eğitimi öğretmenlerinin işe yabancılaşma düzeylerinin bazı değişkenler açısından incelenmesi. *Celal Bayar Üniversitesi Beden Eğitimi ve Spor Bilimleri Dergisi, 4.*

TEZCAN, M. (1988). *Eğitim sosyolojisi.* Ankara: Bilim Yayınları.

TOLAN, B. (2005). *Sosyoloji.* Ankara: Gazi Kitabevi.

WEBER, M. (2006). *Sosyoloji yazıları (Trans. Taha P.).* İstanbul: İletişim Yayınları.

WEİSSKOPF, A.W. (1996). *Yabancılaşma ve iktisat (Trans.* Çağatay K. *et al.),* İstanbul: Anahtar Kitaplar Yayınları.

WEST, E. G. (1988). The political economy of alienation: Karl Marx and Adam Smith. (In J. C. Wood Eds.) *Karl Marx's economics: Critical assesments.* New York: Croom Helm.

YENİÇERİ,Ö. (1987).Örgütlerde yabancılaşma sorunları ve yabancılaşmanın önlenmesinde yönetime katılmanın rolü. Unpublished master's thesis, Uludağ Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Bursa.

YENİÇERİ, Ö. (1991). Örgütlerde *çatışma ve yabancılaşma sorunlarının y*önetiminde *etkili bir araç olarak y*önetime *katılma ve bir uygulama.* Unpublished doctorate dissertation, Erciyes Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Kayseri.

REINTERPRETATION OF IBN KHALDUN'S THEORY OF NOMADIC LIFE (BEDEVİLİK) AND SETTLED LIFE (HADARİLİK) IN THE FRAMEWORK OF TONNIES' COMMUNITY AND SOCIETY PHENOMENON

Emine ÖZTÜRK[1]

ABSTRACT

Ibn Khaldun, the mental and social summit of the history of Andalusia, is the first person who wrote the first work in sociology throughout human history. Ibn Khaldun wrote his Muqaddimah as a preface of a book of 8-volume history book named Kitab al-iber, with the quality of history methodology and ended it. His work today is still a work that sheds light on modern sociology. Muqaddimah is a work that sheds light on today about the sociology of history and methodology. The subject of this research is the reinterpretation and explanation of Ibn Khaldun's theory of nomadic life and settled life in the framework of Tönnies' community and society phenomenon.

Keywords: Ibn Khaldun, Nomadic Life, Settled Life

INTRODUCTION

Ibn Khaldun, the mental and social summit of the history of Andalusia, is the first person who wrote the first work in sociology throughout human history. Ibn Khaldun wrote his Muqaddimah as a preface of a book of 8-volume history book named Kitab al-iber, with the quality of history methodology and ended it. His work today is still a work that sheds light on modern sociology. Muqaddimah is a work that sheds light on today about the sociology of history and methodology. The subject of this research is the reinterpretation and explanation of Ibn Khaldun's theory of nomadic life and settled life in the framework of Tönnies' community and society phenomenon.

However, it would be useful to give information about Ibn Khaldun's life and his sociology before we start the reinterpretation and explanation of Ibn Khaldun's theory of nomadic life and settled life in the framework of Tönnies' community and society phenomenon.

1 Associated. Porf. Dr. ,Department of Sociology of Religion, Philosophy and Religious Studies, Theology Faculty, Kafkas University

Ibn Khaldun's Life and Works

He is a well-known historian, sociologist, philosopher and statesman known by the name "Ebu Zeyd Veliyyuddin Abdurrahman b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Hasen el-Hadrami el-Mağribi et-Tunisi. He was born in Tunisia at 1 Ramadan 732 (May 27, 1332). Since he was originally from Hadramut region of Yemen, he used Hadrami ancestry in Muqaddimah, and because he was born in Tunisia he was remembered as Túnisî, and he was also known as Maghribi because he spent most of his life in North Africa. Ibn Hazm has told his family tree, and he also told this family tree himself in his work, et-Ta'rif (1)[2], but stated that it is doubtful and lacking. Vail b. Hucr, tribal leader of Ibn Khaldun's tribe and his ancestor, went to Medina with a delegation and visited the Prophet, and he took the Prophet's pray "bless Vail and his blood", and when returning to his country Muâviye b. Abu Sufyan was sent together with him. Vâil narrated nearly seventy hadith from Prophet Muhammad.(2)[3] The grandchildren of Vâil came here during the conquest of Andalusia and settled in the city of Carmona. The first person who came to Andalusia from this family is Hâlid b. Osman b. Hânî. The name of Hâlid, also known as Hâlid ed-Dahil has begun to be pronounced "Haldûn" in the form of respect as it is customary in Andalusia, and those who came from his lineage were also known as Bani Haldûn. Haldûn family, who lived for a while in Carmona, were recognized as a respectable family in Işbiliye (Sevilla), and they played an important role in the political and scientific field in Andalusia and North Africa. Historian Ibn Hayyân el-Kurtubî pointed to the reputation of this family in the field of politics and science.[4]

"Ibn Khaldûn's grandfather, Muhammad Bicaye (Becija) rose to the position of "haciblik" (a council who listens people and solves their problem), then he left the political life and he dedicated himself to worship. His father, Muhammad, did not enter politics and was busy with science, education and training. Ibn Khaldun started his first education with his father, then he continued with the lessons of Muhammad b. Sa'd b. Bürrâl el-Ensari. He memorized the Qur'an and learned the knowledge of the recitaiton of Qur'an. He took lessons on Arabic literature and language from the scholars Muhammed b. Arabî el-Hasâyirî, Muhammed b. Şevvâş ez-Zerzâlî, Ahmed b. Kassâr, Muhammed b. Bahr, Muhammed b. Câbir el-Vâdîâşî and especially

2 Ibn Khaldun, Ebu Zeyd Veliyyuddin Abdurrahman b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Hasen el-Hadrami el Mağribi et-Tunisi, *et-Ta'rif (Memories Between Science and Politics),* trans: Vecdi Akyüz, Dergah Publications İstanbul, 2017, page.15.

3 Ibn Khaldun, *et-Ta'rif,* page.16.

4 Uludağ, Süleyman; **"The Titke of Ibn Khaldun",** TDV Encyclopedia of Islam, Turkey Religious Foundation Publications, Ankara, 1999, Vol: XIX, page.538. Also see: Ibn Khaldun, *et-Ta'rif,* page16-23.

his father. He memorized the poems of poets Ebû Temmâm and Mütenebbî and some of *poems in el-Eğânî.* He also read some parts of the other books of Qutub-i Sitte and Shah-i Muslim and al-Muvatta from Vâdîâşî. He studied islamic law with some scholars like Muhammed b. Abdullah ei-Ceyyânî, İbn Abdüsselâm el-Hevvârî and Muhammed el-Kasîr.[5]

"Ibn Khaldun has s a quarter century of adventure after his puberty. This adventure is being courtier in the palace. In 1350, after being assigned as the keeper of seals due to the influence of his tribe, he was in Bougide in 1353 and spent 9 years in the palace of Merinides (1354-1363). However, he uses his free time to complete his education from Moroccan teachers. However, the changes in the political situation takes him to a two-year prison experience which is necessary for him to be a good statesman and to have a philosopher's etiquette and knowledge, a test period.During this two years (1357-1358), he finishes his time of fifteen years apprenticeship and two years studentship(1363-1365)"[6]

"For the next nine years (1365-1374), they were the most temporary, most unstable years or could be "peak of the adventure". In other words, Ibn Khaldun was tired of plots, which he describes in his autobiography as swamp of the politics, and he quits the scene for eight years to study and research. All the great men submitted the spiritual necessity of going aside or the necessity of physical condition. Mystic Muslims call that "privacy" and Saint St. Jean de la Croix "loneliness". Indeed Ibn Khaldun tells this 4 years of time to be used as making determination to breathe again, to solve the problems and to prepare for the politicians to enter the politics again. To tell you the truth, for Ibn Khaldun only a real withdraw into his shell will be from 1374 to 1378 for 4 years. He will be with his tribe during this four years in Algeria, north of Biskra, Kalat Ibn Salama. There in 1377, at the age of forty-five, he will complete the writing of Muqaddimah, which is actually a "Discourse on Universal History" in five months. The other half of this thinking period will be used this time in Tunis (1378-1382) to complete compulsory bibliographic references. His great work is finished in 1382. And the first copy was presented to the sultan of Hafsids. Ibn Khaldun began to think about getting a new profession after giving way his thoughts related to his work. By the time he is fifty years old he will now be a man of action, and he will now turn his face to education and high office duties, judgeship. He lives the third twenty-five years of his life in Cairo, and he will die there. In the meantime he got married. But he will lose his relatives in a storm at sea; he will remarry habitually, but these are minor details; he will not write this in his autobiography. "[7]

5 Uludağ, *a.g.e.*, page.538. Also see: Ibn Khaldun, *et-Ta'rif,* page.23-50.

6 Monteil, Vincent, **"Preface"**, *Muqaddimah,* translation: Sevim Belli , Onur , Yay., Ankara, 2014, Vol:I, page. 28.

7 Monteil, *Muqaddimah,* , page.28-29.

"This period is Egypt period from 1382 to 1406. As always, Ibn Khaldun is interested in politics and his situation depends on his protector's power or his enemies' anger. Usually he was a teacher, especially Maliki law teacher. But it is not always only his talents, his relations; but at the same time he was subjected to the jealousy of his colleagues, who was jealous of his oratory and sometimes his tough character. Meanwhile, in Damascus, an interruption will be to accept special duties from Timur to determine the fate of the city in Damascus. This will be his last diplomatic role. Maybe he did not mention it because he found it less important. He was a Maliki Muslim Judge before and after this; Between 1384, 1385, 1398 and 1406, he quit the job five times. When he died at the age of seventy-four on March 17, 1406, he had been on duty as a judge for a few weeks. They buried him in Sufi cemetery, which was for scholars and men of letters, a cemetery of mystic and mysterious Muslims, but we do not know where his grave is."[8]

"1. Lübâbü'l-Muhaşşal fî Usûli'd-dîn: The work completed by Ibn Khaldun in Safar 752 (April 1351) is a shortened form of Fahreddin er-Râzî's el-Muhaşşal, and consists of an epilog and four chapters called bedîhiyyât, ma'lûmât, ilâhiyyât and sem'iyyât. When the author shortened al-Muhaşşal, he stated that he adhered to the text, and made some additions by using the Telhîs written by Nasîrüddîn-i Tûsî about this book, added very little from himself. Lübâbü'l-Muhaşşal is a remarkable work because Ibn Khaldûn wrote it in a young age under the influence of Ábilî, his teacher.. The original manuscript was translated into Spanish by Luciano Rubio and it is in the Escurial Library (number 1614) in Spain, besides, it was published by Refik al-Acem in Beirut in 1995 and by Abbas M. H. Süleyman in Alexandria in 1996."[9] "**2.Şifâü's-Sâ'il li-Tehzîbi'l-Mesail:** There is no information about this book, neither in the Ibnu'l al-Hatib's, nor in Ibn Khaldun's own works. Some North African authors such as Sheikh Zerrûk, Abdülkâdir al-Fashi, Abu Abdullah al-Misnawi said that he had a work with this name, Ali Abdulwahid Vafi and M. Abdulgani Hasan claimed that Shifâü's-Sâ'il belonged to the of Ibn Khaldun's father's uncle Abdurrahman . Contemporary researchers like Muhammad Abdullah İnan, Abdurrahman Bedevi and Muhammad b.Tâvît et-Tancî have argued that it belongs to Ibn Khaldun. This work of Ibn Khaldûn is considered to have been written before Muqaddimah in 1372-1374 while he was in Morocco. Ibrahim al-Shatibi (d. 790/1388) sent a letter to the Moroccan scholars to ask whether a person who wants to enter into mysticism should be bound to the sheikh, and Ibn Khaldûn answered this question with this book. Muhammed b. Tavît Et-Tancî published this work in Istanbul in 1957, and Süleyman Uludağ translated it into Turkish with the title of Tasavvufun Mahiyeti (The Content of Mysticism) and published in Istanbul in 1977. "[10]

8 Monteil, *Muqaddimah,* , page.29.
9 Uludağ, *TDV Encyclopedia of Islam.,* page.541.
10 Uludağ, *TDV Encyclopedia of Islam*., page.541-542.

3. Kitâbü'l-'İber (Kitâbü Tercemâni'l-'İber) ve Dîvânû'l Mübtede-i ve'l-Haber fî Eyyâmî'l-'Arab ve'l-'Acem ve'l-Berber ve Men-âşarahüm mîn-zevi'l-sultâni'l-ekber:

This work of Ibn Khaldun, which has qualification of world history, consists of three books named preface, introduction and "Muqaddimah" and seven volumes. In the introduction the author made a description about science of history and told his own understanding of history, the importance of the history, and research about how to write history, mistakes of historians, the false opinions they had and their reasons. Ibn Khaldun, who has established a new and original scientific discipline named "Science ofHuman Prosperity" and no one made any research on this field before himself and has not benefited from anyone while establishing this science, gives healthy information about his aim and the method he pursues to achieve it. The first book of Ibn Khaldun's famous work al-'Iber known as Muqaddimah consists of this preface and introduction. Ibn Khaldûn did not give this name to Muqaddimah, one of the most original works of Islam and even world's history of thought, which gave Ibn Khaldun a rightful reputation,The six main divisions of al-'Iber 's first volume is referred to as Muqaddimah in time. This first book has often been copied separately from other books."[11]

"The work was later translated into several languages and published many times. The second book of al-'Iber tells the history of nations mainly Arabs, such as Nabatîs, Assyrians, Persians, Jews, Ancient Egyptians, Greeks, Greeks, Turks and Franks, tribes and dynasties from the beginning until the time of Ibn Khaldun. In this book which constitutes the second and fifth volumes of the work, Ibn Khaldun briefly told the history of the Prophet, Hulefây-i Rashidîn, Umayyads and Abbasids, other Muslims in the world of Eastern Islam. While Ibn Khaldun wrote this part of el-'İber, which has not been accepted so authentic, he extensively was content to convey the information given by historians such as Teberi and Mes'udi. However, in this part, there are some nice analyses, reasonable instructions and realistic interpretations. In al-'Iber, Ibn Khaldûn, who did not tell the events in chronological order like Tabari, told the events according to their subjects and times like Belâzîrî and Mes'ûdî, it is an arguable subject that whether he interpreted historical events in a way that is appropriate and criticized in accordance with the principles told in Muqaddimah, and whether he applied them to his theory of history philosophy. The third book of al- 'Iber' is a North African (Maghrib) history that tells the history of the Berbers and the Zenatelis, and they are the sixth and seventh volume of the work. In this part, Ibn Khaldun gives valuable information about the history of the Maghrib, where the Eastern Islamic historians do not

11 Uludağ, *TDV Encyclopedia of Islam*., page.542.

give enough information in their works because they do not have much information. In addition, much of this information is based on personal observations, verbal rumors, and some documents that did not exist in these days. Ibn Khaldûn added his biography under the title of "al-Tarîf bi'bni Haldûn müellif hâze'l-kitâb" in the last volume of al-'Iber. In the beginning, this part of his life, which was told up to the year 797 (1395), he considered as an supplementary of al-',Iber (in the supplementary of el-'Iber, in the postscript of Muqaddimah in 1322(1904)), and he reconsidered this work and he wrote the part of his life until 807 (1405). Ibn Khaldun, in its final form, considered "et-Tarîf" as a different book, he called it "et-Ta'rîf bi'bni Haldûn mü'elli fi'1-kitab and-rihletüh ğarben and şarken '. This expanded form of the work was published by Tanci in Cairo in 1951. "[12]

Nomadic Life and Settled Life

According to Ibn Khaldun, social life is inevitable. He expresses this with these sentences. They say that "Social life is an inevitable necessity; philosophers express this fact as follows: 'Human is a social being by his nature'. In other words, it is inevitable to live in a community and in society. This is the expression in their terminology, civilization; This is also what we mean by social life (by prosperity). This is explained as follows: The God has created humans in a nature that can only sustain life by feed, leading them to feed, and giving them the ability to do what it takes to feed. However, as an individual, the power of a single person is inadequate in meeting the need for nutrition and finding the materials to sustain life. For example, even if we accept that people will only live with some wheat per day, they will still have to pass through the stages of grinding and flouring wheat, making dough and baking. In order to do this three things, a lot of goods and tools are needed, and for these goods and tools some mastership such as blacksmithing and pottery, are needed."[13]

"Even if we accept that wheat can be consumed in the same way as grains, without doing all these work, the work to be done to make that wheat is not than the above. Like planting and harvesting the wheat, and making grains from it. All of these require more tools and industries than the above. A single person can not overcome all of these or some. But then the power must be united. Thus, each individual who unites the power gains the need to continue his or her life. Thanks to helping each other, they get a lot more power than they need. In the same way, every individual needs help from other people to defend himself/herself. Because, while The God gave the livings their abilities, he gave much more power to the many

12 Uludağ, *TDV Encyclopedia of Islam*., page.542.

13 Ibn Khaldun, Ebu Zeyd Veliyyuddin Abdurrahman b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Hasen el-Hadrami el Mağribi et-Tunisi, *Muqaddimah*, trans: Halil Kendir, Marmara Belediyeler Birliği Kültür Yay., İstanbul, t.y., page. 69.

wild animals than human power. For example, a horse's power is much more than a human being, the same is true for the donkey and the ox, the power of the lion and the elephant is many times greater than that of the human being. "[14]

"If people do not help each other, they can not meet their nutritional needs to survive, and they can not defend themselves. Because they do not have the necessary weapons, they would be bait for animals and they would be vanished. But since they help each other, they meet their nutritional needs as well as the weapons they need to defend themselves. And so the wisdom of God will be realized about continuing their lives and protecting their generations. "[15]

"So, for a person such a social life is an inevitable necessity. Otherwise, their existence will not continue, and as the caliphs of God on earth, they will not make the earth and build up the land. All of this is the content of social life that we consider as the subject of this knowledge. "[16]

Thus, Ibn Khaldun, who considers life in society as a necessity, explains how people have different lifestyles because of their preference for different ways of living and their kinds. "The way that society's lifestyles are different, is because they have different ways to maintain their life and to earn their keep. People come together for the purpose of helping to meet their very basic needs more than to meet their luxury needs. Some human communities use agriculture and some use breeding to benefit from their products, animals like sheep, cow, goat, bee and silkworm, to earn their keep and to maintain their lives Those who earn their livelihood with agriculture and breeding are obliged to have nomadic life in rural areas. Because they can find large areas where they can plant seeds and feed their animals in rural areas, not in the cities. Therefore, the living of these people in some places is an inevitable condition for them and they come to help each other to meet the necessities of food shelter and warming that can only sustain their livelihood and survive. "[17]

"If those who sustain their lives improve upon these situations and reach a level of prosperity above their essential needs, it will lead them to settled down, and to live in large houses where they can have better nourishment, clothing and other needs which do not need to help each other, and to live in big cities and towns. Then, when abundance and possibilities become even greater, they begin to eat the most delicious food, to wear the finest dress made of pure silk, to build high buildings and mansions and to decorate them in the most beautiful way. When their power reach the peak,

14 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.69-70.
15 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.70.
16 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.70.
17 İbn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.169.

they build big palaces in which there are waters and pools in them, and they decorate them in a luxury style and they use clothes, beds, pots and pans and other goods which are suitable for this luxurious living. These are civilized or in other words prosperous people. They are people living in cities and cities that we tell civilized people. Some of these people provide their livelihood by industry and others by trade. Their gains and lives are higher and more comfortable than those who live in rural areas. Because their earnings are above the level that meets their essential needs and they live according to their earnings. It is understood from all these that nomadic life and urban life are inevitable situation. "[18]

Ibn Khaldun declares that nomadic life is older and more primitive than urban life and that the rural areas are the basis of social life and that the cities are their extensions. "We talked about the fact that those who has nomadic life have nothing to do with it, just because they are in a position to meet their essential needs. Likewise, we have said that in cities, those living in civilized life are able to meet their complementary and luxurious needs beyond the essential needs. There is no doubt that it complements its essential needs and is earlier priority than luxury needs because if necessity is a root and complementation is a branch made of this root. In this respect the rural areas and nomadic life is more important than the cities and the city life and it is the basis of them. Because the first thing a person will demand is their basic needs. After they get their basic needs they head towards complementary needs and luxury. The roughness of the nomadic life comes before the kindness of the civilization. Because of that we see that the cities as a result of the nomadic life developing towards it.

"Whenever there is a comfortable life, abundance and luxury in the life of a man, he finds himself desiring to go to his city, and this is the situation of all nomadic tribes. And townsman does not want to go to the rural areas if he/she is not necessary or if he/she is incapable of living like city people."[19]

"We can investigate the situation of any city people in order to understand that nomadic life is basis of cities and comes before it. When we make such a research, we see that most of the people of that city came from the rural areas and villages around the city. Because after these people have reached a certain richness, they have settled down in the city and they started to live with the luxury and comfort of city life. It shows that city life comes from nomadic life. On the other hand, nomadic life and city life are different in themselves, a neighborhood may be larger than another, a tribe larger than another, likewise, a city may be larger and more crowded than another. Thus, it clarified that we lived city life after we reached basic needs and we had wealth and luxury life possibilities, and the wealth and luxury life

18 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.170.
19 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page 173.

comes after reaching basic needs, so we understood that very well nomadic life is older than city life. "[20]

Ibn Khaldun says the following about nomadic people to be close to the charity and goodness. "The reason for this is that as long as the human soul continues to be the first, to be above nature, he/she is ready to accept the things that the first nature know and are familiar with. The Prophet said: 'every people are born to Islam, then his parents make him Jewish, make him Christian or make him Zoroastrian.' It is known that human soul is getting closer to goodness and evil as much as it gets away from one of them, and after that it is hard to get it. If the human soul gets used to goodness and charity and if they become natural capability, he/she gets away from evil and it becomes hard for him/her to make bad things. The same is true for those who get used to evil."[21]

Because the townsmen are busy with world beauties, pleasure and entertainment and they satisfied their lust, their human soul is dirty and this dirtiness makes the people get away from charity and good works. Even their feelings of embarrassment are gone. You see that many of them swears and use very bad words near their elders and their familiars, and you will see that the feeling of embarrassment does not keep them from it. Because the ugly and the bad things they have made verbally and actually are normal things for them."[22]

"Although nomadic people are having the world's pleasure, they are not in a position to live in abundance and luxury like townsmen, it is only to meet their essential needs, not to satisfy their pleasures and lusts. Their habits about their works and treatments are according to this rate. Hence, the evils and unpopular habits they have are very few, according to the townsmen. As a consequence, the nomadic people are closer to their original untouched nature, and they are also far from the evil and ugly things that are caused by too much natural capability because of evil. It is also easier for them to get rid of bad habits than townsmen. After all these things, city life is the last point of social life and the place where it turns into deterioration; so,that is clear that this is the ultimate point of evil and the farthest point to goodness. In the same way, it is clear that nomadic people are closer to goodness than townsmen."[23]

In addition, Ibn Khaldun tells in detail about how nomadic people are more courageous than townsmen. This is because the townsmen get used to comfort and luxury life, they live in abundance and blessings, and the safety of their lives and property have been given to the administrators

20 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.174.
21 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.175.
22 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.175.
23 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.175.-176

who govern themselves. The townsmen sleep comfortably behind the walls without fear and anxiety that protect them from others. They even do not carry weapons. Even, they did not carry weapons during some generations, they are like women and children whom protection was provided by head of the house. This situation became a very normal thing for them. And nomadic people themselves fulfill the task of protecting themselves because they live in loneliness outside the cities where they are far away from the society and they are not behind the walls in which they feel secure. Neither they give this job to others, nor they trust others about this matter. They carry weapons every time and constantly they watch and control around them. They do not fall into a deep and comfortable sleep. They are always on alert and nap in their assembly or on their ankles. They incline their ear to all voices, husky or scary. They walk around on the deserts, relying on their own strength and power. Courage has become a morality and nature for them to apply when they need it. "[24]

Ibni Khaldun tells us about the fact that how governors of the townsmen, who has to bear them, will affect their power, strength and honour. Nobody has their own administration. The number of emirs and directors who has the people's administration in their hands is less than other people. In general, people are under someone else's administration and this is inevitable. If the governors are good and fair, people will keep their courage or cowardice in their own personality, trusting that the people under that administration will not be subjected to pressure because there will be no unfair provisions and prohibitions that people will have to endure, in such a situation, daring and courage become part of their nature and they do not have any emotion except this. But if the administrators and their administrations are based on oppression, subjugation and fear, then the strength and courage of the people are broken because of the inertia and laziness of the people of the oppressed people. If the administrations are based on punishment and cruelty, then the courage of people will be abandoned completely. Because if the people are oppressed and if they can not defend themselves against oppression, this puts them in a bad situation to lose their courage and strong personalities. Because of all these reasons, the Nomadic Arabs who live far away from the society are far more courageous and self-confident than those who live under the rule of the administrators in cities. Likewise, in science and vocational training, we see that those, who are under the supervision of the governess', have lost much of their courage and nearly they can not defend themselves.. This is also the same for the students who learn science from great masters and imams at their majestic assemblies."[25]

24 Ibn Khaldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.178.
25 Ibn Haldun, *Muqaddimah*, page.179-181.

Ferdinand Tönnies Sociology and Community / Society Distinction

What has been told so far is about Ibn Khaldun's understanding of the nomadic life and settled life that is to say civilization. However, Ferdinand Tönnies, a modern sociologist, made a new distinction about this issue and his distinction was like the distinction of Ibn Khaldun. In Gesellschaft Distinction, Tönnies Gemeinschaft made this distinction on a modern level exactly as Ibn Khaldun did and he re-explained the difference between being a community and being a society with an in-depth analysis. "Ferdinand Tönnies lived between 1855 and 1936. Ferdinand Tönnies was born in Germany as the son of a farmer, studied philology, philosophy, theology, archeology and art history and worked at the University of Kiel. His most important work is the Community and Society (Gemeinschaft und Gessellschaft), published in 1887. Tönnies, who is mainly concerned with social change, crime and suicide, is regarded as one of the founders of sociology. "[26]

Without knowledge about Tönnies' understanding of sociology, it is not possible for us to comment on what the Community and the Society distinction means and what is the relation between Ibn Khaldun's nomadic life and settled life distinction. Tönnies' understanding of sociology can be briefly summarized as follows. "Tönnies tried to distinguish sociology from other disciplines, especially biology and psychology, by describing the field of sociology's work as the interaction between the subjects of the active human being. He, like his contemporaries, was interested in examining important events such as industrialization and urbanization. Especially he tried to examine the urban-industrial societies, that emerged from traditional societies, in terms of differences in social relations and interaction. Tönnies divided sociology into two fields: General Sociology and Special Sociology, and then divided these fields into subfields. General sociology is a sociology that discuss all human relations as a whole. General Sociology is divided into three subfields; (a) Social Biology that examines the relationship between human beings and other biological organisms in biological terms in the evolution process, (b) Social Anthropology, which examines human producing culture, and (c) Social Psychology, which examines the subjective actions of people and the inner workings of groups. According to Tönnies, Private Sociology divided into three. These subfields are (a) Pure / Theoretical Sociology, (b) Empirical Sociology, and (c) Experimental Sociology. Tönnies thinks that both the empirical work and the theoretical work of applied sociology require a concept system and he gives pure / theoretical sociology the task of creating these concept

26 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

systems, in short, making conceptual definitions and explanations. Pure / theoretical sociology presents a relatively static view of society, while applied sociology interested in social change. "[27]

"According to Tönnies, pure / theoretical sociology is a logical system consisting of ideal type concepts and social beings (social entities-sozialewesenheiten) in static state. The keystones of this system are the ideal type, community and society concepts based on natural will and rational will. Tönnies divides the theoretical sociology into five fields, indicating that empirical social phenomena need to be defined and understood in such a system, as in other areas where mathematics is necessary."[28]

"1-Conceptualization of Community / Society: The concepts of community and society are ideal types created for the "purpose of comparing the traditional rural lifestyle with the modern urban lifestyle" of Tönnies , an analytical purpose. These concepts will be mentioned again in the next chapter. "[29]

"2-Theory of Relations or Social Entities: Tönnies differentiates social entities by using the concepts of community and society. Social entities are (a) social relations (b) collectives and (c) social organizations or companies. Social relations arise from the voluntary physical relations among persons; but they are shaped by the will of people who are out of this relationship. In this respect, there is a consciousness that there is some mutual rights and obligations among the participants. Collectivities, such as ethnic groups, states, or classes, are communities that can not express the will of the individuals who make up themselves through a single individual or a specific individual who will represent them. And social organizations or companies can express the will of the individuals who make up themselves by one or more individuals who will represent them. "[30]

"3- Social Norms: Tönnies states that there are three types of social norms that regulate social relations: (1) order, (2) law, and (3) morals. The norms called order are the most universal norms, the social will which is the morals and the rule of law is much closer to the individual thought than the order norms. "[31]

---

27 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

28 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

29 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

30 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

31 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

"4- Social Values: Tönnies divides social values into three groups. These are; economic, political and intellectual / spiritual values. According to Tönnies, all social values are shaped by social and individual will, and the reference points of all are social relations, collectives and social organizations. Tönnies states that with the development of trade and capitalism, social values have changed as well. "[32]

"5- Human Endeavor Systems (The Theory of Social Institutions): These systems can be seen as the forms in which the social values of the three groups are in the Community and Society. In this respect, economic systems include home industry, urban economy, agriculture, national economy and world economy. Political systems are law, protection and constitutions. Intellectual / spiritual systems are religion, art, philosophy, science and education systems. "[33]

"The Tönnies' ***Community / Society*** study explains the effort to understand the great social changes and transformations that have taken place along with industrialization and urbanization. Tönnies, conceptualizing the traditional lifestyle in agricultural societies and the urban modern lifestyle as contradictory social relations, tries to explain and compare these two lifestyles as ideal types with the concepts of community / society.[34]

Tönnies states to the existence of human will on the basis of all societies and bases the community / society concepts on two different types of human will. According to Tönnies, all societies ground either on natural will or rational will, but certainly on human will. Tönnies states that the concept of human will has a two-way meaning. He states that these two wills have an inner whole, the first is a real / natural will related to humor and character, and the second one is a conceptual / artificial one that depends on the ability to differentiate and select the most appropriate instrument to achieve a specific goal. Tönnies defines the first type of will as the natural will (wesenwille) and the second type as the rational will (küwille), and argues that human will will certainly come from one of these two types. Since life itself is the form of reality that the thinking belongs to, natural will is the psychological equivalent of the human body or the principle of life unity. On the other hand, rational will is a product of thinking, but it can have a reality according to the thinking individual. Thus, Tönnies, extending the sociological perspective including social psychology, states

32 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

33 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

34 http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

that in the communities real and necessary will, that is 'natural will', is characteristic and in the societies conceptual, artificial, optional 'rational will' is characteristic."[35]

The concept of community (gemeinschaft), which is also translated into Turkish as group, is a type of society in which Tönnies relates to traditional rural communities, personal, close and continuous human relations between people connected in family or friendship relations. Tönnies describes societies in which the traditional rural lifestyle dominates everything, in other words the communities, as follows; ascribed status is in the foreground, both geographical and social mobility are limited, the basic social control mechanisms of the family and the church constitute the basic social control mechanisms and that life is settled by certain values and ethics and everyone is connected to each other by blood or marriage. Individuals in the community are in a close, natural and emotional relationship with each other. The concept of community is based on family house relations with blood relation, affinity, friendship based on idea unity and neighborliness based on settlement unity. In this frame, the communities; are societies in which they have affinity, friendship and neighborliness, a common lifestyle based on common interests and a strong social solidarity, rather than individual interests,based on unwritten norms that are basically derived from traditions and customs, economically based on agriculture and the religion and art dominates intellectually."[36]

"But as a result of industrialization, urbanization and trade, people's needs and demands have changed. The communities began to weaken and the sense of community began to disappear. And they have begun to leave their places to societies in which the interests of the individual community are in the foreground rather than the interests of the common community, written norms prepared by the legislative, relations in society are based on contract, based on industrial production economically, based on science intellectually. In other words, the source of the change from the communities to the societies is the transition from agriculture to industry, the development of capitalism and free trade, and the rise of modern nation states. According to Tönnies, this change brought the transformation of the wills of individuals from natural will to rational will. "[37]

"Sometimes the concept of society (gesellschaft), which is translated into Turkish as a society or unity, is a concept that includes everything that is

35 Http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

36 Http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

37 Http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

the opposite of the concept of community. About society concept, Tönnies states that societies in which industry and trade dominate modern city life, people build out-rational, economical relationships with other people rather than close emotional relations and live a faster, more competitive and dynamic life than the community. The community is a concept that characterizes the modern city life, which includes many life styles, and the artificial and transient relations that are far from personalities of this life and it does not have a single dominant culture like society, Tönnies thinks that human groups are evolving **from communities,** which are being organized around the family and the village, its economy based on agriculture largely and its political life is local, **towards societies**, which are being organized around big cities and nation sates, its economy based on industry and trade. According to Tönnies, the weakening of the community created the conditions, rationalism, bad habits and contractual relations for the development of industrial capitalism, and also increased the crime and suicide. In other words, according to Tönnies, it is a negative situation for the communities to weaken and leave their place to the societies. Tönnies implies that industrialization destroyed communities, thus, destroyed the original foundations of civilization; but, according to him the community will reborn after the industrial society. As we have seen, Tönnies uses the concepts of community and society as a means to analyze the evolution of people's cultures and developments as a whole, from the agricultural societies to the industrial society, and then to the social organization, in which the community will reappear, not just to compare two lifestyles."[38]

"Tönnies anticipated that class consciousness and class conflict would grow in the society, also he supported social reforms and socialism because he believed that a new way of life could be developed that would revive the community. Although Tönnies thinks that there will be an evolution form community towards society, he does not have a true evolution understanding about this subject; because Tönnies' thought about social evolution was influenced by both romantic and materialist as well as rational theories. For this reason, Tönnies thinks that communities have some features of community, some features of society. Although the concepts of community and society are basically concepts that are compared with traditional rural life and modern urban life, but they are concepts that are designed as ideal types, therefore, community and society type relations can be discriminated from each other also in the city. For example, the concept of community and society can be used to compare a workplace that is managed by a family and close relationships, and which is managed by professionals who do not know each other closely and whose relations are temporary and artificial. "[39]

38 Http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

39 Http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of access: 19.02.2018.

Reinterpretation of Nomadic Life / Settled Life and Community / Society Distinction

If we briefly summarize, Ibn Khaldun and Tönnies mean the same thing when they make the distinction of Nomadic Life / Settled Life or Community / Society. This is what they want to tell when they say nomadic people or community; rural people and social structures that people live in natural and indigenous environments. Also, when they say society or settled life; it is urbanized social structures. If it is possible to show a table in comparison with the general characteristics of these two social structures, we will see a table like the one below.

Nomadic People / Community / Rural People	Settled Life People / Society / Town People
1-Face to face primary relations are dominant.	1- Secondary complex relations are dominant.
2-They live in natural and indigenous way of life.	2-They live far away from natural life, they have artificial and unnatural life.
3-They often provide their own social defenses.	3. The state's law enforcement forces provide their social defenses.
4-Members are brave, honest but rude people.	4-Members are often cowardly, naive, gentle, sensitive but at the same time are play maker personalities.
5- Members mostly busy with livestock and agriculture.	5- Members mostly engage in different occupations such as industry.
6- The members are closer to charity and goodness and to inner person.	6-Their members' spirit is destroyed because they are urban society, they are used to luxury and prosperity, and they are prone to psychological disorders and even suicide.

In fact, in different times and lands, Ibn Khaldun and Tönnies have spoken the same truths in a different style. Apparently, as a result, the thing to be done is doing deeper readings on sociology. If these readings are done, sociology, a good instrument of science, will serve us at a much better level.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Http://sosyolojisi.com/ferdinand-tonnies-sosyolojisi/424.html, Date of Access: 19.02.2018.

Ibn Khaldun, Ebu Zeyd Veliyyuddin Abdurrahman b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Hasen el-Hadrami el Mağribi et-Tunisi, et-Ta'rif (Bilim ve Siyaset Arasında Hatıralar), trans: Vecdi Akyüz, Dergah Publications İstanbul, 2017.

Ibn Khaldun, Ebu Zeyd Veliyyuddin Abdurrahman b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Muhammed b. Hasen el-Hadrami el Mağribi et-Tunisi, Muqaddimah, trans: Halil Kendir, Marmara Belediyeler Birliği Kültür Pub., İstanbul, t.y.

Monteil, Vincent, "Preface", Muqaddimah, translation: Sevim Belli , Onur Pub., Ankara, 2014, Vol:I.

Uludağ, Süleyman; "İbn Hladun Maddesi", TDV İslam Ansiklopedisi, Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı Yayınları, Ankara, 1999. Vol: XIX.

GESTALTTHERAPIE MIT KINDERN

Enil Afşaroğlu-EREN[1]

ABSTRACT

According to Gestalt Psychotherapy approach, individuals are unique, they have their own dispositions, and this is mainly due to the natural diversity of mankind. Gestalt Psychotherapy deals with the growth and maturation processes of individuals. This approach is widely used for adult psychological disorders and personal development, however, with differences in practice, it can also be applied to children. In the light of existing literature, this review discusses the application of Gestalt Psychotherapy to children by differentiating it from adult applications, and investigates therapy techniques and the perspective of Gestalt Psychotherapy approach for diagnosis and psychopathology in the childhood period.

Keywords: Gestalt therapy with children, psychopathology in childhood, Gestalt therapy diagnostics.

ZUSAMMENFASSUNG

Bei der Gestalttherapie geht es um Wachstum und Reifung von Individuen, weil für die Gestalttherapie die Einzigartigkeit eines jeden Menschen sowie jedes Anderssein zur natürlichen Vielfalt der Menschheit gehört. Gestaltpsychotherapie kann sowohl mit Erwachsenen als auch mit Kindern bei psychischen Erkrankungen durchgeführt werden. In der Arbeit mit Kindern gibt es im Vergleich zur Therapie mit Erwachsenen einige Unterschiede und Besonderheiten. Hier wird diskutiert, wie Gestalttherapie bei Kindern angewendet wird, wie sie sich von Erwachsenen unterscheidet, Therapietechniken, Gestalttherapie im Kontext von Kinderdiagnose und Psychopathologie.

Schlüsselwörter: Gestalttherapie mit Kindern, Psychische Störungen in der Kindheit, Gestalttherapeutische Diagnostik.

1 Dr. Öğr. Üyesi, Lefke Avrupa Üniversitesi, Psikoloji Bölümü, eafsaroglu@eul.edu.tr

1. EINLEITUNG

Bei der Gestalttherapie geht es um Wachstum und Reifung von Individuen, weil für die Gestalttherapie die Einzigartigkeit eines jeden Menschen sowie jedes Anderssein zur natürlichen Vielfalt der Menschheit gehört. Fritz und Laura Perls waren die Begründer der Gestalttherapie. Die Entwicklung der Gestalttherapie beginnt mit F. und L. Perls Beobachtung des Heranwachsens ihrer eigenen Kinder (Clarkson, 1989). Leider kann die Gestalttherapie kein differenziertes entwicklungstheoretisches Modell bieten, das für die Arbeit mit Kindern wichtig wäre. Deswegen wird oft auf die psychoanalytische Entwicklungstheorie zurückgegriffen. Es gibt Begriffe von Sigmund Freud, die für Gestalttherapie grundlegend sind. Ein Beispiel dafür ist der „Widerstand" in der Psychotherapie. Nach der Psychoanalyse soll der Therapeut den Widerstand des Klienten überwinden können. Dagegen fragt sich die Gestalttherapie, ob in der Therapie der Widerstand des Klienten aufgelöst werden darf. Es ist wichtig, den Klienten zu ermutigen, sich des Widerstandes, den er in der Therapie zeigt bewusst zu sein und ihn zu forschen (Doubrawa & Blankertz, 2010).

Nach der Gestalttherapie ist der Mensch fähig, Krisensituationen und Stressoren zu bewältigen. Es gibt aber Situationen, die eine Selbstheilung verhindern, wie zum Beispiel eine Krise zwischen den Eltern, Alkohol- oder andere Abhängigkeitsprobleme in der Familie, Gewalterfahrungen, Missbrauchserfahrungen, Krankheit oder Tod in der Familie oder im Umfeld, eine eigene schwere Erkrankung, Geburt eines Geschwisterkindes, Scheidung der Eltern, Tod eines Haustiers, Umzug, Trennung von einem besten Freund, einem Schulwechsel usw. Ziel der Gestalttherapie mit Kindern, ist die Entwicklung von Gewahrsein (ebenso wie in der Gestalttherapie mit Erwachsenen). In der Gestalttherapie soll Klienten vermittelt werden, das Gewahrsein für die eigenen inneren, als auch für die von ihm wahrgenommenen äußeren Prozesse zu vertiefen (Doubrawa & Blankertz, 2010). In der Arbeit mit Kindern im Vergleich zur Therapie mit Erwachsenen, gibt es einige Unterschiede und Besonderheiten. Kinder verfügen nur über eingeschränkte sprachliche Ausdrucksmöglichkeiten. Deswegen werden in der Intervention oft nonverbale therapeutische Methoden verwendet. Die Mündigkeit als ein Ziel der Gestalttherapie, ist bei Kindern nur erreichbar, wenn die Kinder in der Therapie bereits als mündige Wesen verstanden und angesprochen werden. Therapeuten müssen alle Verhaltensweisen und Meinungen der Kinder während der Therapie sehr ernst nehmen. Ein wesentlicher Unterschied der Gestalt-Kindertherapie im Vergleich zu Erwachsenentherapie ist, dass Kinder sehr oft nicht aus eigener Entscheidung zur Therapie kommen, sondern von den Eltern (oder

Schule etc.) geschickt werden. Der Auftraggeber der Therapie des Kindes (Eltern, Schule etc.) soll in den therapeutischen Prozess eingebunden werden. Danach gilt es als Therapeut/in, ein eigenständiges Arbeitsbündnis mit dem Kind zu finden und zu schließen. Nach Berücksichtigung dieser Punkte, kann mit der dialogischen therapeutischen Arbeit angefangen werden, bei der die Kinder die Möglichkeit haben, ihr Innerstes zum Ausdruck zu bringen (Burr, 2001 & Oaklanders, 2007).

Burr (2001) spricht weiterhin über die Besonderheiten der kindlichen Entwicklung, die für die Kindertherapie bedeutsam sind. Kinder sind bewegungsorientiert, Erwachsene hingegen sprachorientiert. Kinder haben im Gegensatz zu Erwachsenen weiterhin ein hohes Entwicklungstempo. Das Glaubenssystem und Selbstkonzept von Kindern ist flexibel, während Erwachsene über feste Glaubenssätze und ein festes Selbstkonzept verfügen. In Bezug auf den Erfahrungsschatz sind Kinder den Erwachsenen unterlegen. Weiterhin orientieren sich Kinder im Hier und Jetzt; Erwachsene sind oft vergangenheits- und zukunftsorientiert. Den kontextbezogenen, einfachen und konkreten Denkweisen von Kindern stehen die kontextübergreifenden, komplexen und abstrakten Denkweisen von Erwachsenen gegenüber.

Ohne die Mitarbeit der Eltern ist Kindertherapie undenkbar, da Kinder in allen Lebensfragen und ihrer Entscheidungsfähigkeit von Erwachsenen abhängig sind. Sie haben noch nicht die nötigen physischen, kognitiven, emotionalen, sozialen, moralischen und rechtlichen Voraussetzungen, um ohne Versorgung und Pflege der Eltern sich selbst zu genügen (Oerter & Montada, 2002).

Nach Miller (2008) akzeptieren Kinder die von ihren Eltern unbewusst zugeteilten Aufgaben. Sie fühlen in irgendeiner Weise, was die Eltern von ihnen erwarten, weil sie noch nicht gelernt haben, sich emotional den Erwartungen der Eltern zu entziehen. Deswegen brauchen Kinder die innere Zustimmung der Eltern für den Veränderungsprozess.

Gestalttherapeuten haben keine eigene entwicklungspsychologische Theorie entwickelt, waren sich aber darin einig, dass die ersten Lebensjahre eine bedeutsame Phase in der kindlichen Entwicklung darstellen, in der zentrale Fähigkeiten erworben werden.

2. Gestalttherapeutische Diagnostik

In der Gestalttherapie wird die Diagnostik und Therapie nicht voneinander getrennt. Es wird eine phänomenologische und dialogische Vorgehensweise postuliert. Durch den diagnostischen Prozess soll nicht nur die Informationsgewinnung erreicht werden, sondern auch eine hypothesengeleitete Beziehungsanbahnung (Bauling & Bauling, 2002).

Gestaltdiagnostische Modelle beziehen sich auf den Kontaktzyklus, die Kontaktgrenze als auch auf die Kontaktfunktionen bzw. Dysfunktionen im Kontaktzyklus (Doubrawa, E. & Blankertz, 2010).

Bevor es mit dem Kind oder mit der Familie mit Kind Kontakt aufgenommen wird, wird ein Erstgespräch allein mit den Eltern (oder relevanten Bezugspersonen) geführt, damit Informationen über den Entwicklungsstatus, die biographische Anamnese, die eigene psychischen Befindlichkeit der Eltern, den vorherrschenden Erziehungsstilen und über die Paarbeziehung gewonnen werden und somit die hypothesengeleitete Beziehungsanbahnung aufgebaut werden kann. Für die therapeutische Arbeit ist es sehr wichtig, die Dynamik der Familie zu verstehen, d.h. wie sich das intrapsychische System des Kindes mit denen der Eltern und Geschwister konstituiert und welche Wechselwirkungen der Symptomatik vorliegen (Aichinger, 2002). Selbstverständlich steht eine Individualdiagnostik der Eltern in der Therapie mit Kindern nicht im Vordergrund, jedoch ist eine grobe diagnostische Einschätzung notwendig, weil nur darüber der Einfluss auf die Entwicklung des Kindes verstanden werden kann.

Nach Blankertz und Doubrawa (2005, S. 56) werden drei Forderungen der gestalttherapeutischen Diagnostik formuliert:

- Die Diagnose darf nicht stigmatisierend sein.
- Die Diagnose sollte dem Klienten nicht als undurchschaubare Expertenmeinung vermittelt werden.
- Die Diagnose sollte eine Unterstützung für den Wachstums- und Heilungsprozess sein.

Baulig und Baulig (2002, S. 69-70) benennen die Faktoren der diagnostischen Strukturierung wie folgt:

- „*Wie erlebt das Kind sich und seine Umwelt? (Glaubenssätze)*
- *Wie fühlt sich das Kind im Therapieraum mit den Therapeuten? (Emotionalität)*
- *Wie nimmt das Kind Kontakt auf? (Dialog- und Kontaktfähigkeiten)*
- *Welche Rolle erhält die Mutter/ der Vater in der neuen Situation? (Verselbständigungskompetenz)*
- *Mit welchen Ausdruckskompetenzen teilt es sich mit? (Ausdrucksrepertoire)*
- *Was erwartet das Kind vom Therapeuten: Oma- Rolle, Papa – Ersatz? (Bedürfnisstruktur)*

- *Wie geht das Kind mit Grenzen um? – Im Raum, mit Materialien, mit dem Therapeuten (Selbstregulationsfähigkeit)*
- *Inwieweit und mit welcher Ausdauer lässt sich das Kind auf der Spielebene ein? ADHS–Kinder wechseln oft die Spiel- und Ausdrucksebene (Konzentration und Aufmerksamkeit)*
- *Wie reagiert das Kind auf Veränderungen, z.B. am Anfang und am Ende der ersten Therapiestunden? (soziale – emotionale Flexibilität)*
- *Wie teilt sich das Kind am Ende der ersten Therapiestunden den Eltern mit? (Bereitschaft zur Therapie)*"

3. Entwicklung der Psychischen Störungen in der Kindheit nach der Gestalttherapie

Nach Dreitzel (2004) spielt die gesunde Konfluenz des Kindes bis zum Abschluss der Pubertät, mit seiner stützenden und schützenden Umgebung und seiner relativen Autonomie bei der Entwicklung von „Frühen Störungen" eine große Rolle. Ist die Autonomie chronisch eingeschränkt, wird das Kind nach innen extendieren, sich einen inneren Raum schaffen, und erscheint nach „Außen" angepasst. Nach Dreitzel (2004) entsteht **ein schizoides Erleben**, wenn sich das Kind vom eigenen Selbst und von der Realität der Außenwelt entfremdet. Fehlt es dem Kind an notwendiger schützender Konfluenz, entsteht mangelndes Vertrauen in Beziehungen, was ein **narzisstisches Erleben** begünstigt. Ist die Mutter ansprüchlich-bedürftig und der Vater emotional unzugänglich, kann dies im Erziehungsverhalten zur Unfähigkeit, gehäuften Ambivalenzen und Spaltungen führen. Das verursacht für das Kind ein **Borderline-Erleben** (Dreitzel, 2004).

Wenn Eltern keine Grenzen in der Erziehung ziehen können, kann das beim Kind in ein Zwangs-Erleben münden.

Van der Kolk (2002) definiert Trauma als ein Ereignis, das die psychischen und biologischen Bewältigungsmechanismen eines Menschen überfordert und nicht kompensiert werden kann. Jede Person, die ein Trauma erfahren hat, erlebt das auf seine eigene subjektive Art. Die persönliche Bewertung dessen, der Entwicklungsstand und die konstitutionellen Voraussetzungen (genetische Disposition, Temperament, Vulnerabilität) spielen eine wesentliche Rolle bei dem Erleben des Traumas.

Bei den Kindern, die früh und mehrfach traumatisiert wurden, können diese Phänomene beschrieben werden (Anger & Schulthess, 2008):

- Sie haben kein verlässliches Gefühl von sich und von anderen.
- Sie können sich nicht verlassen auf das, was sie selbst spüren oder andere ihnen anbieten.

- Es fehlt ihnen die Orientierung über sich und andere.
- Ihr Zeitgefühl ist irritiert.
- Sie haben oft Schlafstörungen, Albträume, Dunkelängste bis hin zu generalisierter Angstbereitschaft und Konzentrationsstörungen.

Das Kind erlebt durch die Traumatisierung die eigene Ich-Grenze massiv gestört und bedroht. Es erlebt die Ich-Grenze, als Schutz des Selbst, nicht mehr gesichert und die Umwelt als nicht hilfreich und unterstützend, sondern zerstörerisch und dysfunktional. Das traumatisierte Kind versucht, sich mit Vermeidungsstrategien zu schützen und somit die Angst zu minimieren. In der Gestalttherapie werden diese Vermeidungsstrategien *Konfluenz*, *Introjektion*, *Projektion*, *Retroflektion* und *Deflektion* genannt (Dreitzel, H. P.,2004)).

Wenn das Kind eine Kontaktgrenze nicht wahrnehmen will, weil die Erfahrung und das Erleben der Verschiedenheit zu schmerzlich sind, entsteht Konfluenz. Perls versteht darunter das Fehlen der Kontaktgrenzen gegenüber der Umwelt. Das heißt, dass die Grenzen zwischen dem Selbst und den Anderen verschwimmen und das Dasein der Individuen voneinander abhängig wird (Perls, 2007).

Bei traumatisierten Kindern kann diese Abwehrstrategie besonders am Abend beobachtet werden, wenn die Kinder nicht einschlafen können. Häufig fällt es diesen Kindern sehr schwer, allein in ihrem Zimmer zu sein und sich ihren quälenden Gedanken auszusetzen. Traumatisierte Kinder mit Einschlaf- oder Albtraumproblemen haben beim Versuch des Einschlafens häufig sich wiederholende Gedanken oder Sätze von Bezugspersonen im Kopf, wie zum Beispiel: „Du bist ein schlechtes Kind, du bist schuldig, du bist eine Strafe für mich, wegen dir bin ich krank geworden usw." Derart Sätze können auch in den Alpträumen immer wieder auftauchen. Perls versteht unter Introjektion, „*die Struktur von Dingen zu erhalten, die man in sich aufgenommen hat, während der Organismus die Zerstörung fordert*" (Perls, 1989, S.139). Anhaltspunkte für Introjektionen sind, dass eine (diese) Botschaft sehr oft wiederholt und von Gefühlen begleitet wird. Wenn ein kleiner Junge beispielsweise seine Ängste ausdrücken und weinen will, ihm jedoch anhaltend vermittelt wird: „Du bist ein Junge, du darfst nicht weinen, die Jungs weinen nicht. Du musst immer mutig sein und nicht wie ein Mädchen weinen", dann wird er dies irgendwann verinnerlichen und glauben, dass nur Mädchen Angst haben und weinen dürfen. Nicht nur von den Eltern, sondern auch von vielen anderen Menschen, der Gesellschaft, der Schule, vom Fernsehen können Introjekte aufgenommen werden. Die Haltungen, Werte und Einstellungen Anderer können übernommen werden, ohne sie entsprechend zu reflektieren bzw. zu „verdauen". Menschen mit verfestigten Introjekten, haben große Schwierigkeiten, ihre Bedürfnisse und

Wünsche wahrzunehmen. Für sie ist es weitaus wichtiger, die Erwartungen und Wünsche Anderer wahrzunehmen und zu erkennen (Zinker, 2005).

Die Vermeidungsstrategie der „Projektion" hilft dem Kind, die abgelehnten Anteile an die Umwelt weiterzugeben. In der Gestalttherapie wird die Projektion als die Verschiebung der eigenen Gefühle, Gedanken oder Überzeugungen auf eine andere Person oder auf ein anderes Objekte definiert. Wenn Bezugspersonen verurteilend, bestrafend und perfektionistisch veranlagt sind, kann die Art der Beziehungsgestaltung für das Kind zu eben dieser schöpferischen Anpassung (also Projektion) führen (Doubrawa & Blankertz; 2010).

In der Gestalttherapie bedeutet Retroflektion, dass aggressive Energie, die eigentlich auf die Umwelt bezogen ist, gegen die eigene Person gewendet wird. (Boeckh, 2006). Bei Kindern kann man Retroflektion in Form von Selbstverletzungstendenzen (z.B. ritzen) und autoaggressiven Handlungen beobachten. Wenn ein Kind in einem nicht funktionalen Familienleben aufwächst (zum Beispiel alkoholabhängige Eltern), zeigt sich anhand ihrer Auffälligkeiten die Retroflektion. Nach Perls (2007) richtet die Person, die diese Kontaktfunktion verinnerlicht hat, die Energie, die sie benötigt, um ihre Bedürfnisse zu stillen, anstatt auf die notwendigen Ziele auf sich selbst, um alles selbst/ in sich zu lösen. Bei Kindern wird diese Kontaktfunktion häufig über Nägelkauen, sich schneiden, Ausreißen der Haare usw. deutlich.

Wenn die Wünsche und Bedürfnisse des Kindes mehrfach nicht erfüllt, die sich daraus ergebenden negativen Folgen nicht beschwichtigt und die Enttäuschungen nicht wieder gut gemacht werden, gibt das Kind seine Bedürfnisse und Wünsche zwar nicht auf, akzeptiert jedoch, sie nicht auszusprechen. Seine Gedanken für sich zu behalten und seine Gefühle zu verbergen, ist dabei eine schöpferische Anpassung.

Kinder alkoholabhängiger Eltern sind ein gutes Beispiel dafür. Ihr auffälligstes persönliches Merkmal ist, dass sie zwar, auch in Beziehungen, geübt darin sind, alleine zu sein (schöpferische Anpassung), aber zu kämpfen haben, wenn es um das Miteinander geht. Ihre größte Schwierigkeit ist es, etwas zu fordern. Im Gegensatz zu ihrem ruhigen und gleichgültigen äußeren Anschein haben sie große Angst davor und sind sehr empfindsam bei Verlust und Trennung.

Wenn der direkte Kontakt mit dem Gegenüber vermieden und notwendigen Konflikten durch Ausweichen zu entgehen versucht wird, spricht man in der Gestalttherapie von *Deflektion* (Doubrawa & Blankertz; 2010).

In der Gestalttherapie bedeutet Deflektion, dass eine Person Energien mobilisiert und aktiv wird, ohne jedoch ihr Ziel zu erreichen, weil sie ohne mit sich in Kontakt zu sein handelt und sich nicht darauf fokussiert, was

sie erreichen will. Deflektion ist als eine Ablenkung von der emotionalen Bewältigung einer Situation zu verstehen.

Wenn Bezugspersonen die Bedürfnisse des Kindes nicht erfüllen können, schützt sich das Kind über Deflektion. Dies ist zum Beispiel häufig bei depressiven Bezugspersonen der Fall, da sie sich nicht effektiv um ihre Kinder kümmern und deren Bedürfnisse erfüllen können.

Ein Kind entwickelt diese Kontaktstrategie (Deflektion), wenn die Gefühle, Bedürfnisse, Wünsche oder Gedanken in der Kindheit missachtet wurden und wenn die Kinder wegen dieser Gedanken und Bedürfnisse beschuldigt oder bloßgestellt werden. Mit anderen Worten bedeutet Deflektion also die schöpferische Anpassung an Situationen, die sonst beim Individuum zu einem Verständnis von sich als einem „negativen Ich" und einem „wertlosen Ich" führen.

4. Der Gestalttherapeutische Prozess mit dem Kind

Es sollen die Hintergründe thematisiert werden, warum Eltern sich für eine Psychotherapie entschieden haben, wobei die Erwartungen und die Motivation der Eltern ins Zentrum gerückt werden, da dies für ein gemeinsames Arbeitsbündnis wesentlich ist (Derichs & Höger, 2005). Viele Therapeuten, vor allem Gestalttherapeuten und Systemische Therapeuten, die mit Kindern arbeiten, sind sich einig, dass Kinder die Symptomträger der Problematik des ganzen Familiensystems sind. Gestalttherapeutisch betrachtet ist es sehr wichtig, den Druck von der Symptomatik des Kindes zu nehmen. Die Symptome sollen als Figur im Vordergrund auf dem Boden des familiären Hintergrunds gesehen werden. Hiernach sollten die Ziele (auch deren Präzisierung und Hierarchisierung) erfragt werden. Das kann die Bewusstheit der Familie erhöhen. Ein Arbeitsbündnis mit dem Kind zu entwickeln, stellt einen weiteren wesentlichen therapeutischen Schritt dar. Wenn das Kind nicht zu klein ist, sollte es durch den/die Therapeuten/in angemessen über die vorgesehenen Behandlungsschritte informiert werden. Soweit möglich, ist es empfehlenswert, sich um das Einverständnis des Kindes zur Therapie zu bemühen. Ebenso wichtig ist, das Kind (unter Berücksichtigung seines kognitiven, emotionalen, sozialen und moralischen Entwicklungsstandes) über die Rahmenbedingungen der Therapie zu informieren. Das Kind sollte beispielsweise wissen, wie lange die Therapie ungefähr dauern wird. Auch der Datenschutz sollte mit dem Kind besprochen werden. Von besonderer Bedeutung hierbei ist, die Inhalte der Therapie nicht ohne Wissen des Kindes mit den Eltern zu besprechen und das Kind in alle wesentlichen Dinge einzubeziehen.

Im Sinne der Gestalttherapie können sich die Therapieziele im Laufe des Therapieprozess verändern, zum Beispiel dann, wenn das Kind in

der Therapie-Sitzung etwas anders verarbeiten will oder ein besonderes Bedürfnis hat. Dies wird therapeutischerseits akzeptiert.

Es ist auch wichtig, dass Therapeuten dem Kind die Rahmenbedingungen und Hilfestellungen für einen verinnerlichten „Safe Place" anbieten, in welchen es zu Symbolbehandlungen kommen kann. Die therapeutische Beziehung kann nur dort beginnen, wo die realen Grenzen auch existieren und das Kind die Abgegrenztheit seiner Existenz erleben darf (Katz-Bernstein, 2004).

Besonders bei traumatisierten Kindern ist der Aufbau von inneren und äußeren sicheren Plätzen oft der zentrale Therapieauftrag (Bauling & Bauling, 2002). Das wesentliche Ziel dabei ist, sich wieder sicher fühlen zu können und von Ohnmachtsgefühlen und Angst nicht überschwemmt zu werden. Nach Hartmann-Kottek (2004) sind Stabilisierungstechniken (wie der „sichere Ort") und Distanzierungstechniken ursprünglich aus der Gestalttherapie kommend und von anderen Traumatherapie-Richtungen übernommen wurden, wie zum Beispiel das EMDR von Shapiro.

Die sichere therapeutische Beziehung in einer sicheren therapeutischen Atmosphäre, in einem als sicher wahrgenommenen Therapieraum, ist Basis der therapeutischen Arbeit.

Da Kinder mehr handlungsorientiert als sprachorientiert sind, werden innerhalb der Diagnostik als auch innerhalb der Therapie sehr häufig Methoden, wie das Spiel, zeichnen, malen, Sandspiel, Symbolspiel, tanzen, kneten mit Plastilin und bauen verwendet.

Während der therapeutischen Arbeit mit Kindern schlägt Perls viele Therapietechniken vor: Ermutigen, körperliche Empfindungen wahrzunehmen und zu verstehen; Ermutigen, Sätze zu beginnen, die mit "Ich" beginnen; Feedback geben zu nonverbalen Verhaltensweisen; Ermutigen, Verantwortung für seine Handlungen zu übernehmen; Rollenspiel (ihnen erlauben, verschiedene Teile ihrer eigenes Selbst zu kontaktieren und auch mit Bindungspersonen kontaktieren) und Traumarbeit.

Nach der Gestalttherapie sind die Empfindungen, Positionen, Wahrnehmungen und Wünsche in der Kinderwelt sehr wichtig. Sie sind phänomenologisch erlebt werden und in der Traumarbeit kreative Konstrukte liefern. Traumarbeit hilft den Kindern für ihre inneren Äußerungen und dadurch können sie neue Strategien für ihre Gefühle wie Angst und Wut entwickeln (Blom, 2006).

Violet Oaklander betont bei der Arbeit mit Kindern die Bedeutsamkeit der Prinzipien der Gestalttherapie. Da Oaklander (2007), sowie Perls, glauben dass Träume, Fiktionen und Phantasien dem Leben selbst

ähnlich sind, ermutigen sie die Kinder während der therapeutischen Arbeit, Träume und Phantasien zu verwenden. Mit projektiven Techniken versucht er das Verborgene und Vermiedene ans Licht zu bringen. Bei der Arbeit mit Gestalttechniken ist es wichtig, einen Dialog zwischen den Teilen des Bildes, das das Kind gezeichnet hat, zu fördern und dem Kind zu helfen, die Verantwortung für das zu übernehmen, was er über das von ihm geschaffene Bild sagt. Bei der Arbeit mit Kindern ist es wichtig, die Körperhaltungen, die Gesichtsausdrücke, den Tonfall, das Ein- und Ausatmen und die Gründe für das Schweigen zu beobachten.

Ich finde die Gestalttherapie für Kinder deshalb sehr geeignet, da Kinder von Natur aus mehr im Hier und Jetzt leben und es nicht sehr mögen bzw. teilweise kognitiv noch nicht dazu in der Lage sind, über etwas zu sprechen, also eine gewisse Abstraktions- oder auch Metaebene einzunehmen.

Weiterhin habe ich oft die Erfahrung gemacht, dass Kinder die Phantasiearbeit sehr mögen, wie zum Beispiel die „Umkehrung vorherrschender Charakterzüge". Sie können sich oft besser als Erwachsene mit bestimmten Aspekten (z.B. anderen Objekten) identifizieren und diese in einen Dialog treten lassen.

Außerdem sind Kinder meist gern bereit zu spielen oder zu malen, ohne dies gleich als komisch oder sinnlos zu beurteilen.

LITERATURVERZEICHNIS

ANGER, H, & SCHULTHESS, P, (2008), Gestalt-Traumatherapie, EHP Verlag, Bergisch Gladbach.

AICHINGER, A. (2002), Gewaltprävention mit Schulklassen, In: Aichinger, A., Holl, W.: Kinderpsychodrama in der Familien- und Einzeltherapie im Kindergarten und in der Schule, Mathias-Grünewald-Verlag, Mainz.

BAULING, I. & BAULING, V, (2002), Praxis der Kindergestalttherapie, EHP Verlag, Bergisch Gladbach.

BLOM, R, (2006), The handbook of gestalt play therapy: Ptactical guidelines for child therapists, Jessica Kingsley, Philadelphia.

BOECKH, A. (2006), Die Gestalttherapie, Kreuz Verlag, Stuttgart.

BURR, W, (2005), Wozu brauchen wir eine systemische Kindertherapie? In: Rotthaus, W. (Hg): Systemische Kinder- und Jugendlichenpsychotherapie, Carl-Auer Verlag, Heidelberg.

CLARKSON, P, (1989), Gestalt Counselling in Action. Sage, London.

DERICHS G., Höger, Ch. (2005), Informierte Zustimmung: Eine ethische Herausforderung bei der Behandlung von Kindern und Jugendlichen. In: Rotthaus, W. (Hg.), Systemische Kinder- und Jugendlichenpsychotherapie, Carl- Auer Verlag, Heidelberg.

DOUBRAWA, E, & BLANKERTZ S, (2005), Lexikon der Gestalttherapie, Peter Hammer Verlag, Köln.

DOUBRAWA, E. & BLANKERTZ S, (2010), Einladung zur Gestalttherapie, Eine Einführung mit Beispielen, Peter Hammer, Wuppertal.

DREITZEL, H, P, (2004), Gestalt und Prozess. Eine psychotherapeutische Diagnostik oder: Der gesunde Mensch hat wenig Charakter, EHP, Bergisch Gladbach.

HARTMANN-KOTTEK, L, (2004), Gestalttherapie, Springer, Berlin.

KATZ-BERNSTEIN, N. & ZAPFEL, H, (2004), Ali und sein Schweigen – aus der Gestalt- Integrativen Arbeit in der Kinder- und Jugendpsychotherapie. In: Hochgerner, M., Hoffmann-Widhalm, H., Nausner, L., Wildberger, E. (Hg.): Gestalttherapie, S. 369-390, Facultas, Wien.

KATZ-BERNSTEIN, N, (2008), Beziehungsgestaltung in der Kinder- und Jugendlichenpsychotherapie zwischen Dyade und sozialer Triangulierung – vier Beziehungsangebote. In: Hermeer, M., Röhrle, B. (Hg.): Handbuch der therapeutischen Beziehung (Bd. 2), S.1551-1528), dvgt-Verlag, Tübingen.

MILLER, A. (2008), Am Anfang war Erziehung, Suhrkamp, Frankfurt.

OAKLANDER, V, (2007), Hidden treasure, A map to the child's inner self. Karnac, London.

OERTER, R & MONTADA, L. (2002), Entwicklungspsychologie. Beltz PVU, Weinheim.

PERLS, F. S. (1989), Leben der Grenze, Ehp, Köln.

PERLS, F. S. (2007), Grundlagen der Gestalt-Therapie, Klett-Cotta, München.

VAN DER KOLK, B. (2002), Traumatic Stress, Grundlagen und Behandlungsängste, Theorie, Praxis und Forschung zu posttraumatischem Stress sowie Traumatherapie, Junfermann, Paderborn.

ZINKER, J. (2005), Gestalttherapie als kreativer Prozess, Junfermann Verlag, Paderborn.

SUSTAINABLE GASTRONOMY TOURISM AND TOURIST SATISFACTION

Bekir EŞİTTİ[1], Buket BULUK[2]

ABSTRACT

This chapter aims to explain the relationship between sustainable gastronomy tourism and tourist satisfaction by looking at related literature. In this context, the chapter firstly looks at eco-tourism, sustainability, sustainable tourism, gastronomy, gastronomy tourism terms. Following these, the chapter relates tourist satisfaction with the sustainable gastronomy tourism and indicates some examples from previous studies. The chapter concludes with suggestions to governments, gastronomic tourism destinations, related enterprises, marketers, and managers.

Keywords: Sustainable Gastronomy Tourism, Tourist Satisfaction, Eco-Tourism

Sustainable Gastronomy Tourism

In terms of sustainability, the concept of eco-tourism emerged in the 1980s as a consequence of the constraints of mass tourism and its environmental damage. Eco-tourism, was also known as a concept that explains eating in three to five star hotels in France only until the 1980s (Santich, 2004). Along with the 2000s, eco-tourism has evolved into a structure that includes environmental sensitivity as well as local cultural protection issues and acting responsibly. Also, eco-tourism has turned to become a concept that includes economic development, social and cultural protection, human rights and morality.

Eco-tourism has an important place both in the tourism industry and in academic research, as it has become a concept that includes economic development, social and cultural protection, human rights and morality (Weaver ve Lawton, 2007; Fennell, 2008). The International Eco-tourism Community (TIES) (2015) defines eco-tourism as "Responsible travel to natural areas, including education and interpretation necessary for the preservation of the environment, the continuation of the prosperity of the local people". Eco-tourism offers a potential value for a destination while benefiting the environment and its inhabitants.

1 Dr. bekiresitti@comu.edu.tr
2 buketbuluk@comu.edu.tr

According to TIES (2015) Eco-tourism should provide positive experiences and provide unforgettable interpretive experiences that will help to increase awareness of the destination's political, environmental and social climate conditions. Sustainable development for developing countries, is the key to eco-tourism discourse and is strongly associated with poverty reduction, job creation and local development. In this logical line sustainable tourism can be defined as sustainable development. Sustainable tourism defined as, 'meeting the needs of present tourists and host regions while protecting and enhancing opportunity for the future' (UNEP and UNWTO, 2005: 11-12). In this manner, sustainable tourism leads to the management of all resources in in a holistic way that economic, social and aesthetic needs can be fulfilled while maintaining cultural integrity, essential ecological processes, biological diversity and life support systems (UNWTO, 2005).

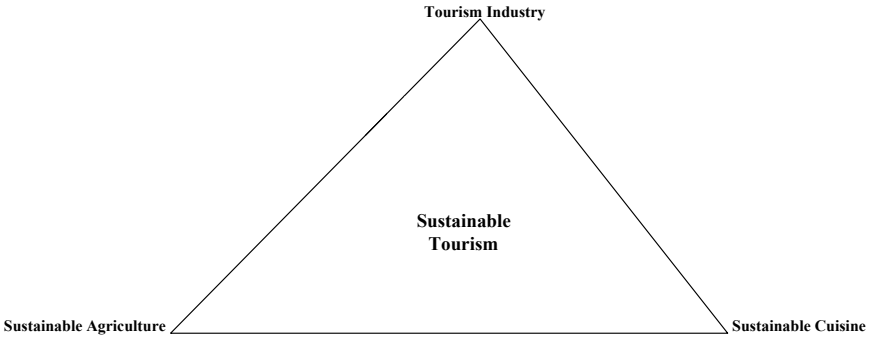
Another term advancing in the same direction is the concept of gastronomy which is initially perceived as a visit to natural areas for enjoyment and education. Nowadays gastronomy started to play an important role in tourism not only because food is one of the main ingredient of tourism, but also food gives tourists an opportunity to identfy themselves. At the same time, gastronomy, as a subdivision of cultural tourism, has begun to include activities in joining other cultures and exploring people and their identities (Sarıısık and Ozbay, 2015).

In the globalizing world, food and beverages, as lifestyle and clothing, are becoming a uniform type that is determined according to global trends. Unhealthy artificial fast food products that celebrity faces or famous brands are trending globally is spreading rapidly all over the world. At this point gastronomy, as an outlet for this trend, is one means of expressing authentic local culture or heritage (Richards, 2002). Sensitivity towards local values and interests in food quality, ecological concerns about the needs for increased sustainable agricultural practices, health and nutrition concerns, a more sophisticated knowledge of food and beverages, and acquired information about different cuisines are impacting tourists' expectations and behaviors when they travel (Haukeland and Jacobsen, 2001).

According to Hall et al. (2003), the main motivation of gastronomic tourism is that consumers visit food festivals, restaurants and special areas to see a special production of a meal or if they can taste a special meal. Eating from the hands of a famous chef, to taste a special meal with them, to see the different production processes of the foods can be considered in this context. Due to this broad scope, some different titles (such as gourmet tourism, kitchen tourism, nutrition tourism, food tourism etc.) can be seen in the literature which have similar meanings to gastronomy tourism (Lin et al., 2011; Comert and Ozkaya, 2014).

At the forefront of the most prominent tourist assets that represent local culture are those cultural food and beverages, namely gastronomic values. Today, regardless of where they visit and whether food and beverage service is provided or not, almost all tourists seem to prefer to eat out and taste local regional meals. In terms of tourists, it can be said that the local food and beverages of a region has become an important means of learning and acquiring more information about a destination (Kastenholz et al, 1999; Gyimothy et al, 2000; Joppe et al, 2001).

According to Berno (2006) the gastronomic identity and values, organic agriculture and a sustainable cuisine must be preserved for sustainable tourism. These terms emerge as a triangle figure below.



Source: Berno, T. (2006). Bridging sustainable agriculture and sustainable tourism to enhance sustainability.

To better understand the concept of sustainable tourism and to achieve a tourism development in harmony with society and ecology, twelve aims have been referred by UNEP (2005). These goals are shown in the table below;

Table 1: 12 Goals of Sustainable Tourism

Economic Viability	To ensure the continuity and competitiveness of tourism destinations and businesses in order to continue to benefit and grow in the long run.
Local Prosperity	To maximize the contributions to tourism hosted destinations, including increasing the local spending rate of visitors
Employment Quality	Increase the quantity and quality of local employment created by tourism, including raising wages and service quality, without discriminating on issues such as race, sex and disabilities.
Social Equity	To observe the distribution of economic and social benefits from tourism in a fair and equitable manner, including improvments of income and service opportunities offered to the poor.
Visitor Fulfillment	Provide a safe and satisfying experience to all visitors without discrimination in matters such as race, sex and disabilities.
Local Control	Involving local governments in the process of planning, management and development of tourism in the region in consultation with other stakeholders and increasing their competence.
Community Wellbeing	To maintain and improve the quality of life of local people, including access to social structures and resources, facilities and life support systems without causing social degradation and exploitation.
Cultural Richness	To respect and strengthen the culture, traditions and historical heritage of the host communities.
Physical Integrity	To maintain and strengthen the quality of urban and rural areas and to prevent the degradation of the environment from physical and visual maintenance.
Biological Diversity	To support the conservation of natural areas, habitats and wildlife, and to minimize potential damage.
Resource Efficiency	Minimize the use of limited and non-renewable resources in the development and operation of tourism services and firms.
Environmental Purity	Minimizing air, water and land pollution and waste generation from tourism enterprises and from the tourists.

Sources: UNEP (2005) Making Tourism More Sustainable: A Guide for Policy Makers, pp.25-48, TUSIAD (2012) Sustainable Tourism, pp. 20

Many of these aims relate to a combination of environmental, economic and social issues and impacts. Governments and especially tourism enterprises should take account of these aims when seeking to persuade related people and institutions to take sustainability more seriously, pointing out the advantages of new applications and the overall profitability of a more sustainable approach of doing business (UNEP 2005).

Rapid development of gastronomy tourism due to its ecological basis and preservation of local values help to ensure the sustainability of

gastronomy tourism in the long run. Gastronomy tourism also depends on tourism choices made by tourists. Increase or decrease of the sustainability of any touristic products such as gastronomic supply products depends on their consumers. Putting the gastronomic foods and beverages to a menu will increase their chances of being tasted and bought by tourists. Giving an example from this point of view, Scandic International Hotels Chain introduced 'Scandic Classics' to the menu and bought only organic and fairly traded coffee. Only this movement of the hotel has affected the sale of 20 million coffee cups (Hall & Gössling, 2013).

Introducing gastronomic foods and drinks and serving them in tourism businesses will create sustainable gastronomic values. On the other hand, localization of gastronomic systems will also promote environmental sustainability, social justice, and fair trade. Creating markets for local specialties, gastronomic centers, old farming and culinary system, wine routes or eco-museums create local development (Yurtseven & Karakas, 2013).

Tourist Satisfaction in Sustainable Gastronomy Tourism

Tourist satisfaction is the result of the quality of tourist goods and services offered to the tourist. Tourist satisfaction is also the result of the positive satisfaction of tourists and ultimately the desire to re-use the related tourist products and services (Pizam et al., 1978, del Bosque and San Martin, 2008). Tourist satisfaction is one of the most important factors in achieving competitive advantage in tourism and travel industry. It is observed that the studies about tourist satisfaction are generally carried out on "destination" and "accommodation management" services. It is also seen in the literature that tourist satisfaction through the food services, provided by travel agencies, are limited (Buluk and Boz, 2016). Tourist satisfaction occurs when a gastronomic destination fulfils consumers' performance criteria. Some studies argue that satisfaction is an essential element for determining individual behaviour in the field of tourism (Devasa et al. 2010; Ibrahim & Gill, 2005).

Tourist satisfaction in sustainable gastronomy relates a complex set of the themes which depends on its vast content. In order to define tourist satisfaction in sustainable gastronomy, one has to consider its antecedents. Della Corte et al. (2015) summerised the main elements (see table 2) that can influence customer satisfaction in tourist services. This study deepened satisfaction elements of Della Corte et al. (2015: 42) adding two sustainability and gastronmic elements by compiling from the relevant literature.

Table 2: Items of Tourist Satisfaction

Item	Literature on Tourist Satisfaction Using These İtems	Theme
Easy access through different modes of transportation	Wan and Chan, 2011; 2013; Della Corte, 2013; Kozak and Rimmington 1998; Kozak, 2001; Vetter, 1985	Access
Accommodation	Xia et al, 2009; Hui et al 2007; Ekinci et al., 2003; Kozak, 2001	Accommodation
Quality of streets and road-signs	-	Access
Restaurants' quality and diversity	Xia et al, 2009; Hui et al 2007; Nield et al., 2000	Amenities
Entertainment	Mikulić and Prebežac, 2011; Xia et al, 2009; Wan and Chan, 2013; Coghlan, 2011	Amenities/Ancillary services
Price and value	Yu and Goulden, 2006; Xia et al, 2009; Kozak, 2001	Access, Attractions, Amenities, Ancillary services, Assemblage, Accommodation
On stage information accessibility	Ortega and Rodríguez, 2007	Access
Local transport	Xia et al, 2009; Thompson and Schofield, 2007; Kozak, 2001	Access
Perceived security	Tasci and Boylu, 2010; Weiermair and Fuchs, 1999	Access, Attractions, Amenities, Ancillary services, Assemblage, Accommodation
Disabled friendly infrastructures	Daniels et al., 2005	Access, Attractions, Amenities, Ancillary services, Assemblage, Accommodation
Cleanliness of the city	Xia et al, 2009; Merrilees et al., 2009; Alegre and Garau, 2010	-
Hospitable (local) people	Jenkins, 1999; Kozak, 2001; Yoon and Uysal, 2005)	-
Organization of cultural events	Chhabra et al., 2003; Kim et al., 2010; Kruger et al., 2013	Amenities/Ancillary services
Activities	Bowen and Schouten, 2008; Danaher and Arweiler, 1996; Kozak, 2001	Amenities/Ancillary services
Gastronomy (Variety and quality of local food and beverages)	Decrop & Snelders, 2005; Correia et al., 2008; Hui et al. 2007; Ling et al., 2010	Untried local flavors
Eco-Tourism/ Sustainability	Hjalager & Corigliano, 2000; Ko, 2005; Choi & Turk, 2011	Preservation of local flavors/ Recognition of different cultures/ Ecological consciousness

Source: Della Corte et al. (2015). Customer Satisfaction in Tourist Destination: The Case of Tourism Offer in The City of Naples, *Journal of Investment and Management*, pp. 42

Today's tourism concept and tourist profiles are progressing with increasing demands and satisfaction criterias. As shown at above table, this study has developed tourist satisfaction with the addition of the titles of sustainability and gastronomy. In addition to the various advantages and possibilities brought by competition in the sector, tourist satisfaction is now expanding by incorporating local delicacies and nature consciouness. Depending on this situation, researchers began to deal with tourist satisfaction, tourist motivation, sustainability and gastronomy together in academic studies. At this stage of study, various academic studies will be given as examples to provide understanding of the subjects' development and interests of researchers.

Rimmington and Yuksel (1998) stated that many tourists' main travel motivation is food for travelling to Turkey. They also noted that the perceived food-beverage quality has a statistically significant effect on both overall travel satisfaction and repeat visit tendency in terms of traveling tourists and has a priority among all variables. Nield et al. (2000) investigated the importance of food experience and food-and-beverage service in tourist satisfaction with their study on 341 domestic and foreign tourists visited Romania. As a result of the study, it was determined that the average age of the tourists participating in the survey was mainly 31-40 age group. The authors categorized the sample of the study as East European, Western European and Romanian and evaluated all the tourists together and investigated the influence of the food experience on overall travel satisfaction. In this context, they found that the factors such as 'quality of food', 'price paid for meals', 'variety of meals' and 'attraction of atmosphere' explained %53 of the overall satisfaction as effective variables.

Karim and Chi (2010) studied on 284 participants from online travel and gastronomy groups. The researchers compared the food image of France, Italy and Thailand with the datas obtained from the sample. As a result of the study, the researchers found that Italy has the most positive perception of food image and Thailand's food image was the highest factor (%12) in its effect on repeat-visit behaviors. The researchers also assessed the participants' views in terms of food-culinary culture, restaurant characteristics, and food-related activities. The researchers found that Italy's provision of delicious food, the presence of France's unique food and wine regions and the cultural experience of Thailand were the most enjoyable elements of the participants. It is also seen that the participants benefited most from internet sites and previous travellers as sources before visiting France, Italy and Thailand.

Ling et al. (2010) investigated the relationship between tourist satisfaction of Malaysia's food image and the behavioral intentions of 392 tourists who visited Malaysia. As a result of the study, researchers found that the food

experiences of tourists' visits were positively influenced by overall travel satisfaction and their future behavioral intentions. In the study, it is seen that the food image explained %33 of tourist overall travel satisfaction and satisfaction explained %65 of tourists behavioral intentions. Participants also emphasized that the most satisfying elements of Malaysian cuisine are the reasonable price and variety of flavors.

Bezirgan and Koc (2014) conducted a study on 221 domestic tourists who visited Cunda Island to determine their satisfaction and destination belonging to local cuisine destinations. As a result of the study, it is found that a significant positive relationship between local food, other foods and beverages, dependence on atmosphere and service quality, identity and satisfaction in the destination. It is also found that local food and atmosphere elements which sub-dimensions of the local cuisine had a positive impact (%35) on the destination belonging and satisfaction.

A tourist might want to visit a destination to get a new cultural experience or just visit to try local foods and different tastes belonging to the destination. In this context, it seems that the factors such as testing a destination's local food, observing the production process of a local food where the raw ingredient is special for only a certain destination are among the main factors affecting tourists to go to the preferred destination. This will also contribute to the sustainability of the resources belonge destinations and alternative tourism facilities that can be structured in food culture-conscious destinations (Yuncu, 2010). Gastronomy tourism is also seen as a decisive factor in attracting tourists in the selection of destinations. Gastronomy tourism can also be used as a supporting activity as well as being an alternative tourism type in itself compared to sea-sand-sun destinations (Shenoy, 2005; Kivela and Crotts, 2006; Ulusoy, 2008).

The rapid development of gastronomy tourism and its examination with different scientific approaches has made it extremely important that gastronomy tourism can achieve its sustainability in the long run. For this reason, studies on the sustainability of gastronomy tourism have started to be found frequently in the literature in recent years. Reynolds (1993) stated that there is an unencumberable communication between food and tourism. Reynolds (1993) also indicated the importance of food and beverage in tourism to ensure a sustainable cultural structure. Bratec (2008) emphasized that sustainable gastronomic tourism is an important approach to be explored in sustainable tourism and the slow food approach could also be a valuable backer.

Yurtseven and Kaya (2011) examined sustainable gastronomy and eco-gastronomy concepts together. They stated that gastronomic elements may directly or indirectly affect the sustainable elements of a destination and

may contribute to the development of the destination. Everett and Slocum (2013) pointed out that creating sustainable gastronomy tourism is extremely difficult. They also discussed macro plans for possible improvements. Hall and Gossling (2013) mentioned that the concept of sustainable gastronomy is a system in itself. They also emphasized that sustainable gastronomy tourism is a field that it is open to development around the world and needs to be addressed in terms of food and beverage management.

Okumus et al. (2007) indicated the importance of experiencing the local food cultures and the cultural traditions of destinations. Thus, destinations distinguishes from other destinations by their unique characteristics, which in turn makes them gain a competitive advantage in a sustainable way. These components are crucial in the realization of sustainable gastronomy tourism and ensuring the sustainability of demand for tourism.

It is necessary to specify that human is the main subject of tourism events. The person who guides the tourism events and forms the focal point of these events are defined by the tourist term in the tourism literature. As a common definition in the tourism literature, tourist is a person who has limited spending power and time, participates and directs tourism activities, temporarly abandons his or her permanent place of residence for a period of time, at least 24 hours, seeks psychological satisfaction (United Nations Statistical Commission, 1963; Ozdemir, 1992; Yagci, 2003). Depending on this point of view, one can say that gastronomy tourists are those who seek different food and beverage experiences and make their trips in this way (Horng and Tsai, 2010: 75). According to the Universal Food Tourism Report published by the World Tourism Organization (2012: 7), gastronomic tourists are expressed as "someone who traveled for vacational plans or travel in order to complete gastronomic activities and to taste food and drinks specific to a destination". The gastronomic tourist profile is supported by a number of studies in the tourism litarature. Some of the studies are as follows:

Kivela and Crotts (2005) examined 1067 tourists sample who came to Hong Kong and pointed out that the majority of participants are in the 26-35 and 36-45 age group and from Hong Kong, Europe, Taiwan and North America. In addition, it is observed in the study that tourists who visites Hong Kong put the food element in to the third place of their motivation after the holiday and meeting elements. In this study, tourists who travel with food motivations, compared to tourists who have travel motivations. It is found that tourists who travel with food motivations have more knowledge about 'food and culinary culture' and pay more attention to these factors in the decision process and therefore they tend to travel with food motivation.

Canizares and Guzman (2012) have conducted a study with 206 domestic and foreign tourists and they found that participants with gastronomic visiting motivation mostly had a bachelor degree, under the age of 39 and stayed for 1-2 nights when they visited a destination. The authors concluded that the participants had a high interest in local wines, a high number of tourists were asking to service staff for the wine proposal and the overall satisfaction from the gastronomic visiting was very high. In another study, Lertputtarak (2012) have examined the relationship between the destination image, food image and repeating visit tendencies of 476 foreign tourists who visited Thailand. In the study, it was determined that the tourists who participated in the research were 25-34 and 35-44 years old, mostly had a bachelor degree, were private sector employees and business owners, European and Asian originated, stayed at least one week and over and they tent to visit the destination again. Aslan et al. (2014) also conducted a study on the tourists who visited Nevsehirthe results of the study indicated that, tourists who visited Nevsehir did not have any prior food experience about this destination, but these tourists wanted to experience local food during their travels and their food preferences were changed in this way.

Bekar and Kilic (2014) investigated the participation of tourists in gastronomy activities according to their income levels. As a result of the research, it was determined that 231 local tourists who visited Hatay province were generally young and/or middle aged, they had undergraduate and/or above education level, mostly public and private sector employees and were middle income class. Also, it is estimated that approximately %73 of these tourists prefered to eat local cuisine, %58 prefered to eat at the places where local food is prepared, %38 prefered to eat only local food and %60 of them did not eat at ready-meal restaurants.

Birdir and Akgol (2015) investigated 452 foreign tourist' perceptions of Turkish cuisine and gastronomy experiences. In the study, it is indicated that the visitors gained information about Turkish cuisine and the tourists food choice mostly depend on the recommendations of people who had experienced the Turkish cuisine before. Consequently, the idea of re-tasting intentions of Turkish cuisine was found to be related to the re-visiting intentions of tourists.

Gokdeniz et al. (2015) conducted a study to determine the general typologies and gastronomic perceptions of 375 domestic tourists visited Ayvalik destination. They found that most of the tourists who visited Ayvalik destination were in the middle age group and also they were in the middle income class. It was observed that about half of the tourists came to Ayvalik for the first time. They did not know anything about Ayvalik cuisine before their travel and those who had knowledge mostly resorted to the opinions

of those who have visited the region before. It was also observed that the participants evaluated Ayvalik cuisine as the fourth goal to travel to Ayvalik and they were 'undecided' about Ayvalik's gastronomic image. These results shown that Ayvalik has not got an image of a gastronomic destination in the perception of tourists. The factors that push people to eat outdoors and the reasons they participate in gastronomy tourism have been tried to be explained with the above studies.

There are some studies that provide explanatory information on gastronomy tourism (Fields, 2002; Kim et al., 2009). Forexample, Cullen (1994) divided the purpose of eating outdoors into two: easy eating and social eating. According to this study, the concept of social food is explained by social interaction, improvement in mood, fun, happiness, prestige and status. Purposes such as time saving, economy, meeting new people, being with family and friends, recreation, happiness, mood recovery, convenience, hunger relief, status, prestige, search for novelty and avoiding meal at home also lead to consumers to eat outdoors (Pavesic 1989; Narine and Badrie 2007).

Some researches aimed to identify the factors that affect tourists' consumption of local food (Kim et al., 2009). It is seen that the factors are; the desire to get to know new people, get away from the routine, get cultural experience, spend time with family and friends, renew social relations by getting status and prestige. Ignatov and Smith (2006) emphasized that individuals' ability to taste local food, together with their family and/or friends can enhance their experiences among them and create more travel satisfaction.

Depending on the interests of the traveler, the food motivations in the direction of the studies are composed of four phases (Hall and Mitchell, 2001). The first of these steps is called gourmet tourism. Gourmet tourism refers to the type of tourism in which the traveling individual has a high motivation for food and visits specific places where foods served with motivation. A sub-point of gourmet tourism is 'Gastronomy tourism'. Individuals participating in gastronomy tourism are less concerned with gourmet tourism in their food-related passions and feel intense towards the food experience. The next step in the food motivations of travelers is the 'motivation of culinary tourism' which has less interest in food and the desire to consume local flavors for travelers constitutes secondary motivations. Kitchen tourism refers to an experience in which tourists are not interested in tasting the local foods of the destinations they visit and they are interested in tasting local flavors. Rural / urban tourism is the fourth and the last food motivation phase that means the motivation of the traveler for food is low, in other words, food is only a supporting touristic product motivation that traveler just eat while traveling. Another

point to know that the majority of tourists who participate in rural / urban tourism often lack the motivation to eat and describe eating as merely a physiological need (Hall et al., 2003).

Conclusion and Suggestions

The new touristic product competes against the existing touristic products. A new touristic product that has its own attraction power and can make demand for itself. In this sense, the touristic product variety creates a touristic attraction and attracts tourists on its own. In other words, tourists take the decision of traveling with the attraction -especially with the attraction of a touristic product- of the consumer. The touristic consumer may prefer to include a single type of touristic product throughout the trip, as well as a combination of different varieties and supports touristic products (Yildiz, 2009). In this perspective, it is natural that gastronomy tourism is perceived as a new touristic product. It is important to analyze specific destinations in terms of gastronomic activities abroad, to carry out activities in the benchmarking model, to determine the targets related to the topic and to pass on the relevant applications in order to make better use of gastronomy potential of countries.

In terms of gastronomic image, tourist destinations and even the process of creating the image for the countries necessitates strategic business units. Publicity is the key factor in this process. It will be possible to increase the awareness of local government, state and citizen in order to bring the functions required for sustainable gastronomy tourism.

The term of gastronomy tourism, the eating habits from the basic necessity to the top of the hierarchy of needs. It is also linked to many fields of science, so it brings the phenomenon of eating to many dimensions by combining it with many fields. Gastronomy combines the terms of food and culture which contributes to the development of a new tourism field that offers advantages in tourism marketing. Culinary culture has also diversified due to the geographical and climatic diversity that countries have and the cultural interactions that result from many cultural areas. Countries with large gastronomic values need to be promoted and protected. In this context, it is thought that the gastronomic values should be recognized and transferred to future generations.

Today, the importance of alternative tourism and region preferences towards interests of tourists have caused the importance of various tourism types. One of these tourism types is gastronomy tourism. In gastronomy tourism, the primary motivation for tourists is to get to know the food culture of the region and experience regional flavors. The development of gastronomy tourism in a region, the local economy provides important

contributions. The gastronomy tourist who visits a region, attaches importance to the consumption of local products. More attention is given to a meal or food made with local products. For this reason, local economic sectors are developing more and new investments are being entered into these sectors. With these contributions, efforts are being made to protect and develop local values in order to ensure sustainability of the region.

Sustainable gastronomy can contribute to the development of sustainable elements of a destination either directly or indirectly: support agriculture and food production, prevent unspecific production, increase attractiveness, strengthen local community and local pride, create brand and identity based on food experience (Telfer and Wall, 1996). Sustainable gastronomy provides an environment friendly infrastructure contributing to sustainable development by expanding the area of local tourism resources and providing added value to the authenticity of the destinations, strengthening the local economy in terms of tourism and agriculture sectors (Bessiere, 1998; Boyne et al., 2001; Nummedal and Hall, 2006; Pratt, 2007; Barrera and Alvarado, 2008; Yurtseven et al., 2010).

There are some positive indicators about the benefits of the integration of sustainable gastronomy and tourism strategy (Telfer and Wall, 1996; Westering, 1999; Meler and Cerovic, 2003; Kivela and Crotts, 2006; Nummedal and Hall, 2006; Rand and Heath, 2006; Pratt, 2007). It is not enough to buy only local food in order to ensure the sustainability of tourism. From the perspective of socio-cultural sustainability, buying local food can help to create a feeling of social healing. Buying local food, as well as providing social capital, also enhances the impressiveness of the destination. The need for more environmentally sustainable local food resources requires techniques appropriate for small non-industrial businesses. The distribution chains and networks must be appropriately interconnected. In summary, buying local food will not make tourism more sustainable. Sustainability needs a change in understanding that sees it as part of its tourism strategy. This change is called sustainable gastronomy.

Sustainable gastronomy tourism offers competitive and non-standard services to tourists' demands with its environmental and socio-cultural needs of the destination (Poon, 1993). It encourages tourists to visit local food producers, such as cheese-making farms and wines, and encourages directly buy from producers (Swarbrooke, 1999; Yurtseven, 2007). Sustainable gastronomy tourism reflects the sustainability issues of general tourism. It also examines current issues for gastronomy studies: sensitivity to local and specific conditions: locally produced food products, organic farming and products, traditional life culture, traditional food production; attractive, unusual and unknown local cuisines and their contribution to the branding of a destinations; contribution to sustainable gastronomy,

destination and sustainable tourism practices; local restaurants, natural shopping centers and authentic-historic shops (Scarpato, 2002).

Gastronomy tourism is a type of tourism preferred by high-income tourists who like to travel to destinations. These tourists are intellectual, have high income levels, approximately 35-55 aged, came from different culinary cultures, want to consume the products where they are produced, open to different experiences, share their experiences with other people. Gastronomy tourism is an important force in the marketing of destinations through year-round integration with other tourism types, increasing the amount of spending and length of stay, contributing to local development, environmentally friendly development, locality-specific, authentic and unpalatable product range. Gastronomy tourism has a powerful navigating power from discovery of destinations in the destination life cycle to a period of decline in demand.

Gastronomy is an important part of tourism and it creates a strong image with the charm created by the locality in the development of destinations in print due to the competition over tourism. Day by day, tourism activities are becoming global. At this point, it is necessary to analyze the gastronomy market well in order to be successful in the development of the gastronomy. Gastronomy is an important source of cultural identity in post-modern societies and therefore it has a very important place in cultural tourism. Gastronomy tourism is an important component of the fast-growing cultural tourism market in the world. It also provides important contributions both social and economic development as well as intercultural communication. Gastronomic tourism provides significant contributions to local economic development in developed regions. It is known that gastro-tourists prefer more local products at a higher level than other tourist types. This is why gastronomic tourism contributes positively to new investments in the local economic sectors, to the development of these sectors, to the preservation of local values and to sustainability.

Within the scope of sustainable gastronomy tourism, it is seen that tourists tend to seek authenticity and difference and they act with the desire to experience authenticity. In addition, authentic foods provide a unique holiday experience for tourists. Authentic foods contribute to the preservation of the natural and socio-cultural environment as well as the economic development of destinations and stimulate local culture. On the other hand, authentic foods establish strong links between the region, people and food. These foods are fed from local culture. It is also known that tourists are highly satisfied with their authentic food experiences in a destination, they tell their well satisfied experience to their family and/or friends. Preserving authentic foods, local foods and cooking techniques and transferring them to future generations, contribute both sustain the

cultural heritage and maintain the gastronomic heritage.

The preservation and continuity of regional delicacies, which are cultural heritages of countries, are the duty not only individuals but also all professional organizations, official institutions and tourism businesses. There is no doubt this culture can be transmitted towards future generations only when the local flavors become a part of our lives. It is known that the countries which have an important regional flavor potential have great opportunities in terms of gastronomy tourism. Countries can develop alternative tourism varieties by branding their local flavors with gastronomy tourism and even only these flavors can attract tourists. The interest of many local and foreign tourists to regional tastes may create a driving force in the development of countries, especially in rural areas. This can reduce immigration from the village to the city and contribute positively to the sustainability of regional flavors. All stakeholders should act within a common action plan for the preservation of regional specialties and the development of gastronomy tourism. First of all, a specialist team should be formed for regional specialties and gastronomic tourism. Indigenous map should be prepared for flavor and public awareness should be builded. Vocational trainings on the preparation of local flavors should be planned.

Undoubtedly, women and young people have the key role in the sustainability of local flavors. Therefore, it should be ensured that these people especially participates in trainings. These people should be trained in the fields such as health, production methods, entrepreneurship and marketing as well as regional flavors. Those who complete the training should be actively involved in gastronomy tourism. In addition that, patent appeals must be made for those that are suitable for the geographical indication of the local flavors. In addition to the gastronomy departments at the univesities, culinary schools should be opened in the gastronomic destinations. Gastronomy tours should be considered for tourists who wants to discover local flavors of destinations. Festivals should be organized on national and international area in order to promote these local flavors.

REFERENCES

Aslan, Z., Guneren, E. & Coban, G. (2014). Destinasyon Markalaşma Sürecinde Yöresel Mutfağın Rolü: Nevşehir Örneği. *Journal of Tourism and Gastronomy Studies*, 2 (4): 3-13.

Barrera, E. & Alvarado, O. B. (2008). Food Trails: Tourist Architectures Built on Food Identity. *Gastronomic Sciences: Food for Thought*, 3 (8): 56-63.

Bekar, A. & Kilic, B. (2014). Turistlerin Gelir Düzeylerine Göre Destinasyondaki Gastronomi Turizmi Etkinliklerine Katılımları. *Uluslararası Sosyal ve Ekonomik Bilimler Dergisi*, 4 (1): 19-26.

Berno, T. (2006). Bridging sustainable agriculture and sustainable tourism to enhance sustainability. *Publıc Administration And Public Policy-New York-*, *118*, 207.

Bessiere, J. (1998). Local Development and Heritage: Traditional Food and Cuisine as Tourist Attractions in Rural Areas. *Sociologia Ruralis*, 38 (1): 21-34.

Bezirgan, M. & Koc, F. (2014). Yerel Mutfakların Destinasyona Yönelik Aidiyet Oluşumuna Etkisi: Cunda Adası Örneği. *Uluslararası Sosyal Araştırmalar Dergisi*, 7 (34): 917-928.

Birdir, K. & Akgol, Y. (2015). Gastronomi Turizmi ve Türkiye'yi Ziyaret Eden Yabancı Turistlerin Gastronomi Deneyimlerinin Değerlendirilmesi. *İşletme ve İktisat Çalışmaları Dergisi*, 3 (2): 57-68.

Boyne, S., Williams, F. & Hall, D. (2001). Rural Tourism and Food Production: Opportunities for Sustainable Development. Retrieved from: http://www.rics.org/site/scripts/download_info.aspx?fileID=2651&categoryI D=568.

Bratec, M. (2008). Sustaining Through Gastronomy: The Case of Slow Food Movement in Slovenia, Its Impacts on Socio-Cultural Environments and Tourism Development. *BEST Education Network Think Tank VIII Sustaining Quality of Life through Tourism.*

Buluk, B. & Boz, M. (2016). Online Seyahat Acenteleri Aracılığıyla Seyahat Satın Almada Turist Memnuniyeti: İstanbul Örneği. *Karabük Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi*, 6 (2): 504-529.

Canizares, S. M. & Guzman, L. T. (2012). Gastronomy as a Tourism Resource: Profile of the Culinary Tourist. *Current Issues in Tourism*, 15 (3): 229-245.

Choi, H. C., & Turk, E. S. (2011). *Sustainability Indicators for Managing Community Tourism. In Quality-Of-Life Community Indicators for Parks,* Recreation And Tourism Management (pp. 115-140). Springer, Dordrecht.

Correia, A., Moital, M., Da Costa, C. F., & Peres, R. (2008). The Determinants of Gastronomic Tourists' Satisfaction: A Second-Order Factor Analysis. *Journal of foodservice*, *19*(3), 164-176.

Cömert, M., & Özkaya, F. D. (2014). Gastronomi Turizminde Türk Mutfağının Önemi, Journal of Tourism and Gastronomy Studies, 2, (2), 62-66.

Cullen, P. (1994). Time, Tastes and Technology: The Evolution of Eating Out. *British Food Journal*, 96 (10): 4-9.

Decrop A, Snelders, D. (2005). A Grounded Typology of Vacation Decision-Making. *Tourism Management*, 26: 121–32.

Del Bosque, I. A. R. & San Martin, H. (2008). Tourist Satisfaction a Cognitive Affective Model. *Annals of Tourism Research*, 35 (2): 551-573.

Della Corte, V., Sciarelli, M., Cascella, C., & Del Gaudio, G. (2015). Customer Satisfaction in Tourist Destination: The Case of Tourism Offer in The City of Naples, *Journal of Investment and Management*, 4 (1): 39-50

Devesa, M., Laguna, M., & Palacios, A. (2010). The Role Of Motivation in Visitor Satisfaction: Empirical Evidence in Rural Tourism. *Tourism Management*, 31(4), 547-552.

Everett, S. & Slocum, S. L. (2013). Food and Tourism: An Effective Partnership? A UK-based review. *Journal of Sustainable Tourism*, 21 (6): 789-809.

Fennell, D. A. (2008). Ecotourism: An introduction (3rd Ed.). London: Routledge

Gokdeniz, A., Erdem, B., Dinc, Y. & Uguz, S. C. (2015). Gastronomi Turizmi: Ayvalık'ta Yerli Turistler Üzerinde Görgül Bir Araştırma. Journal of Tourism and Gastronomy Studies, 3 (1): 14-29.

Gyimothy, S., Rassing, C., & Wanhill, S., (2000). Marketing works: a study of restaurants on Bornholm, Denmark. International Journal of Contemporary Hospitality Management, 12, 371–379.

Hall, C. M., & Gössling, S. (Eds.). (2013). Sustainable culinary systems: Local foods, innovation, and tourism & hospitality. Routledge.

Hall, M. & Mitchell, R. (2001). *Wine and Food Tourism*. Special Interest Tourism: Context and Cases. Brisbane: J. Wiley and Sons.

Hall, M. C., Sharples, L., Mitchell, R., Macionis, N. & Cambourne, B. (2003). *Food Tourism Around the World: Development, Management and Markets*. Butterworth-Heinemann: Elsevier.

Haukeland, J.V., & Jacobsen, J.K.S. (2001). Gastronomy in the periphery: Food and cuisine as tourism attractions at the top of Europe. Paper presented at the 10th Nordic Tourism Research Conference, Vasa, Finland. Retrieved from http://padua.wasa.shh.fi/konferens/ abstract/a6-haukeland.pdf.

Hjalager A, Corigliano M. A. (2000). Food For Tourists Determinants of an Image. *International Journal of Tourism Research*, 2: 281–293.

Horng, J. S. & Tsai, C. T. S. (2010). Government Websites for Promoting East Asian Culinary Tourism: A Cross-National Analysis. *Tourism Management*, 31 (1): 74-85.

Hui, T., Wan, D., & Ho, A. (2007). Tourists' Satisfaction, Recommendation And Revisiting Singapore. *Tourism Management,* 28: 965–75.

Ibrahim, E. E., & Gill, J. (2005). A Positioning Strategy for a Tourist Destination, Based on Analysis of Customers Perceptions and Satisfactions. *Marketing Intelligence & Planning*, 23(2), 172–188

Ignatov, E. & Smith, S. (2006). Segmenting Canadian Culinary Tourists. *Current Issues in Tourism*, 9 (3): 235–255.

Joppe, M., Martin, D., & Waalen, J. (2001). Toronto's image as a destination: a comparative importance satisfaction analysis by origin of visitor. Journal of Travel Research, 39, 252–260.

Karim, S. A. & Chi, C. G. Q. (2010). Culinary Tourism as a Destination Attraction: An Empirical Examination of Destinations' Food Image. *Journal of Hospitality Marketing and Management*, 19 (6): 531-555.

Kastenholz, E., Davis, D., & Paul, G. (1999). Segmenting tourism in rural areas: the case of North and Central Portugal. *Journal of Travel research*, 37(4), 353-363.

Kim, Y. G., Eves, A. & Scarles, C. (2009). Building A Model of Local Food Consumption on Trips and Holidays: A Grounded Theory Approach. *International Journal of Hospitality Management*, 28 (3): 423- 431.

Kivela, J. & Crotts, J. C. (2005). Gastronomy tourism: A meaningful travel market segment. *Journal of Culinary Science and Technology*, 4 (2/3): 39-55.

Kivela, J. & Crotts, J. (2006). Tourism and Gastronomy: Gastronomy's Influence on How Tourists Experience a Destination. *Journal of Hospitality and Tourism Research*, 30: 354-377.

Ko, T. G. (2005). Development of a Tourism Sustainability Assessment Procedure: A Conceptual Approach. *Tourism Management*, *26*(3), 431-445.

Lertputtarak, S. (2012). The Relationship Between Destination Image, Food Image and Revisiting Pattaya, Thailand. *International Journal of Business and Management*, 7 (5): 111-121.

Lin, Y., Pearson, T., E. & Cai, L., A. (2011). Food As a Form of Destination Identitiy: A Tourism Destination Brand Perspective, *Tourism and Hospitality Research*, 11,(1), 30-48.

Ling, L. Q., Karim, M. S. A., Othman, M., Adzahan, N. M. & Ramachandran, S. (2010). Relationships Between Malaysian Food Image, Tourist Satisfaction and Behavioural Intention. *World Applied Sciences Journal*, 10: 164-171.

Meler, M. & Cerovic, Z. (2003). Food Marketing in the Function of Tourist Product Development. *British Food Journal*, 105 (3): 175-192.

Narine, T. & Badrie, N. (2007). Influential Factors Affecting Food Choices of Consumers When Eating Outside the Household in Trinidad, West Indies. *Journal of Food Products Marketing*, 13 (1) :19-29.

Nield, K., Kozak, M. & LeGrys, G. (2000). The Role of Food Service in Tourist Satisfaction. *International Journal of Hospitality Management*, 19 (4): 375-384.

Nummedal, M. & Hall, M. (2006). Local Food in Tourism: An Investigation of the New Zealand South Island's Bed and Breakfast Sector's Use and Perception of Local Food. *Tourism Review International*, 9, 365-378.

Okumus, B., Okumus, F. & McKrecher, B. (2007). Incorporating Local and International Cuisines in the Marketing of Tourism Destinations: The Cases of Hong Kong and Turkey, *Tourism Management*, 28, 253-261.

Ozdemir, M. (1992). Turizmin Türkiye'nin Sosyo-Ekonomik Yapısına Etkileri. Ankara.

Pavesic, D. V. (1989). Psychological Aspects of Menu Pricing. *International of Hospitality Management*, 8 (1): 43-49.

Pizam A., Neumann, Y. & Reichel, A. (1978). Dimentions of Tourist Satisfaction with a Destination Area. *Annals of Tourism Research*, 5 (3): 314-322.

Poon, A. (1993). *Tourism, Technology and Competitive Strategies*. Oxford: CAB.

Pratt, J. (2007). Food Values: The Local and Authentic. *Critique of Anthropology*, 27 (3): 285-300.

Rand, G. E. & Heath, E. (2006). Towards a Framework for Food Tourism as an Element of Destination Marketing. *Current Issues in Tourism*, 9 (3): 206-234.

Reynolds, P. C. (1993). *Food And Tourism: Towards an Understanding of Sustainable Culture. Journal of Sustainable Tourism*, 1 (1): 48-54.

Richards, G. (2002). Gastronomy: An essential ingredient in tourism production and consumption? In: Hjalager, A., and Richards, G., eds., *Tourism and Gastronomy*. London: Routeledge, pp. 3–20.

Rimmington, M. & Yuksel, A. (1998). Tourist Satisfaction and Food Service Experience: Results and Implications of an Empirical Investigation. *Anatolia*, 9 (1): 37-57.

Santich, B. (2004). The study of gastronomy and its relevance to hospitality education and training. *International Journal of Hospitality Management*, 23(1), 15-24.

Scarpato, R. (2002). *Sustainable Gastronomy as a Tourist Products*. London-New York: Routledge.

Sarıışık, M. & Özbay, G. (2015). Gastronomi turizmi uzerine bir literatür incelemesi, *Anatolia: Turizm Araştırmaları Dergisi*, 26(2), 264-278.

Shenoy, S. (2005). *Food Tourism and The Culinary Tourist*. A Thesis Presented to the Graduate School of Clemson University, USA.

Swarbrooke, J. (1999). *Sustainable Tourism Management*. Wallingford: CAB International.

Telfer, D. J. & Wall, G. (1996). Linkages between Tourism and Food Production. *Annals of Tourism Research*, 23 (3): 635-653.

The International Eco-tourism Society (2015), Fact sheet: global ecotourism. Retrieved from: www.ecotourism:webmodules/webarticlesnet/templates/eco_template.aspx?Articleid15&zoneid2.

TUSIAD, (2012) Sürdürülebilir Turizm, Retrieved from: http://www.getob.org/wp-content/uploads/dosyalar/SurdurulebilirTurizmRaporu.pdf

United Nations Statistical Commission. (1963). The 1963 World Programme of Basic Industrial Statistics. , Retrieved from: https://unstats.un.org/unsd/statcom/doc62/1962-288-ProgIndustiralStats1963.pdf.

Ulusoy, B. (2008). Ülke Mutfağı Tarih ve Kültürü Ortaya Çıkartır. *Food in life, Tourism gastronomy and life magazine*, 3.

UNWTO. (2005). Making Tourism More Sustainable - A Guide for Policy Makers, Retrieved from: http://www.world-tourism.org/sustainable/doc/a21-def.pdfp.11-12

Weaver, D. B., & Lawton, L. J. (2007). Twenty years on: The state of contemporary ecotourism research. *Tourism management*, 28(5), 1168-1179.

Westering, J. (1999). Heritage and Gastronomy: the pursuits of the new tourist'. *International Journal of Heritage Studies*, 5 (2): 75-81.

World Tourism Organization. (2012). Global Report on Food Tourism, Madrid: Spain.

Yagci, O. (2003). *Turizm Ekonomisi.* Detay Yayıncılık, Ankara.

Yildiz, Ö. E. (2009). *Türkiye'de Şarap Turizmi–Çeşme Örneğinde Ürün Geliştirme Modeli*. Dokuz Eylül Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Yayınlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi.

Yuncu, H. R. (2010). Sürdürülebilir Turizm Açısından Gastronomi Turizmi ve Perşembe Yaylası. X. Aybastı-Kabataş Kurultayı, Eskisehir, TURKEY.

Yurtseven, H. R. (2007). *Slow Food ve Gökçeada: Yönetsel Bir Yaklaşım*. Ankara: Detay Yayıncılık.

Yurtseven, H. R., Kaya, O. & Harman, S. (2010). *Yavaş Hareketi*. Ankara: Detay Yayıncılık

Yurtseven, H. R., & Karakas, N. (2013). Creating a sustainable gastronomic destination: The case of Cittaslow Gokceada-Turkey. *American International Journal of Contemporary Research*, 3(3), 91-100.

Yurtseven, H. R. & Kaya, O. (2011). Slow Tourists: A Comparative Research Based on Cittaslow Principles. *American International Journal of Contemporary Research*, 1 (2): 91-98.

THE THEME OF EDUCATION AND THE CONCEPT OF SCHOOL IN PHILOSOPHY

Sema ÜLPER OKTAR[1]

ABSTRACT

Throughout the history of philosophy, education has aimed to obtain desired behaviours in children and reintegrate the citizens of the future into the society in the best way. Philosophers including Plato, Locke, Rousseau, and Kant dwelt upon education and its compulsory and continued nature and emphasized this issue's importance for the state. Althusser provided important space to the institution of school among the ideological tools of the state and underlined the educational tool's aim of raising the citizens of the future. This study provides a theoretical framework for a rethinking on education and school issue, referring to the views of the mentioned philosophers and Ivan Illich, who discusses the issue of "education without school".

Keywords: society, school, education

The indispensable institutions of societies, schools function as key elements of obligation and continuity of education. It has been accepted as a certain fact that the basic principles on which modern education depends can be provided with the information offered by the institution of school. Primary education offered to cultivate the desirable behavior in children aims to ensure the healthy development of reason and emotions, adoption of national sentiments and therefore the raising of the citizen of the future. These goals are the ones which mark the education concepts of all societies and are held as a must for the continuity of societies. The educational apparatus which include the institution of school is, in Louis Althusser's terminology, one of the "ideological apparatuses of the state," and may be the most important one. According to Althusser, the educational ideological apparatus of the state, being one of the IASes and incorporating institutions of education has such a property that, these apparatuses, belonging to the superstructure, ensure the reproduction of production relations with the protection and help of the state's oppression apparatus. Just like others, educational IAS too enables the reproduction of production relations at the center of the functions of production relations they contribute to on their

1 Dr, Kocaeli Üniversitesi, sema_ulper@yahoo.com

own. The continuity of societies depends on the ongoing functionality's continuity without a break. This corresponds to a state of consistency which should be preserved and promoted. (See Althusser, 2003: 168-169.)

Considering the first works of the thinkers on education, Plato too emphasizes education in his work titled *Republic*. In this work, Plato mentions a primary education, similar to Althusser's conception of education as an ideological apparatus, which aims to preserve the status quo and is consolidated by obligation. Accordingly, the primary education of future citizens should be oriented toward his healthy bodily and rational development but is primarily based on a ground which praises the state and preserves its functioning by obligation.

Platon, writing on women in *Republic*, especially emphasize education. He especially maintains that in education and other matters as well girls should be held equal to boys and that is necessary for the good of whole society. Women and children's well-being will contribute to the State's well-being. The education of children which will constitute the citizens of future is the most important subject dealt with and considered as necessary. Aristoteles too holds views of education of women and children which are similar to Plato's ideas. Just like Plato, for Aristotle too, mothers who would provide the primary education to children who will be future citizens, should be knowledgeable enough to perform their duties for the good of the state. In these views, the place of the modern concept of school is home. But its ideological purpose is the same: to create a desirable submissive form of citizens. With this aim, the duties of mothers and nannies are listed in *Republic*. These duties aim to shape the souls of children with nice fairy tales before shaping their bodies. The emphasis on the good tales which, as the first words the child will hear, will show the children the way of goodness, will help them believe that only good things, and not bad things, come from Gods. What is aimed thereby is to teach the children to be respectful of Gods and rulers. The person tasked with the duty of convincing children, until the time in the ideal state the family structure disappears, is the mother who is a member of the family herself. In the ideal state of Plato's ruled by the philosopher-king, the family will end one day but education was seen as a necessity which will persist as a necessary locus of belief for the continuity of the state.

In the sixth part of the book *Republic*, Socrates maintains that the people who have the best values would be worst of the worst if they receive a bad education. This prediction, true for everyone, is also true for the philosopher. Platon maintains that: "if the philosopher finds an education whose nature fits him, he will develop and reach all the values. Or, if the seed is planted in a bad soil to root out and grow, there is no end to evils it will do." (Platon, 2001*: 492a, p. 164.)* Moreover, education is also a

fundamental method which teaches to handle pleasures and suffering. It ensures the mind's control over the body and aims for goodness above all. Plato's ideal state is a society where philosophy and "goodness" prevail. [2]

Other thinkers such as John Locke and J. J. Rousseau too embraced a concept of ideal education and offer views which stipulates several reforms on especially the present system of education but nevertheless accept the inevitability of education as a fundamental institution of the state. It is with John Locke that the category of children was taken for the first time as a separate field of life. Before him, the child was perceived throughout the history of thought as an a priori human condition which will be a future citizen and will achieve individuality through changes in himself.

Locke in his *Thoughts Concerning Education* states that he will offer his thoughts on how to raise a young man starting from his childhood. This style of upbringing is not totally the same as raising girls but Locke maintains that apart from gender issues, girls too can be educated in all subjects just like boys. According to Locke what creates huge differences among people is education. Moreover, according to Locke the reason why gender-based character development is different in two genders is education. While Locke writes on the learning of social relationships and whether the child should be home-schooled, he says that girls are shy because they are home-schooled. Shyness is one of the misgivings and the absolute result of homeschooling. It is the lack of judgmental power which makes education necessary for the child: "Their want of judgment makes them stand in need of restraint and discipline; And, on the contrary, imperiousness, and severity is but an ill way of treating men, who have a reason of their own to guide them." (Locke, 2004: 47.) The type of education Locke sees as fit for girls and boys involve such discipline.

Rousseau, on the other hand, offered his views on pedagogy in his work, Emile. In *Emile*'s fourth book, Rousseau says that both girls and boys are children to the same extent. According to him, they can only be considered as "children." However, both physical and political inequality between men and women for him is normal. For Rousseau what is consolidated by

2 Utopias are fictional works which expresses the ideal, the imaginary, that which is not available now, and very unlikely to happen. As Plato's Republic dialogue can easily take its place among utopias, the best-known examples of this field are Thomas More's "Utopia" and Campenella's"the City of Sun." Faruk Ozturk, in his article titled "Utopias and Education Problems", deals with these utopia examples within the framework of education. In utopia, education is defined as a compulsory challenge of society as a lifelong process. Ozturk summarizes as follows: "In the context of utopia, what we are talking about education is mainly life-long education. A limited education, which does not extend from the formal program framework in the state's official institutions, is not mentioned much. (...) the real meaning of life-long education lies here. " (Faruk Ozturk, Utopyalarda Egitim Sorunsali, Egitim Bilimleri ve Uygulama Dergisi, 3, (5), 2004, p. 102.

education nourishes political inequality. Political inequality can be defined as follows: "One which I call natural, or physical inequality, because it is established by nature, and consists in the difference of age, health, bodily strength, and the qualities of the mind, or the soul. The other which may be termed moral, or political inequality, because it depends on a kind of convention, and is established, or at least authorized, by the common consent of the mankind." (J. J. Rousseau, 2004: 83). Thus education as an institutional formation always preserve this difference and aims at its continuity. As for the subject of school, Rousseau maintains the following regarding homeschooling and regular schooling: "So girls do not have colleges of their own! Oh dear! Oh dear! Oh dear! What a big deal! I wish there weren't any for boys either. I guess they would be more emotionally and superbly disciplined that way." (Rousseau, *1945:* 400). As can be seen, Rousseau believes that school as an institution does not have a very positive impact on people in moral terms, as well as causing negative human traits such as shyness.

After Rousseau, Immanuel Kant in his work *On Education* divides practical training into three parts. One of them is the education of the moral person, the other education to behave wisely and with common sensee and the first step is school education. Kant defines school education as the following and explains what purpose these three steps of education have:

"Men need the training of school-teaching or instruction to develop the ability necessary to succeed in various vocations of life. School-teaching bestows upon each member an individual value of his own. Next, by learning the lesson of discretion in the practical matters of life, he is educated as a citizen, and becomes of value to his fellow citizens, learning both how to accommodate himself to their society and also how to profit by it. Lastly, moral training imparts to man a value with regard to the whole human race." (Kant, 2006: 48-49).

As seen so far, education which aims to raise the citizen of future throughout history has the mission of preserving the social hierarchy as well as the reproduction of gender norms. The school has been accepted as a fundamental institution of the view of education which furthers these aims and modern education is based on the fact that compulsory education is only possible thanks to the school. Efforts of reform and revisions have been matters of consideration always for better education. But the concept of a society without school can be seen as a utopian idea which cannot be accommodated by the progress process of modern societies. A critical investigation of the idea o a society without school and discussion o the possibility of education outside the school as well would bring about a novel alternative view of education. Ivan Illich dwells on this bold idea and the idea of her reasons which forced him to defend it in his work "Deschooling Society."

"Deschooling Society" as an Alternative View of Education

Ivan Illich mentions abolishing the institution of school in society, beyond a mere reform in education institutions. Regarding this total abolishment, Illich states that we need to focus on the "secret curriculum" of the school to determine this situation. Noting that he is not concerned with the slum curriculum which denigrates the poor, or the curriculum which benefits the rich, Illich maintains that the fact he wishes to emphasize is that the school, with its rituals and ceremonies, forms a "secret curriculum." According to Illich, this secret curriculum of schooling adds prejudice and shame to discrimination executed against some groups in the community and combines the other groups' privilege with a new right to the humility of the majority. At the same time, Illich refers to this secret curriculum which functions as a ceremony to take the first steps toward a collective growth-oriented consumer society for both the rich and the poor. The basic law of contemporary education, "equal opportunity" primarily due to these fundamental reasons seems unachievable. Equal and compulsory schooling is at least economically impossible. Illich produces far more radical ideas on this issue. Even though he sees equal opportunity in education as both desirable and feasible, he argues that equating it with compulsory education is the same as mistaking salvation for the church. In this regard Illich says:

> "The school has taken on the status of the world religious status of the modernized working class and promises liberation to the poor of the technological age in vain. Nevertheless, thenation-state embraced it and condemned the citizens to climb up the ladder of education for a growing number of diplomas; this is not very unlike the old initiation ceremonies or religious ascension rituals. The modern state has undertaken the task of strengthening the judgments of the educators, well-intentioned officials dealing with those who skip school with work-entry conditions; just like the Inquisition and the Kingdom of Spain, which strengthened the judgments of the theologians through the adventuring conquerors of America." Illich, Deschooling Society, 1985: 17-18)

Illich points out that just as two centuries ago the US had pioneered the whole world in the movement of destroying the monopoly of a single church, now it is necessary to make constitutional amendments so that the monopoly of the school should be demolished as an institution, and

therefore a system which brings together prejudice with separatism legally should be demolished. According to Illich, this reform should be as follows: "The state does not make any law in the field of institutionalizing education." This is due both to the fact schooling should not be a compulsory ceremony for everybody, and because it means to give approval to all its institutions if you say yes to this institution. One point to note, however, is that although Illich rejects a law which makes schooling compulsory for everyone on the grounds that it is not a valid law for everyone, he states that such a law is necessary to abolish the institution of school. According to him, in order to enable the abolishment of the school institution, we need a law prohibiting discrimination in applying for employment, choosing, or applying to places where it has already been given a certain program. This law will remove the selection of qualified people with diplomas.

The system Illich rejects is the system which favors the person who develops a skill by wasting social resources or the one who earns a degree irrelevant to a useful skill or profession. It is not clear here what Illich refers to as skill teaching or what a useful skill means. For him, the abolishment of schooling will even have spiritual benefits simply by preventing someone who is unsuccessful at school from being excluded. However, it is surprising that, while he talks about the benefits of abolishing schooling, based on people who cannot adapt to standard education due to their diverse interests and tendencies, he does not mention a person-specific education designed for people's skills and tendencies. One of the reasons for the school's failure to achieve equality is the "documentation in packages" and the diploma system, which are presented as the reason for the abolition of a wholesale institution without being denied. If an important issue that Illich successfully presents is to be emphasized, it should be pointed out that the idea that the distribution of social roles together with learning in school is also conflated. According to Illich who criticizes the fact that a choice for a position or a category in job market depends on how many years one went to school, school education is limited to some people only: according to him the school offers its benefits only to people whose every step of education conforms to pre-confirmed social control conditions.

Criticizing the judgment that defines the ground on which the universalization of the school was based as an institution which separates the role distribution from personal history and gives everyone an equal chance of employment, Illich points out that school, far from equalizing opportunities, monopolizes the distribution of opportunities. In addition, the presence of school will create requests for schooling. According to Illich, once we learn to need schooling, the customer relationship with all other privatized institutions will permeate our behaviours. In other words, once a person adopts the need for school, it will become an easy prey for other institutions.

Another fundamental criticism of Illich's on which he develops the idea o a society without school is regarding measurement and evaluation. According to him all the values the school teaches and works on gradually are measurable things. Measurability of everything in this system will bring about the idea that even the human himself is measurable. Illich argues, however, that personal development is not something measurable. The change in education can be measured by looking at neither a power nor a curriculum, nor is it comparable to the achievements of others. The type of education Illich praises is unmeasurable "self-recreation." Illich is trying to define humanity as a free and creative being in an ambition and a competition-intensive learning phase and cruel competition in labour market. This is seen by him as a possible result of the deschooling. Illich expresses that the school is an alienating force as follows:

> "Alienation is a process that keeps people from producing and reproducing people in a traditional sense: it is the direct result of the process of being labor-paid workers. Now young people act like they are both producer and consumer of information, this information is perceived as a commodity on sale in the school market, the school which separates them from their environment gradually alienates them. The school performs this alienation as a preparation for life so that it keeps people from learning about reality or doing creative work. What school does is contributing to the alienating institutionalization of life by teaching what it needs." (Illich,1985: 64.)

In addition to the alienating effect of the school, another negative effect is that according to Illich, people are disenfranchised from assuming the responsibility for their own growth. The school is seen as responsible for elongated childhood in Deschooling Society... Education life which lasts for years elongates the process of childhood. However, the anticipation of assuming responsibility at an early age and to view childhood as a life section that should be consumed very quickly in human life could be seen as a negative point. Moreover, one of the basic laws of contemporary education, "life-long education", is not an idea that reveals itself in these lines. However, the structure that Illich calls "learning networks" is expected to accommodate this continuity.

Illich talks about learning networks as an alternative to the school and tries to show that there may be an unschooled society. In such a society there are free and productive subjects that assume their responsibility. Saying that self-motivated learning can be supported rather than education by teachers who are forced or rewarded to provide time and willingness to

teach something to students, Illich points out that the educational approach he is suggesting is considered to serve a society that does not exist today. Students in this new system must not follow a mandatory curriculum, and a discrimination should not be made due to diplomas or similar documents. According to Illich, a good educational program should take full advantage of modern technology to make free speech, free meeting, an a free press truly universal, and therefore entirely educational.

The educational approach Illich is talking about anticipates free and creative subjects. The school, on the other hand, is an institution which makes the society believe in the necessity of a status quo in terms of the nature of society as it appears. Illich believes that once the values are institutionalized in a planned way, members of the community will believe that a good life consists of having institutions which will define the values they believe their societies need. In this sense, the educated but unschooled society is a society that ran upside down all its institutions.

REFERENCES

ALTHUSSER Louis, (2003), *İdeoloji ve Devletin İdeolojik Aygıtları*, çev. Alp Tumertekin, Ithaki Yayınları, Istanbul.

PLATON, *Devlet* (2001) çev. Sebahattin Eyüboplu, M Ali Cimcoz, Türkiye İş Bankası Kültür Yayınları, İstanbul.

LOCKE John, (2006), *Eğitim Üzerine Düşünceler*, çev. Hakan Zengin, Morpa Kültür Yayınları, Istanbul.

ROUSSEAU J. J., (2004), *İnsanlar Arasındaki Eşitsizliğin Kaynağı* ,çev. R. Nuri İleri, Sol Yayınları, İstanbul.

ROUSSEAU J. J. ,(1945), *Emile*, çev. Hilmi Ziya Ulken, Ahmet Sait Matbaası, İstanbul.

KANT Immanuel, (2006) *Eğitim Üzerine*, çev. Ahmet Aydogan, Iz Yayıncılık, Istanbul.

ILLICH Ivan, (1985) *Okulsuz Toplum*, Birey Toplum Yayınları, Ankara.

ACADEMIC RESEARCH IN SOCIAL, HUMAN AND ADMINISTRATIVE SCIENCES-II

Since the beginning of the electronic age, the world has become a more complex place. The developments in information technologies have reached well beyond human imagination. As an ordinary human mind can barely comprehend today's developments, futurists call this era as the infancy of the mankind. The sharing of the information became the most important driving force of the new world. The Works of researchers increased in value so long as they share it with other people. Today, the nature of information is changed. Nobody sees themselves as the new Aristotle or Avicenna. Sometimes, hundreds of people have to cooperate on a single research project. Nobody claims that they know everything and sometimes lacks the energy to conduct research even in a micro scale. In such cases, multidisciplinary studies become important. Numerous people cooperate on the same research project. Because of information technologies, any news can travel to everywhere in the world in mere seconds. As already known, universities are in the very center of this development.

In a world, where dazzlinf developments take place, academic society can only survive as long as it produces new information and shares it. Sharing the knowledge has become as important as producing it. Information gained value as it became knowable. This study is the end result of such need. Our main objective is to have the academics working in different fields share their findings with the scientific community. This way, more people will be aware of these studies and have new ideas for their future studies.

gece kitapliği

www.gecekitapligi.com

/gecekitapligi /gecekitapligi /gecekitap

9 786052 884034